HISTORY

OF

TOM JONES,

FOUNDLING:

By HENRY FIELDING, Esq.

....MORES HOMINUM MULTORUM VIDIT

VOLUME II.

PRINTED FOR J. MURRAY, LONDON;

AND J. SIBBALD, EDIN'.

1792

TOWALL

DENDER L

bed the continue to the

data with or great processing and the

A minimov

ecessor wheaps for a constant

10000

SUBJECTS OF THE PRINTS.

VOL. II.

- BOOK VII, Ch. 14. Terror of the Centinel on feeing Jones iffue from his Chamber in fearch of NORTH-ERTON.
 - IX. Ch. 2. Mrs WATERS refcued by Jones from the Violence of Northerton.
 - IX. Ch. 3. Battle of UPTON.
 - XI. Ch. 2. Confusion of Sopula-immediately after her Fall.

RUFFECTS on the PERMITS. A. C. H. J. Roug Vill Ch. vg. Town of the Control on Color Trees Miles -uradi la const un sonne terri sonn The second second Hard a Sin Water - find by Jones fine the the

IN Ch. 5 Back of Use, a green last Carlos de la la la companya de la co

many many salaran and his

26 1 - 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1

CONTENTS.

BOOK VII.

CONTAINING THREE DAYS.

	CHAP. I		PAGE
A comparison between th	e world and th	ie stage,	1
,	CHAP. I	l•	
Containing a conversation	which Mr Jo	mes had with himle	lf, s
To barra cu	CHAP. I	n. Data (1939)	
Containing feveral dialog	gues,		7
	CHAP. I	v.	
A picture of a country g	entlewoman ta	ken from the life,	13
	CHAP. V		100.04
The generous behaviour	of Sophia town	ards her aunt.	15
	CHAP.	71.	ilm ai
Containing great variety	of matter,	,	18
2000 000 000 000 100	CHAP. V	Margaret Liberty of the State o	
A strange resolution of a Mrs Honour,	Sophia, and a m	ore strange stratager	
wits rionour,		dayray set as	24
	CHAP. V		
Containing scenes of alt	ercation, of no	very uncommon ki	nd, 29
	CHAP.		
The wife demeanour of giftrate. A hint to ju			
qualifications of a cle	rk, with extra		
ternal madness, and f	ilial affection,		33
Vet II.	3	1	CHAP.

CHAP. X.	AGE
Containing several matters, natural enough perhaps, but Low,	
CHAP. XI.	
The adventure of a company of foldiers,	47
CHAP. XII.	
The adventure of a company of officers,	49
CHAP. XIII. Containing the great address of the landlady; the great learning of a furgeon, and the solid skill in casuistry of the worthy lieutenant,	
CHAP. XIV.	
A most dreadful chapter indeed; and which few readers ough to venture upon in an evening, especially when alone,	t 6e
CHAP. XV.	
The conclusion of the foregoing adventure,	67
BOOK VIII.	d5
CONTAINING ABOUT TWO DAYS.	
C H A P. I. A wonderful long chapter concerning the marvellous; bein much the longest of all our introductory chapters,	g 71
CHAP. II.	
In which the landlady pays a visit to Mr Jones,	79
CHAP. III.	
In which the furgeon makes his fecond appearance,	82
C H A P. IV. In which is introduced one of the pleafantest barbers that we ever recorded in history, the barber of Bagdad, or he in Do Quixote, not excepted,	
CHAP. V.	89
CHAP. VI. In which more of the talents of Mr Benjamin will appear, well as who this extraordinary person was,	as 93
The state of the California of	HAP.

CHAP. VII. PAGE Containing better reasons than any which have yet appeared for the conduct of Partridge; an apology for the weakness of Jones, and fome farther anecdotes concerning my landlady, CHAP. VIII. Jones arrives at Gloucester, and goes to the Bell; the character of that house, and of a petty-fogger which he there meets with, IOI CHAP. IX. Containing feveral dialogues between Jones and Partridge, concerning love, cold, hunger, and other matters; with the lucky and narrow escape of Partridge, as he was on the very brink of making a fatal discovery to his friend, 106 CHAP. X. In which our travellers meet with a very extraordinary adventure, 112 CHAP. XI. In which the Man of the Hill begins to relate his history, 120 CHAP. XII. In which the Man of the Hill continues his history, 130 CHAP. XIII. In which the foregoing history is farther continued, 136 CHAP, XIV. in which the Man of the Hill concludes his history, 144 CHAP. XV. A brief history of Europe; and a curious discourse between Mr Jones and the Man of the Hill, 150

BOOK IX.

CONTAINING TWELVE HOURS.

CHAP. I.

Of those who lawfully may, and of those who may not write fuch histories as this,

CHAP. II.

Containing a very furprifing adventure indeed, which Mr Jones met with in his walk with the Man of the Hill, 163

CHAP. III. The arrival of Mr Jones, with his lady, at the inn, with a very full description of the battle at Upton,	167
	31/
C H A P. IV. In which the arrival of a man of war puts a final end to hostilities, and causes the conclusion of a firm and lasting peace be-	ille Suit
tween all parties,	173
An apology for all heroes who have good stomachs, with a description of a battle of the amorous kind,	177
CHAP. VI.	
A friendly converfation in the kitchen, which had a very com- mon, though not a very friendly conclusion,	182
CHAP. VII.	
Containing a fuller account of Mrs Waters, and by what means the came into that diffrefsful fituation from which she was	
refeued by Jones,	187
воок х.	. ;
IN. WHICH THE HISTORY GOES FORWARD ABOUT TWELVE HOURS.	
CHAP. I.	
Containing instructions very necessary to be perused by modern critics,	192
C H A P. II. Containing the arrival of an Irish gentleman, with very extra-	
ordinary adventures which enfued at the inn,	195
CHAP. III.	
A dialogue between the landlady and Sufan the chamber-maid, proper to be read by all innkeepers and their fervants; with the arrival, and affable behaviour of a beautiful young lady, which may teach persons of condition how they may acquire	
the love of the whole world, C H A P. IV.	200
Containing infallible noftrums for procuring universal disesteem	
and hatred,	206
CHAP. V.	. 50
Shewing who the smishle lady and her unamiable maid were	200

CHAP

CONTENTS.

ix

ture

CHAP. VI.	PAGE
Containing, among other things, the ingenuity of Partridge	,
the madness of Jones, and the folly of Fitzpatrick,	214
CHAP. VII.	
In which are concluded the adventures that happened at the	
inn at Upton.	219
CHAP. VIII.	
In which the history goes backward,	225
CHAP. IX.	
The escape of Sophia,	227
DOOK VI	
BOOK XI.	
CONTAINING ABOUT THREE DAYS.	
CHAP. I.	
A crust for the critics,	235
CHAP. II.	
The adventures which Sophia met with after her leaving Up-	
ton,	240
CHAP. III.	
A very short chapter, in which however is the fun, moon,	1
ftar, and an angel,	247
CHAP. IV.	
The history of Mrs Fitzpatrick,	249
CHAP. V.	-3
In which the history of Mrs Firspatrick is continued,	255
CHAP. VI.	
In which the mistake of the landlord throws Sophia into	01 370
dreadful confernation,	260
CHAP. VII.	- D
In which Mrs Fitzpatrick concludes her history,	264
	, will
A dreadful alarm in the inn, with the arrival of an unexpected	
friend of Mrs Fizpatrick,	272
	-1-
C H A Po IX.	CITA-CIN
The morning introduced in some pretty writing. A stage	a rak
ceach. The civility of the chamber-maids. The heroic tem per of Sophia. Her generofity. The return to it. The depar-	
res or orpina. The generolity. The requirito it. The depar-	TIPET

CONTENTS.

remarks for the use of travellers, Page	
	270
CHAP. X. Containing a hint or two concerning virtue, and a few more concerning suspicion,	283
BOOK XII.	
CONTAINING THE SAME INDIVIDUAL TIME WITH THE FORMER.	
CHAP. I. Shewing what is to be deemed plagiarism in a modern au-	
thor, and what is to be confidered as a lawful prize,	287
C H A P. II. In which, though the 'squire doth not find his daughter, something is found which puts an end to his pursuit,	291
CHAP. III. The departure of Jones from Upton, with what past between him and Partridge on the road,	294
C H A P. IV. The avdenture of a beggar-man,	300
CHAP. V.	
Containing more adventures which Mr Jones and his compa- panion met on the road,	304
CHAP. VI. From which it may be inferred, that the best things are liable	
to be misunderstood and misinterpreted,	308
C H A P. VII. Containing a remark or two of our own, and many more of	
the good company affembled in the kitchen, C H A P. VIII.	311
In which fortune feems to have been in a better humour with Jones than we have hitherto feen her,	317
CHAP. IX.	3-1
Containing little more than a few odd observations, CHAP. X.	321

In which Mr Jones and Mr Dowling drink a bottle together, 325 C H A P.

CHAP. XI.	AGE
The difafters which befel Jones on his departure for Coven-	
try, with the fage remarks of Partridge,	330
CHAP. XII.	
Relates that Mr Jones continued his journey contrary to the	
advice of Partridge, with what happened on that occasion,	333
CHAP. XIII.	
A dialogue between Jones and Partridge,	342
CHAP. XIV.	
What happened to Mr Jones in his journey from St Albans,	347

THE

PART NETTE OF The second of the service of the second Call A. P. Artin the tree of a large tree of a property of a large tree of 100

HISTORY

OF A

FOUNDLING.

BOOK VII.

CONTAINING ABOUT THREE DAYS.

CHAP. I.

A comparison between the World and the Stage.

HE world hath often been compared to the theatre; and many grave writers, as well as the poets, have considered human life as a great drama, resembling in almost every particular those scenical representations, which Thespis is first reported to have invented, and which have been since received with so much approbation and delight in all polite countries.

This thought hath been carried fo far, and is become fo general, that some words proper to the theatre, and which were at first metaphorically applied to the world, are now indiscriminately and literally spoken of both: thus stage and scene are by common use grown as familiar to us, when we speak of life in general, as when we confine ourselves to dramatic performances; and, when transactions behind the curtain are mentioned; St James's is more likely to occur to our thoughts than Drury-Lane.

It may feem easy enough to account for all this, by re-Vol. II. A # flecting flecting, that the theatrical stage is nothing more than a representation, or, as Aristotle calls it, an imitation of what really exists, and hence perhaps we might pay a very high compliment to those, who by their writings or actions have been so capable of imitating life as to have their pictures in a manner consounded with, or mistaken for the originals.

But, in reality we are not fo fond of paying compliments to these people, whom we use as children frequently do the instruments of their amusement, and have much more pleasure in hissing and buffeting them, than in admiring their excellence. There are many other reasons, which have induced us to see this analogy between the

world and the stage.

Some have considered the larger part of mankind in the light of actors, as personating characters no more their own, and to which in fact they have no better title, than the player hath to be truly thought the king or emperor whom he represents. Thus the hypocrite may be said to be a player; and indeed the Greeks called them both by one and the same name.

The brevity of life hath likewise given occasion to this

comparison. So the immortal Shakespeare:

That struts and frets his hour upon the stage, And then is heard no more.

For which hackneyed quotation, I will make the reader amends by a very noble one, which few, I believe, have read. It is taken from a poem called the Derry, published about nine years ago, and long fince buried in oblivion: a proof that good books, no more than good men, do always furvive the bad.

From thee * all human actions take their fprings, The rife of empires, and the fall of kings! See the VAST THEATRE OF TIME display'd While o'er the scene succeeding heroes tread!

^{*} The DEITY.

With pomp the shining images succeed,
What leaders triumph, and what monarchs bleed!
Perform the parts thy providence affign'd,
Their pride, their passions, to thy ends inclin'd:
A while they glitter in the face of day,
Then at thy nod the phantoms pass away;
No traces lest of all the busy scene,
But that remembrance says—The Things have
BEEN!

In all these, however, and in every other similitude of life to the theatre, the resemblance hath been always taken from the stage only. None, as I remember, have at

all confidered the audience at this great drama.

But as nature often exhibits some of her best performances to a very full house, so will the behaviour of her spectators no less admit the above-mentioned comparison than that of her actors. In this vast theatre of time are seated the friend and the critic; here are claps and shouts, hisses and groans, in short, every thing which was ever seen or heard at the Theatre-Royal.

Let us examaine this in one example; for instance, in the behaviour of the great audience on that scene, which nature was pleased to exhibit in the 12th chapter of the preceding book, where she introduced Black George running away with the 500 l. from his friend and bene-

factor.

Those who sat in the world's upper gallery, treated that incident, I am well convinced, with their usual vociferation; and every term of scurrilous reproach was most

probably vented on that oceasion.

If we had descended to the next order of spectators, we should have found an equal degree of abhorrence, though less of noise and scurrility; yet here the good women gave Black George to the devil, and many of them expected every minute that the cloven-stooted gentleman would fetch his own.

The pit, as usual, was no doubt divided: those, who delight in heroic virtue and perfect character, objected to the producing such instances of villany, without punishing them very severely for the sake of example. Some of the

1 2

author's

to

author's friends cry'd—" Look'ee, gentlemen, the man is a villain; but it is nature for all that:" And all the young critics of the age, the clerks, apprentices, &c. cal-

led it low, and fell a-groaning.

As for the boxes, they behaved with their accustomed politeness. Most of them were attending to something else. Some of those few, who regarded the scene at all, declared he was a bad kind of a man; while others refused to give their opinion, till they had heard that of the best

iudges.

Now we, who are admitted behind the scenes of this great theatre of nature, (and no author ought to write any thing befides dictionaries and fpelling-books who hath not this privilege,) can cenfure the action, without conceiving any absolute detestation of the person, whom perhaps nature may not have defigned to act an ill part in all her dramas: for, in this instance, life most exactly refembles the stage, fince it is often the same person who represents the villain and the hero; and he who engages your admiration to-day will probably attract your contempt to-morrow. As Garrick, whom I regard in tragedy to be the greatest genius the world hath ever produced, fometimes condescends to play the fool; so did Scipio the Great, and Lælius the Wife, according to Horace, many years ago: nay, Cicero reports them to have been "in-" credibly childish." These, it is true, played the fool, like my friend Garrick, in jest only; but several eminent characters have in numberless instances of their lives, played the fool egregiously in earnest; so far as to render it a matter of fome doubt, whether their wifdom or folly was predominant, or whether they were better intitled to the applause or censure, the admiration or contempt, the love or hatred, of mankind.

Those persons, indeed, who have passed any time behind the scenes of this great theatre, and are thoroughly acquainted not only with the several disguises which are there put on, but also with the fantastic and capricious behaviour of the passions, who are the managers and directors of this theatre, (for as to reason, the patentee, he is known to be a very idle fellow, and seldom to exert himself) may most probably have learned to understand the

famous

famous nil admirari of Horace, or, in the English phrase,

to stare at nothing.

A fingle bad act no more constitutes a villain in life, than a fingle bad part on the stage. The passions, like the managers of a playhouse, often force men upon parts, without confulting their judgment, and fometimes without any regard to their talents. Thus the man, as well as the player, may condemn what he himself acts; nay, it is common to fee vice fit as aukwardly on some men, as the character of Iago would on the honest face of Mr William Mills.

Upon the whole, then, the man of candour and of true understanding is never hasty to condemn. He can cenfure an imperfection, or even a vice, without rage against the guilty party. In a word, they are the fame folly, the fame childishness, the same ill-breeding, the same ill nature, which raife all the clamours and uproars both in life and on the stage. The worst of men generally have the words rogue and villain most in their mouths, as the lowest of all wretches are the aptest to cry out low in the

CHAP. II.

Containing a conversation which Mr Jones had with himfelf.

TONES received his effects from Mr Allworthy's early in the morning, with the following answer to his letter:

" SIR,

" T AM commanded by my uncle to acquaint you, that " 1 as he did not proceed to those measures he had " taken with you, without the greatest deliberation, and " after the fullest evidence of your unworthiness, so will " it be always out of your power to cause the least " alteration in his resolution. He expresses great sur-" prise at your presumption, in faying you have refigned " all pretentions to a young lady, to whom it is imof possible you should ever have had any, her birth and " fortune having made her fo infinitely your superior. " Laftly " Lastly, I am commanded to tell you, that the only instance of your compliance with my uncle's inclinations,

"which he requires, is, your immediately quitting this country. I cannot conclude this without offering

"you my advice, as a christian, that you would feriously think of amending your life; that you may be affisted

" with grace fo to do, will be always the prayer of

"Your humble fervant,

" W. BLIFIL."

Many contending passions were raised in our hero's mind by this letter; but the tender prevailed at last over the indignant and irascible, and a slood of tears came seasonably to his assistance, and possibly prevented his missortunes from either turning his head, or bursting his heart.

He grew, however, foon ashamed of indulging this remedy; and starting up, he cried, "Well, then, I will give Mr Allworthy the only instance he requires of my bedience. I will go this moment—but whither?—why

" let fortune direct: since there is no other who think

" it of any confequence what becomes of this wretched person, it shall be a matter of equal indifference to my-

" felf. Shall I alone regard what no other—Ha!

" have I not reason to think there is another?—One whose value is above that of the whole world!—I may,

"I must imagine, my Sophia is not indifferent to what

" becomes of me. Shall I then leave this only friend?

"And fuch a friend?—Shall I not fray with her?—
"Where? how can I fray with her? Have I any hopes

" of ever feeing her, though the was as defirous as my-

" felf, without exposing her to the wrath of her father?

" and to what purpose? Can I think of soliciting such a

"creature to consent to her own ruin? Shall I indulge

" any passion of mine at such a price?—Shall I lurk about

" this country like a thief, with fuch intentions? No, I

"disdain, I detest the thought. Farewell, my Sophia; farewell. most lovely, most beloved—" Here passion

Ropt his mouth, and found a vent at his eyes.

And now, having taken a resolution to leave the country, he began to debate with himself whither he should

I.

n-

IS.

is

ng Ny

24

12

o's

rer

ne his

ng

re-

vill

my

nk

nyla!

)ne

hat

?— ?—

pes ny-

er?

ilge

out

o, i

nia;

lion

un-

go.

go. The world, as Milton phrases it, lay all before him; and Jones, no more than Adam, had any man to whom he might resort for comfort or assistance. All his acquaintances were the acquaintance of Mr Allworthy, and he had no reason to expect any countenance from them, as that gentleman had withdrawn his savour from him. Men of great and good characters should indeed be very cautious how they discard their dependents; for the consequence to the unhappy sufferer is being discarded by all others.

What course of life to pursue, or to what business to apply himself, was a second consideration: and here the prospect was all a melancholy void. Every profession, and every trade, required length of time, and what was worse, money! for matters are so constituted, that "no-" thing out of nothing," is not a truer maxim in physics than in politics: and every man who is greatly destitute of money, is on that account entirely excluded from all means of acquiring it.

At last the ocean, that hospitable friend to the wretched, opened her capacious arms to receive him; and he instantly resolved to accept her kind invitation. To express myself less figuratively, he determined to go to

fea

This thought indeed no fooner suggested itself, than he eagerly embraced it; and having presently hired horses, he set out for Bristol to put it in execution.

But before we attend him on this expedition, we shall resort a while to Mr Western's, and see what farther hap-

pened to the charming Sophia.

CHAP. III.

Containing feveral dialogues.

Western summoned Sophia into her apartment, and having first acquainted her that she had obtained her liberty of her father, she proceeded to read her a long lecture on the subject of matrimony, which she treated not as a romantic scheme of happiness arising from love, as it hath been described by the poets, nor did she men-

tion

tion any of those purposes for which we are taught by divines to regard it as inflituted by facred authority; she confidered it rather as a fund in which prudent women deposit their fortunes to the best advantage, in order to receive a larger interest for them than they could have elsewhere.

When Mrs Western had finished, Sophia answered, "That she was very incapable of arguing with a lady of "her aunt's fuperior knowledge and experience, especi-

" ally on a fubject which she had so very little considered

" as this of matrimony." " Argue with me, child !" replied the other, " I do " not indeed expect it. I should have feen the world " to very little purpose truly, if I am to argue with one " of your years. I have taken this trouble, in order to " instruct you. The ancient philosophers, such as So-" crates, Alcibiades, and others, did not use to argue " with their scholars. You are to consider me, child, " as Socrates, not asking your opinion, but only inform-" ing you of mine." From which last words the reader may possibly imagine, that this lady had read no more of the philosophy of Socrates, than she had of that of Alcibiades; and indeed we cannot refolve his curiofity as to this point.

" Madam," cries Sophia, " I have never prefumed to " controvert any opinion of yours; and this subject, as " I faid, I have never yet thought of, and perhaps never

" may."

"Indeed, Sophy," replied the aunt, "this diffimula-" tion with me is very foolish. The French shall as " foon perfuade me, that they take foreign towns in defence only of their own country, as you can impose " on me to believe you have never yet thought ferioufly " of matrimony. How can you, child, affect to deny " that you have confidered of contracting an alliance, " when you so well know I am acquainted with the party " with whom you defire to contract it? An alliance as " unnatural and contrary to your interest, as a separate " league with the French would be to the interest of the "Dutch! But, however, if you have not hitherto con-" fidered of this matter, I promife you it is now high " time; for my brother is refolved immediately to con-" clude

"clude the treaty with Mr Blifil; and indeed I am a fort of guarantee in the affair, and have promifed your concurrence."

"Indeed, Madam," cries Sophia, "this is the only inftance in which I must disobey both yourself and my father, for this is a match which requires very little

" confideration in me to refuse."

"If I was not as great a philosopher as Socrates himfelf," returned Mrs Western, "you would overcome my patience. What objection can you have to the young gentleman?"

"A very folid objection, in my opinion," fays So-

phia,-" I hate him."

II.

by

he

en

to

ve

ed,

of

ci-

ed

do

ld

ne

to

0-

uc

d,

1-

er

of

i-

to

O

as

er

1-

as

n

(e

y

y

е,

y

IS

e

e

1-

h

"Will you never learn the proper use of words?" anfwered the aunt. " Indeed, child, you should confult "Bailey's Dictionary. It is impossible you should hate " a man from whom you have received no injury. "hatred, therefore, you mean no more than diflike, "which is no fufficient objection against your marrying " of him. I have known many couples, who have entire-" ly disliked each other, lead very comfortable, gen-" teel lives. Believe me, child, I know these things bet-" ter than you. You will allow me, I think, to have " feen the world, in which I have not an acquaintance " who would not rather be thought to diflike her huf-The contrary is fuch out-of-" band, than to like him. " fashion romantic nonsense, that the very imagination of " it is shocking." "Indeed, Madam," replied Sophia, "I shall never

"Indeed, Madam," replied Sophia, "I shall never marry a man I dislike. If I promise my father never to consent to any marriage contrary to his inclinations, "I think I may hope he will never force me into that

" fate contrary to my own."

"Inclinations!" cries the aunt, with some warmth; Inclinations! I am astonished at your affurance. A young woman of your age, and unmarried, to talk of inclinations? But whatever your inclinations may be, my brother is resolved: nay, since you talk of inclinations, I shall advise him to hasten the treaty. Inclinations!"

Sophia then flung herself upon her knees, and tears began to trickle from her shining eyes. She intreated Vol. II.

B

therefore the property of the property

her aunt, " to have mercy upon her, and not to resent " fo cruelly her unwillingness to make herself miserable; " often urging, that she alone was concerned, and that

" her happiness only was at stake,"

As a bailiff, when well authorifed by his writ, having possessed himself of the person of some unhappy debtor, views all his tears without concern; in vain the wretched captive attempts to raise compassion, in vain the tender wise berest of her companion, the little prattling boy, or frighted girl, are mentioned as inducements to reluctance. The noble bumtrap, blind and deaf to every circumstance of distress, greatly soars above all the motives of humanity, and into the hands of the goaler resolves to deliver his miserable prey.

Not less blind to the tears or less deaf to every intreaty of Sophia, was the politic aunt, nor less determined was she to deliver over the trembling maid into the arms of the goaler Blifil. She answered with great impetuofity, " So far, Madam, from your being concerned alone, your concern is the least, or surely the least important. " is the honour of your family which is concerned in this " alliance; you are only the instrument. Do you conceive, miftress, that an intermarriage between kingdoms, as when a daughter of France is married into Spain, the princess herself is alone considered in the " match? No, it is a match between two kingdoms, " rather than between two persons. The same happens " in great families fuch as ours. The alliance between " the families is the principal matter. You ought to have a greater regard for the honour of your family " than for your own person; and if the example of a or princess cannot inspire you with these noble thoughts, 4 you cannot furely complain at being used no worse " than all princeffes are used."

"I hope, Madam," cries Sophia, with a little elevation of voice, "I shall never do any thing to dishonour my family; but as for Mr Blifil, whatever may be the consequence, I am resolved against him, and no force

" fhall prevail in his favour."

Western, who had been within hearing during the greater part of the preceding dialogue, had now exhausted all his patience; he therefore entered the room in a violent

II,

nt

e;

ng

r,

h-

n-

y,

C-

r-

23

0

s

7,

r

0

e

wiolent passion, crying, "D-n me then is shatunt ha'n, "d-n me is shatunt, that's all—that's all—d-n me "is shatunt."

Mrs Western had collected a sufficient quantity of wrath for the use of Sophia; but she now transferred it all to the 'fquire. " Brother;" faid she, " it is astonish-" ing that you will interfere in a matter, which you had " totally left to my negociation. Regard to my family " hath made me take upon myself to be the mediating " power, in order to rectify those mistakes in policy, " which you have committed in your daughter's educa-"tion: for, brother, it is you; it is your preposterous " conduct, which hath eradicated all the feeds that I " had formerly fown in her tender mind. ——It is you " yourfelf who have taught her disobedience." " Blood !" cries the 'fquire, foaming at the mouth, " you " are enough to conquer the patience of the devil! Have " I ever taught my daughter disobedience? -- Here " fhe stands; speak honestly, girl, did ever I bid you be " disobedient to me? Have I not done every thing to "humour and to gratify you, and to make you obedient " to me? And very obedient to me she was when a " little child, before you took her in hand and spoiled " her, by filling her head with a pack of court notions. Why, why why, did I not over-hear you " telling her she must behave like a princess? You have " made a whig of the girl; and how should her father, " or any body else, expect any obedience from her?" " Brother," answered Mrs Western with an air of great disdain, " I cannot express the contempt I have for " your politics of all kinds; but I will appeal likewise to " the young lady herfelf, whether I have ever taught " her any principles of disobedience? On the con-" trary, niece, have I not endeavoured to inspire you " with a true idea of the feveral relations in which a hu-" man creature stands in society? Have I not taken in-" finite pains to shew you, that the law of nature hath " enjoined a duty on children to their parents? Have I " not told you what Plato fays on that subject?—A sub-" ject on which you was so notoriously ignorant when " you came first under my care, that I verily believe " you did not know the relation between a daughter and B 2 " a father."

Ch

fir

m

pe:

in

WC

di

ar hi

By

th

n

fil

bu

to

ar

pe

12

1

2.

is is

**

..

66

66

t.

f

lý

fi

tl

0

ti

" a father." " 'Tis all a lie," answered Western. "The " girl is no fuch a fool, as to live to eleven years old " without knowing that she was her father's relation." " O more than Gothic ignorance," answered the lady: -" And as for your manners, brother, I must tell " you, they deserve a cane." " Why then you may gi' it me, if you think you are able," cries the 'fquire; " nay, "I suppose your niece there will be ready enough to help you." "Brother," faid Mrs Western, "though "I despise you beyond expression, yet I shall endure " your infolence no longer; fo I defire my coach may " be got ready immediately, for I am refolved to leave " your house this very morning." " And a good riddance too," answered he; "I can bear your insolence " no longer, an come to that. Blood! it is almost " enough of itself to make my daughter undervalue my " fense, when she hears you tell me every minute you " despise me." "It is impossible, it is impossible," cries the aunt; " no one can undervalue fuch a boor." " Boar !" answered the 'Iquire, "I' am no boar; no, " nor afs; no, nor rat neither, Madam. Remember " that __ I am no rat. I am a true Englishman, and " not of your Hanover breed, that have cat up the na"tion." "Thou art one of those wise men," cries she, " whose nonsensical principles have undone the nation, " by weakening the hands of our government at home, " and by discouraging our friends, and by encouraging our enemies abroad." "Ho, are you come back to " your politics," cries the fquire : " as for those, I def-" pife them as much as I do a f-t." Which last word he accompanied and graced with the very action which, of all others, was the most proper to it: And whether it was this word, or the contempt exprest for her politics, which most affected Mrs Western, I will not determine; but she flew into the most violent rage, uttered phrases improper to be here related, and instantly burst out of the house: nor did her brother or her niece think proper either to stop or to follow her; for the one was fo much possessed by concern, and the other by anger, that they were rendered almost motionless.

The 'fquire, however, fent after his fifter the same holla which attends the departure of a hare, when she is

firft

I

t

200

e

y

e

e

I

19 9

r

d

,

g

ŏ

t

,

r

5

S

ė r

1

e

first started before the hounds. He was indeed a great mafter of this kind of vociferation, and had a holla pro-

per for most occasions in life. In and and and and and

Women who, like Mrs Western, know the world, and have applied themselves to philosophy and politics, would have immediately availed themselves of the present disposition of Mr Western's mind, by throwing in a few artful compliments to his understanding at the expence of his absent adversary; but poor Sophia was all simplicity: by which word we do not intend to infinuate to the reader, that the was filly, which is generally understood as a fynonimous term with simple; for she was indeed a most senfible girl, and her understanding was of the first rate; but the wanted all that useful art, which females convert to fo many good purposes in life, and which, as it rather arises from the heart than from the head, is often the property of the fillieft of women. "101 : 5101 in 1919 was generally to drunk that be could not field and in the

foorting featon he. Wr. 4"A H"3" her before it was light. Thus was the perfect mattress of her time, and had

A picture of a country Gentleman, taken from the life. unhappil indeed the badnets of the neighbourhood, and

R Western, having finished his holla, and taken a little breath, began to lament, in very pathetic terms, the unfortunate condition of men, " who are," fays he, "always whipt in by the humours of some d-'d " b- or other. I think I was hard run enough by your mother for one man; but, after giving her a dodge, " here's another b- follows me upon the foil; but curfe "my jacket if I will be run down in this manner by any de d'um. "red her forune no more. mis o

Sophia never had a fingle dispute with her father, till this unlucky affair of Blifil, on any account, except in defence of her mother, whom the had loved most tenderly, though fhe lost her in the eleventh year of her age. The 'fquire, to whom that poor woman had been a faithful upper servant all the time of her marriage, had returned that behaviour by making what the world calls a good bufband. He very feldom swore at her, (perhaps not above once a-week,) and never beat her: she had not the least occasion for jealousy, and was perfect mistress of her time; for the was never interrupted by her hufband, who was engaged all the morning in his field-exercises, and all the evening with bottle companions. She scarce indeed ever saw him but at meals, where she had the pleasure of carving those dishes which she had before attended at the dressing. From these meals she retired about five minutes after the other servants, having only staid to drink the king over the water. Such were, it seems, Mr Western's orders; for it was a maxim with him, that women should come in with the first dish, and go out after the first glass. Obedience to these orders was perhaps no difficult task; for the conversation (if it may be so called) was seldom such as could entertain a lady. It consisted chiefly of hallooing, singing, relations of sporting adventures, b—d—y, and abuse of women and the government.

These, however, were the only seasons when Mr Western faw his wife: for, when he repaired to her bed, he was generally fo drunk that he could not fee, and in the fporting feafon he always rose from her before it was light. Thus was she perfect mistress of her time, and had besides a coach and four usually at her command, though unhappily indeed the badness of the neighbourhood, and of the roads, made this of little use; for none who had set much value on their necks would have paffed through the one, or who had fet any value on their hours, would have visited the other. Now, to deal honestly with the reader, she did not make all the return expected to so much indulgence; for she had been married against her will by a fond father, the match having been rather advantageous on her fide; for the 'fquire's estate was upwards of 3000l, a-year, and her fortune no more than a bare 8000l. Hence perhaps she had contracted a little gloominess of temper: for she was rather a good servant than a good wife; nor had she always the gratitude to return the extraordinary degree of roaring mirth with which the 'fquire received her, even with a good-humoured fmile. She would moreover fometimes interfere with matters which did not concern her, as the violent drinking of her hufband, which in the gentlest terms she would take fome of the few opportunities he gave her of remonstrating against; and once in her life, she very earnefly intreated him to carry her for two months 1

2 %

2

ät

h

86

fo

di

he

fe

h

ci

¢c

to

th

ed

no

lo

to

th

an lea

th

H

ind

in-

eand-

out

to Mr

hat

af-

aps

all-

ted

en-

rn-

eft-

he

the

vas

nad

igh

ind

fet

the

ave

ad-

fo

her

ad-

n a

ttle

ant

ith

urith

ent

ine

ner

ths i

to

angry with his wife for the request ever after, being well affured that all the husbands in London are cuck-olds.

For this last, and many other good reasons, Western at length heartily hated his wise; and, as he never concealed this hatred before her death, so he never forgot it afterwards; but when any thing in the least source him, as a bad scenting day, or a distemper among his hounds, or any other such missortune, he constantly vented his spleen by invectives against the deceased, saying,—

"It my wife was alive now, she would be glad of this."

These invectives he was especially desirous of throwing forth before Sophia; for as he loved her more than he did any other, so he was really jealous that she had loved her mother better than him: and this jealous Sophia seldom failed of heightening on these occasions: for he was not contented with violating her ears with the abuse of her mother, but endeavoured to force an explicit approbation of all this abuse, with which desire he could never prevail upon her by any promise or threats, so comply.

Hence fome of my readers will perhaps wonder, that the 'squire had not hated Sophia as much as he had hated her mother: but I must inform them, that hatred is not the effect of love, even through the medium of jealousy. It is, indeed, very possible for jealous persons to kill the objects of their jealousy, but not to hate them. Which sentiment being a pretty hard morsel, and bearing something the air of a paradox, we shall leave the reader to chew the cud upon it to the end of

the chapter.

CHAP. V.

The generous behaviour of Sophia towards her aunt.

SOPHIA kept filence during the foregoing speech of her father, nor did she once answer otherwise than with a sigh; but as he understood none of the language, as he called it, lingo, of the eyes, so he was not satis-

fied

66

66

t

n

I

11

a

a

n

6

61

6

i

6

6

6

.

6

6

6

6

.

fied without some further approbation of his sentiments; which he now demanded of his daughter; telling her, in the usual way, "he expected she was ready to take the part of every body against him, as the had always done that "of the b—her mother." Sophia remaining still silent, he cried out, "What, art dumb? why dost unt speak?" Was not thy mother a d—d b—to me? answer me that. What, I suppose you despise your father too, and don't thing him good enough to speak to?"

"For heaven's fake, Sir," answered Sophia, "do not give fo cruel a turn to my silence. I am sure I would fooner die than be guilty of any disrespect towards

"you; but how can I venture to speak, when every word must either offend my dear pappa, or convict me

of the blackest ingratitude as well as impiety, to the memory of the best of mothers: for such, I am certain

" my mamma was always to me?

"And your aunt, I suppose, is the best of sisters too?" reliped the 'squire, "Will you be so kind as to allow that she is a b—? I may fairly insist upon that, I think."

"Indeed, Sir," fays Sophia, "I have great obligations to my aunt. She hath been a fecond mother

" to me."

"And a fecond wife to me too," returned Western;

" fo you will take her part too! you won't confess that " fhe hath acted the part of the vilett fifter in the

" world ?"

"Upon my word, Sir," cries Sophia, "I must belie my heart wickedly if I did. I know my aunt and you

" differ very much in your ways of thinking; but I have heard her a thousand times express the greatest affection

"for you, and I am convinced, fo far from her being the worst fister in the world, there are very few who

" love a brother better."

"The English of all which is," answered the 'squire, that I am in the wrong. Ay, certainly, ay, to be sure,

"the woman is in the right, and the man in the wrong always."

"Pardon me, Sir," cries Sophia, "I do not fay fo."
"What don't you fay," answered the father? " you

have the impudence to fay she's in the right; doth

not follow then of course that I am in the wrong? "And perhaps I am in the wrong, to suffer such a pres-byterian Hanoverian b— to come into my house.

" She may 'dite me of a plot for any thing I know, and

" give my estate to the government."

is; in

hat

nt,

k?

me 00,

not

uld

rds

ery

me

the

tain

2"

low

t, I

iga-

ther

rn;

that

the

belie

you

have

Rion

eing

who

uire,

fure,

rong

fo."

you

thi

not

"So far, Sir, from injuring you or your estate," fays Sophia, "if my aunt had died yesterday, I am convinced

" the would have left you her whole fortune."

Whether Sophia intended it or no, I shall not presume to affert; but certain it is, these last words penetrated very deep into the ears of her father, and produced a much more sensible effect than all she had said before. He received the found with much the fame action as a man receives a bullet in his head. He started, staggered, and turned pale. After which he remained filent above a minute; and then began in the following helitating manner: "Yesterday! she would have left me her esteate " yesterday! would she? Why yesterday, of all the " days in the year? I suppose if she dies to-morrow she " will leave it to somebody else, and perhaps out of the " vamily." " My aunt, Sir," cries Sophia, " hath very " violent passions, and I can't answer what she may do " under their influence."

"You can't!" returned the father; "and pray who " hath been the occasion of putting her into those vio-" lent paffions? Nay, who hath actually put her into " them? Was not you and she hard at it before I came " into the room? Befides, was not all our quarrel about " you? I have not quarrelled with fifter this many years " but upon your account; and now you would throw

" the whole blame upon me, as thof I should be the oc-

" casion of her leaving the esteate out of the vamily. could have expected no better indeed, this is like the

" return you make to all the rest of my fondness."

"I befeech you then," cries Sophia, "upon my knees "I befeech you, if I have been the unhappy occasion of " this difference, that you would endeavour to make it " up with my aunt, and not fuffer her to leave your 64 house in this violent rage of anger: she is a very good-" natured woman, and a few civil words will fatisfy her.

" -Let me intreat you Sir."

"So I must go and ask pardon for my fault, must Vol. II.

h

t

V

t

F

1

" I?" answered Western. "You have lost the hare, "and I must draw every way to find her again? Indeed, if I was certain"—Here he stopt, and Sophia throwing in more intreaties, at length prevailed upon him: so that after venting two or three bitter farcastical expressions against his daughter, he departed as fast as he could to recover his sister, before her equipage could be gotten

ready.

Sophia then retired to her chamber of mourning, where the indulged herfelf (if the phrase may be allowed me) in all the luxury of tender grief. She read over more than once the letter which she had received from Jones; her muff too was used on this occasion: and she bathed both these, as well as herself, with her tears. In this fituation, the friendly Mrs Honour exerted her utmost abilities to comfort her afflicted mistress. She ran over the names of many young gentlemen; and having greatly commended their parts and persons, assured Sophia that she might take her choice of any. These methods must have certainly been used with some success in diforders of the like kind, or fo skilful a practitioner as Mrs Honour would never have ventured to apply them; nay, I have heard that the college of chamber-maids hold them to be as fovereign remedies as any in the female difpenfary; but whether it was that Sophia's difease differed inwardly, from those cases with which it agreed in external symptoms, I will not affert; but in fact, the good waiting-woman did more harm than good, and at last fo incenfed her mistress (which was no easy matter) that with an angry voice she dismissed her from her presence.

CHAP. VI.

Containing great variety of Matter.

HE 'squire overtook his fister just as she was stepping into the coach, and partly by force, and partly by solicitations, prevailed upon her to order her horses back into their quarters. He succeeded in this attempt without much difficulty; for the lady was, as we have already hinted, of a most placable disposition, and greatly loved

1

I

1

1

S

1

ł

t

loved her brother, though the despited his parts, or rather

his little knowledge of the world.

Poor Sophia, who had first set on soot this reconciliation, was now made the facrifice to it. They both concurred in their censures on her condust; jointly declared war against her; and directly proceeded to counsel, how to carry it on in the most vigorous manner. For this purpose, Mrs Western proposed not only an immediate conclusion of the treaty with Allworthy, but as immediately to carry it into execution; saying, "That there was no other way to succeed with her niece but by violent me-thods, which she was convinced Sophia had not sufficient resolution to resist. By violent," says she, "I mean rather hasty measures: for as to consinement or absolute force, no such things must or can be attempted. Our plan must be concerted for a surprize, and not for a storm."

These matters were resolved on, when Mr. Blissl came to pay a visit to his mistress. The 'squire no sooner heard of his arrival, than he stept aside, by his sister's advice, to give his daughter orders for the proper reception of her lover; which he did, with the most bitter execrations and denunciations of judgment on her refusal.

The impetuosity of the 'squire bore down all before him; and Sophia, as her aunt very wisely foresaw, was not able to resist him. She agreed, therefore, to see Bliss, though she had scarce spirits or strength sufficient to utter her assent. Indeed, to give a peremptory denial to a father whom she so tenderly loved, was no easy task. Had this circumstance been out of the case, much less resolution than what she was really mistress of, would, perhaps, have served her; but it is no unusual thing to ascribe those actions entirely to sear, which are in a great measure produced by love.

In pursuance, therefore, of her father's peremptory command, Sophia now admitted Mr Blisil's vitit. Scenes like this, when painted at large, afford, as we have observed, very little entertainment to the reader. Here, therefore, we shall strictly adhere to a rule of Horace, by which writers are directed to pass over all those matters which they despair of placing in a shining light. A rule, we conceive, of excellent use as well to the historian

C 2

Na batto G

22.

as to the poet; and which, if followed, must, at least, have this good effect, that many a great evil (for so all great books are called) would thus be reduced to a small one.

It is possible the great art used by Blisil at this interview would have prevailed on Sophia to have made another man in his circumstances her consident, and to have revealed the whole secret of her heart to him; but she had contracted so ill an opinion of this young gentleman, that she was resolved to place no considence in him: for simplicity, when set on its guard, is often a match for cunning. Her behaviour to him, therefore, was entirely forced, and indeed such as is generally prescribed to virgins upon the second formal visit from one who is appointed for their husband.

But though Blifil declared himself to the 'squire perfectly satisfied with his reception; yet that gentleman, who in company with his sister had overheard all, was not so well pleased. He resolved, in pursuance of the advice of the sage lady, to push matters as forward as possible; and addressing himself to his intended son in-law in the hunting phrase, he cry'd, after a loud holla, "Fol-

" low her, boy, follow her; run in, run in; that's it, honeys. Dead, dead, dead—Never be bathful, nor frand shall I, shall I.——Allworthy and I can finish

" all matters between us this afternoon, and let us ha

" the wedding to-morrow."

Blifil having conveyed the utmost satisfaction into his countenance, answered; "As there is nothing, Sir, in this world, which I so eagerly desire as an allimate ance with your family, except my union with the most amiable and deserving Sophia, you may easily imagine how impatient I must be to see myself in possession of my two highest wishes. If I have not therefore im-

"my fear of offending the lady, by endeavouring to hur"ry on so blessed an event, faster than a strict compliance with all the rules of decency and decorum will
permit. But if by your interest, Sir, she might be in-

" portuned you on this head, you will impute it only to

" duced to dispense with any formalities --- "

"Formalities! with a pox!" answered the 'squire, "Pooh, all stuff and nonsense. I tell thee, she shall has thee to-morrow; you will know the world better here-

" after,

II.

ait,

eat

ne.

er-

no-

ave

fhe

an,

for

for

ely

vir-

ap-

er-

an,

was

01+

ol-

it,

nor

ith

ha

his

in lli-

oft

ine

of.

m-

to

ur-

oli-

vill

in-

re,

la?

reer, "after, when you come to my age. Women never git their consent, man, if they can help it, 'tis not the fashion. If I had staid for her mother's consent, I might have been a batchelor to this day.—To her, to her,—go to her,—that's it, you jolly dog. I tell

" thee shat ha' her to-morrow morning."

Blifil suffered himself to be overpowered by the forcible rhetoric of the 'squire; and it being agreed that Western should close with Allworthy that very afternoon, the lover departed home, having first earnestly begged that no violence might be offered to the lady by this haste, in the same manner as a popish inquisitor begs the lay-power to do no violence to the heretic, delivered over to it, and against whom the church hath passed sentence.

And to fay the truth, Blifil had passed sentence against Sophia; for however pleased he had declared himself to Western with his reception, he was by no means satisfied, unless it was that he was convinced of the hatred and scorn of his mistress; and this had produced no less reciprocal hatred and scorn in him. It may, perhaps, be asked, Why then did he not put an immediate end to all surther courtship? I answer, for that very reason, as well as for several others equally good, which we shall now

proceed to open to the reader.

Though Mr Blifil was not of the complexion of Jones, nor ready to eat every woman he faw; yet he was far from being destitute of that appetite which is said to be the common property of all animals. With this, he had likewise that distinguishing taste, which serves to direct men in the choice of their object, or food of their feveral appetites; and this taught him to confider Sophia as a most delicious morsel, indeed to regard her with the same defires which an ortolan inspires into the foul of an epicure. Now the agonies which affected the mind of Sophia rather augmented than impaired her beauty; for her tears added brightness to her eyes, and her breaits rose higher with her fighs. Indeed no one hath feen beauty in its highest lustre, who hath never seen it in dritreis. Blifil thereforeclooked on this human ortolan with greater desire than when he viewed her last; nor was his defire at all lestened by the aversion which he discovered

in

Bi

pr

te

cli

はない は、は、は、は、

he

"

46

66

66.

66

66

44

"

th

h

ar

W

ca

Ca

CC

te

th

la

D

in her to himself. On the contrary, this served rather to heighten the pleasure he proposed in rising her charms, as it added triumph to lust; nay, he had some further views, from obtaining the absolute possession of her person, which we detest too much even to mention; and revenge itself was not without its share in the gratissications which he promised himself. The rivalling poor Jones, and supplanting him in her affections, added another spur to his pursuit, and promised another additional rapture to his enjoyment.

Besides all these views, which to some scrupulous perfons may seem to savour too much of malevolence, he had one prospect, which sew readers will regard with any great abhorrence. And this was the estate of Mr Western; which was all to be settled on his daughter and her issue; for so extravagant was the affection of that sond parent, that, provided his child would but consent to be miferable with the husband he chose, he cared not at what

price he purchased him.

For these reasons Mr Blissl was so desirous of the match, that he intended to deceive Sophia, by pretending love to her; and to deceive her father and his own uncle, by pretending he was beloved by her. In doing this, he availed himself of the piety of Thwackum, who held, that if the end proposed was religious (as surely matrimony is) it mattered not how wicked were the means. As to other occasions, he used to apply the philosophy of Square, which taught, that the end was immaterial, so that the means were fair and consistent with moral rectitude. To say truth, there were few occurrences in life on which he could not draw advantage from the precepts of one or other of those great masters.

Little deceit was indeed necessary to be practifed on Mr Western; who thought the inclinations of his daughter of as little consequence as Bliss himself conceived them to be; but as the sentiments of Mr Allworthy were of a very different kind, so it was absolutely necessary to impose on him. In this, however, Bliss was so well assisted by Western, that he succeeded without difficulty: for as Mr Allworthy had been affured by her father, that Sophia had a proper affection for Bliss, and that all which

VII.

ther

rms,

ther

per-

and ifica-

poor

ano-

ional

per-

e, he

Wes-

l her fond

e mi-

what

the

tend-

own loing

cum,

s (as

were

pply

end

con-

were

v ad-

great

d on

ugheived

were

ry to

ulty:

that

he

he had suspected concerning Jones was entirely false, Blifil had nothing more to do, than to confirm these affertions; which he did with fuch equivocations, that he preserved a salvo for his conscience; and had the satisfaction of conveying a lie to his uncle, without the guilt of telling one. When he was examined touching the inclinations of Sophia by Allworthy, who faid, "he would, on no account, be accessary to forcing a young lady into a marriage contrary to her own will," he answered, That the real fentiments of young ladies were very difficult to be understood; that her behaviour to him was full as forward as he wished it, and that if he could believe her father, she had all the affection for him which any lover could defire. As for Jones," faid he, "whom I am loath to call villain, tho' his behaviour " to you, Sir, fufficiently justifies the appellation, his own "vanity, or perhaps some wicked views, might make in him boast of a falsehood; for if there had been any reality in Miss Western's love to him, the greatness of her fortune would never have suffered him to desert "her, as you are well informed he hath. Laftly, Sir, I "promife you I would not myfelf, for any confideration, "no not for the whole world, confent to marry this "young lady, if I was not perfuaded the had all the pal-"fion for me which I defire the should have."

This excellent method of conveying a falfehood with the heart only, without making the tongue guilty of an untruth, by the means of equivocation and imposture, hath quieted the conscience of many a notable deceiver; and yet when we consider that it is Omniscience on which these endeavour to impose, it may possibly seem capable of affording only a very superficial comfort; and that this artful and refined distinction between communicating a lie, and telling one, is hardly worth the pains it costs them.

Allworthy was pretty well fatisfied with what Mr Weftern and Mr Blifil told him: and the treaty was now, at the end of two days, concluded. Nothing then remained previous to the office of the prieft, but the office of the lawyers, which threatened to take up so much time, that Western offered to bind himself by all manner of covenants, rather than defer the happiness of the young cou-

nle.

" thock

ple. Indeed he was fo very earnest and pressing, that an indifferent person might have concluded he was more a principal in this match than he really was: but this eagerness was natural to him on all occasions; and he conducted every scheme he undertook in such a manner, as if the success of that alone was sufficient to constitute the

whole happiness of his life:

The joint importunities of both father and fon-in-law would probably have prevailed on Mr Allworthy, who brooked but ill any delay of giving happiness to others, had not Sophia herself prevented it, and taken measures to put a final end to the whole treaty, and to rob both church and law of those taxes which these wise bodies have thought proper to receive from the propagation of the human species in a lawful manner. Or which in the next chapter:

CHAP. VII.

A strange resolution of Sophia, and a more strange stratagem of Mrs Honour.

THOUGH Mrs Honour was principally attached to her own interest, she was not without some tittle attachment to Sophia. To say truth, it was very difficult for any one to know that young lady without loving her. She no sooner, therefore, heard a piece of news, which she imagined to be of great importance to her mistress, than quite forgetting the anger which she had conceived two days before, at her unpleasant disinission from Sophia's presence, she ran hastily to inform her of the news.

The beginning of her discourse was as abrupt as her entrance into the room, "O dear Ma'am," says she, "what doth your la'ship think? to be sure I am fright-ened out of my wits; and yet I thought it my duty to tell your la'ship, though perhaps it may make you an-

- gry; for we fervants don't always know what will make our ladies angry; for to be fure every thing is always laid
- to the charge of a fervant. When our ladies are out of humour, to be fure we must be scold d; and to be fure
- "I should not wonder if your la'ship should be out of humour; nay, it must surprise you certainly, ay, and

" shock you too." _ " Good Honour! let me know it "without any longer preface," fays Sophia; "there are " few things, I promise you, which will surprise, and fewer " which will shock me." " Dear Ma'am," answered Honour, "to be fure, I overheard my master talking " to parson Supple about getting a licence this very afternoon; and to be fure I heard him fay your la'ship " fhould be married to-morrow morning." Sophia turned pale at these words, and repeated eagerly, "to-mor-" row morning !" -- "Yes, Ma'am," replied the trufty waiting-woman, " I will take my oath I heard my mafter " fay fo." "Honour," fays Sophia, "you have both " furprised and shocked me to such a degree, that I have " fcarce any breath or spirits left. What is to be done " in my dreadful fituation?" " I wish I was able to ad-" vise your la'ship," says she. " Do advise me," cries Sophia, "pray dear Honour, advise me. Think what " you would attempt if it was your own case." "Indeed, " Ma'am," cries Honour, " I wish your la'ship and I " could change fituations; that is, I mean, without " hurting your la'ship! for to be fure I don't wish you so " bad as to be a fervant; but because that if so be it was " my case, I should find no manner of difficulty in it; for " in my poor opinion, young'fquire Blifil is a charming, " fweet, handsome man."-" Don't mention such stuff," cries Sophia. "Such stuff," repeated Honour, "why " there—Well, to be fure what's one man's meat is " another man's poison, and the same is altogether as " true of women." Honour," fays Sophia, "Tra-"ther than fubmit to be the wife of that contemptible " wretch, I would plunge a dagger into my heart." "O lud, Ma'am," answered the other, "I am sure you " frighten me out of my wits now. Let me befeech " your la'ship not to suffer such wicked thoughts to come " into your head. O lud, to be fure I tremble every " inch of me. Dear Ma'am, consider—that to be denied " a christian burial, and to have your corpse buried in " the high way, and a stake drove through you, as Farmer " Halfpenny was served at Ox Cross, and, to be fure, his " ghost has walked there ever fince; for feveral people " have feen him. To be fure, it can be nothing but the " devil which can put fuch wicked thoughts into the head VOL. II. D 1

if he

II.

an

2

er-

ho rs,

th ies of

he

em

to tle ult er.

ch is,

Sows.

he, htto

an-

aid of

hu-

nd

" of any body; for certainly it is less wicked to hurt al"
the world than one's own dear self, and so I have heard
faid by more parsons than one. If your la'ship hath

" fuch a violent aversion, and hates the young gentleman fo very bad, that you can't bear to think of going into

" bed to him; for to be fure there may be fuch antipathies in nature, and one had lieverer touch a toad than

" the flesh of some people,"___

Sophia had been too much wrapt in contemplation, to pay any great attention to the foregoing excellent difcourse of her maid; interrupting her therefore, without making any answer to it, the faid, "Honour, I am " come to a resolution. I am determined to leave my " father's house this very night; and if you have the " friendship for me which you have often professed, you " will keep me company." " That I will, Ma'am, to the "world's end," answered Honour: "but I beg your " la'ship to consider the consequence, before you under-" take any rash action. Where can your la'ship possi-" bly go?" "There is," replied Sophia, " a lady of qua-" lity in London, a relation of mine, who spent several " months with my aunt in the country; during all which " time she treated me with great kindness, and expressed " fo much pleasure in my company, that she earnestly " defired my aunt to fuffer me to go with her to London. As the is a woman of very great note, I shall easily find her out, and I make no doubt of being very " well and kindly received by her." " I would not se have your la'thip too confident of that," cries Honour; for the first lady I lived with used to invite people very " earnestly to her house; but if she heard afterwards "they were coming, she used to get out of the way. " Besides, though this lady would be very glad to see " y our la'fhip, as to be fure any body would be glad to fee " your la'ship; yet when she hears your la'ship is run " away from my master," You are mistaken, Hon-" our," fays Scphia, " the looks upon the authority of a of father in a much lower light than I do; for she pref-" fed me violently to go to London with her, and when " I refused to go without my father's consent, the laugh-" ed me to fcorn, called me a filly country girl, and faid "I should make a pure loving wife, fince I could be " fo dutiful a daughter. So I have no doubt but she u

e

r

1-

al

h

d

ly

n-

Ile

ry

ot

r;

ry

ds

IV.

ee

lee

un

n-

fa

ef-

ien

gh-

aid

be

fhe

will

rate,

will both receive me, and protect me too, till my father, finding me out of his power, can be brought to fome reason.

"Well, but, Ma'am," answered Honour, " how doth " your la'ship think of making your escape? Where will "you get any horses for conveyance? For as for your " own horse, as all the servants know a little how matters ftand between my master and your la'ship, Robin will " be hanged before he will fuffer it to go out of the stable " without my master's express orders." " I intend to " escape," said Sophia, "by walking out of the doors when they are open. I thank heaven my legs are very " able to carry me. They have supported me many a "long evening, after a fiddle, with no very agreeable " partner, and furely they will affift me in running " from so detestable a partner for life." " O heav'n, " Ma'am, doth your la'ship know what you are saying?" cries Honour, " would you think of walking about the " country by night and alone?" " Not alone," answered the lady, " you have promifed to bear me company." "Yes, to be fure," cries Honour, "I will follow your " la'fhip through the world; but your la'fhip had almost " as good be alone; for I shall not be able to defend " you if any robbers, or other villains, should meet with " you. Nay, I should be in as horrible a fright as " your la'ship: for to be certain, they will ravish us " both. Besides, Ma'am, consider how cold the nights " are now; we shall be frozen to death." " A good " brisk pace," answered Sophia, " will preserve us from " the cold: and if you cannot defend me from a villain, " Honour, I will defend you, for I will take a pistol " with me. There are two always charged in the hall." " Dear Ma'am, you frighten me more and more," cries Honour, "fure your la'ship would not venture to fire it " off! I had rather run any chance, than your la'hip " should do that." " Why fo?" fays Sophia smiling ; " would not you, Honour, fire a pittol at any one who " should attack your virtue?" "To be fure, Ma'am," cries Honour, " one's virtue is a dear thing, especially " to us poor servants; for it is our livelihood, as a body " may fay: yet I mortally hate fire arms; for fo many " accidents happen by them." " Well, well," fays Sophia, "I believe I may ensure your virtue at a very cheap

It

lin

and

he

OW

.

271

\$h

ac

fo

Cil

· pr

*h

fo

EC

1

EC

b

de

11

A

ft

2

W

P

t

T

C

ti

r

h

" rate, without carrying any arms with us; for I intend to take horses at the very first town we come to, and

" we shall hardly be attacked in our way thither. Look'ee, Honour, I am resolved to go, and if you will attend

or me, I promife you I will reward you to the very utmost

of my power."

This last argument had a stronger effect on Honour than all the preceding. And fince the faw her mistress fo determined, the defifted from any further diffuations. They then entered into a debate on ways and means of executing their project. Here a very stubborn difficulty occurred, and this was the removal of their effects, which was much more easily got over by the mistress than by the maid: for when a lady hath once taken a refolution to run to a lover, or to run from him, all obstacles are confidered as trifles. But Honour was inspired by no fuch motive; the had no raptures to expect, nor any terrors to fhun; and besides the real value of her clothes, in which confifted a great part of her fortune, she had a capricious fondness for several gowns, and other things; either because they became her, or because they were given her by fuch a particular person; because she had bought them lately, or because she had had them long; or for fome other reasons equally good; so that she could not endure the thoughts of leaving the poor things behind her, exposed to the mercy of Western, who, she doubted not, would in his rage make them fuffer martyr-

The ingenious Mrs Honour having applied all her oratory to diffuade her miftress from her purpose, when she found her positively determined, at last started the following expedient to remove her clothes, viz. to get herself turned out of doors that very evening. Sophia highly approved this method, but doubted how it might be brought about. "Oh! Ma'am," cries Honour, "yout "la'ship may trust that to me: we servants very well know how to obtain this favour of our masters and

" mistresses; though sometimes indeed, when they owe us more wages than they can readily pay, they will put up with all our affronts, and will hardly take any warn-

" ing we can give them; but the 'fquire is none of those; and fince your la'fhip is resolved upon setting out to-

night

II.

nd

nd

ee,

nd oft

ess ns.

of

lty

by

ion

are

no

iny

163,

da

gs;

ven

ght

for

not

be-

she

yr-

ra-

The

W-

felf

hly

be

our

vell

ind

we

put

rn-

fe;

to-

ht,

"night, I warrant I get discharged this afternoon." It was then resolved that she should pack up some linen and a night-gown for Sophia, with her own things; and as for all her other clothes, the young lady abandoned them with no more remorse than the sailor seels, when he throws over the goods of others in order to save his own life.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing scenes of altercation, of no very uncommon kind.

RS Honour had fcarce fooner parted from her young lady, than fomething (for I would not, like the old woman in Quevedo, injure the devil by any false accufation, and possibly he might have no hand in it) but something, I say, suggested itself to her, that by facrisicing Sophia and all her fecrets to Mr Western, she might probably make her fortune. Many confiderations urged this discovery. The fair prospect of a handsome reward for fo great and acceptable a service to the 'squire, tempted her avarice; and again, the danger of the enterprise the had undertaken; the uncertainty of its success; night, cold, robbers, ravishers, all alarmed her sears. So forcibly did all these operate upon her, that she was almost determined to go directly to the 'fquire, and to lay open the whole affair. She was, however, too upright a judge to decree on one fide, before she had heard the other. And here, first a journey to London appeared very strongly in support of Sophia. She eagerly longed to see a place in which the fancied charms thort only of those which a raptured faint imagines in heaven. In the next place, as she knew Sophia to have much more generosity than her mafter, so her fidelity promised her a greater reward than she could gain by treachery. She then crossexamined all the articles which had raifed her fears on the other fide, and found, on fairly fifting the matter, that there was very little in them: and now both scales being reduced to a pretty even balance, her love to her miltreis being thrown into the scale of her integrity, made that rather preponderate, when a circumstance struck upon her imagination, which might have had a dangerous effect,

Cha

se d

* a

CC V

· a

OF THE

of f

es h

es 3

es I

4 I

44 1

64 C

se f

66 2

44 2

4 .

94: I

.

-

66

401

55

"

ted

of

vio

OW

fine

561

46

-

46

.

"

44

64

to

at

by

te

effect, had its whole weight been fairly put into the other scale. This was the length of time which must intervene, before Sophia would be able to suffil her promises; for though she was entitled to her mother's fortune at the death of her father, and to the sum of 3000 l. left her by an uncle when she came of age, yet these were distant days, and many accidents might prevent the intended generosity of the young lady: whereas the rewards she might expect from Mr Western were immediate. But, while she was pursuing this thought, the good genius of Sophia, or that which presided over the integrity of Mrs Honour, or perhaps mere chance, sent an accident in her way, which at once preserved her sidelity, and even facilitated the intended business.

Mrs Western's maid claimed great superiority over Mrs Honour on feveral accounts. First, her birth was higher, for her great grandmother, by the mother's fide, was a cousin, not far removed, to an Irish peer. Secondly, her wages were greater; and, laftly, the had been at London, and had of consequence seen more of the world. had always behaved, therefore, to Mrs Honour with that referve, and had always exacted of her those marks of distinction, which every order of females preserves and requires in conversation with those of an inferior order. Now, as Honour did not at all times agree with this doc trine, but would frequently break in upon the respect which the other demanded, Mrs Western's maid was not at all pleased with her company: indeed, she earnestly longed to return home to the house of her mistress, where the domineered at will over all the other fervants. She had been therefore, greatly, disappointed in the morning, when Mrs Western had changed her mind on the very point of departure, and had been in what is vulgarly called a glouting humour ever fince.

in this humour, which was none of the sweetest, she came into the room where Honour was debating with herself, in the manner we have above related. Honour no sooner saw her, than she addressed her in the following obliging phrase: "Soh! Madam, I find we are to have the pleasure of your company longer, which I was afraid the quarrel between my master and your lady would have robbed us of." "I don't know, Ma-

" dam,

het

ene,

for

the

r by

tant

ge

the

But,

is of

Mrs

her

cili-

Mrs

her,

as a

her

don,

She

that

s of

d re-

der.

doc+

ped

was

nest-

reis,

ants.

the

d on

vul-

, fhe

with nour low-

re to

ich l

your

Ma-

lam,

"dam," answered the other, " what you mean by we and us. I affure you I do not look on any of the fervants in this house to be proper company for me. I am company, I hope, for their betters every day in the week. I do not speak on your account, Mrs Honour, for you are a civilized young woman; and, when you have feen a little more of the world, I thould not be ashamed to walk with you in St. James's Park. "Hoity! toity!" cries Honour, Madam is in her airs, I protest. Mrs Honour, forfooth! fure, Madam, you might call me by my firname; for, though my lady calls me Honour, I have a firname as well as other folks. Ashamed to walk with me, quotha! marry, se as good as yourfelf, I hope." "Since you make fuch a return to my civility," faid the other, " I must acquaint you, Mrs Honour, that you are not fo good as me. In the country indeed one is obliged to take up with all kinds of trumpery; but in town I vifit none but the women of women of quality. Indeed, Mrs 1 Honour, there is some difference, I hope, between you and me." " I hope to too," answered Honour, " there is some difference in our ages, and—I think, in our " persons:" upon speaking which last words, she strutted by Mrs Western's maid with the most provoking air of contempt, turning up her nofe, toffing her head, and violently brushing the hoop of her competitor with her own. The other lady put up one of her most malicious fneers, and faid, " Creature! you are below my anger; and it is beneath me to give ill words to fuch an audacious, faucy trollop; but, huffy, I must tell you, your breeding thews the meanness of your birth as well as your education; and both very properly qualify you to be the mean ferving-woman of a country-girl." Don't abuse my lady," cries Honour, I won't take "that off you; she's as much better than yours as " fhe is younger, and ten thousand times more handso-

Here ill luck, or rather good luck, fent Mrs Western to see her maid in tears, which began to slow plentifully at her approach; and, of which being asked the reason by her mistress, she presently acquainted her, that her tears were occasioned by the rude treatment of that creaters

ture

ture there, meaning Honour. " And, Madam," conti-

mued she, "I could have despised all she said to me; but she hath had the audacity to affront your ladyship, and to call you ugly—Yes, Madam, she called you ugly old cat to my face. I could not bear to hear your ladyship called ugly."—"Why do you repeat her impudence so often?" said Mrs Western: and then turning to Mrs Honour, she asked her, "How she turning to Mrs Honour, she asked her, "How she had the assurance to mention her name with disrespect?" Disrespect, Madam: answered Honour; "I never mentioned your name at all; I said somebody was not so handsome as my mistress, and to be sure you know that as well as I." "Hussy," replied the lady, I will make such a saucy trollop as yourself know, that I am not a proper subject of your discourse: and, if my brother doth not discharge you this moment, I

"will never sleep in his house again. I will find him out, and have you discharged this moment." "Discharged!" cries Honour, "and suppose I am, there are more places in the world then one thank Henven

se are more places in the world than one: thank Heaven, good servants need not want places; and if you turn

" away all who don't think you handsome, you will want

" fervants very foon; let me tell you that."

Mrs Western spoke, or rather thundered, in answer; but as she was hardly articulate, we cannot be very certain of the identical words: we shall therefore omit inserting a speech, which at best would not greatly redound to her honour. She then departed in search of her brother, with a countenance so full of rage, that she resembled one of the suries rather than a human creature.

The two chambermaids, being again left alone, began a fecond bout of altercation, which foon produced a combat of a more active kind. In this the victory belonged to the lady of inferior rank, but not without fome loss of

blood, of hair, and of lawn and muslin.

f

0

t

j

C

V

6

II.

ntibut

nip,

you

ear

her

hen she

1:30

ever

was

you

ady,

low,

and,

nt, l

him

 \mathbf{D} if-

here

ven,

turn

want

wer;

cer-

fert-

d to

ther,

one

egan

com-

nged

is of

AF.

CHAP. IX.

The wife demeanor of Mr Western in the character of a Magistrate. A hint to Justices of Peace concerning the necessary qualifications of a clerk, with extraordinary instances of paternal madness, and filial affection.

OGICIANS fometimes prove too much by an argument, and politicians often over-reach themselves in a scheme. Thus had it like to have happened to Mrs Honour, who, instead of recovering the rest of her clothes, had like to have stopped even those she had on her back from escaping; for the 'squire no sooner heard of her having abused his sister, than he swore twenty oaths he would fend her to Bridewell.

Mrs Western was a good-natured woman, and ordinarily of a forgiving temper. She had lately remitted the trespass of a stage-coachman, who had overturned her post-chaife into a ditch; nay, she had even broken the law in refusing to profecute a highwayman who had robbed her not only of a fum of money, but of her earrings; at the fame time d—ning her, and faying, " fuch "handsome b-s as you don't want jewels to fet them " off, and be d-'d to you." But now, fo uncertain are our tempers, and fo much do we at different times differ from ourselves, she would hear of no mitigation; nor could all the affected penitence of Honour, nor all the entreaties of Sophia for her own fervant, prevail with her to defift from earnestly defiring her brother to execute justiceship (for indeed it was a syllable more than justice) on the wench.

But luckily the clerk had a qualification, which no clerk to a justice of peace ought ever to be without, namely, some understanding in the law of this realm. He therefore whispered in the ear of the justice, that he would exceed his authority by committing the girl to Bridewell, as there had been no attempt to break the peace; "for I am afraid, Sir," fays he, "you cannot legally commit any one to Bridewell only for ill-breeding."

In matters of high importance, particularly in cases Vol. II. E # relating

relating to the game, the justice was not always attentive to these admonitions of his clerk: for indeed, in executing the laws under that head, many justices of peace, suppose they have a large discretionary power; by virtue of which, under the notion of searching for, and taking away engines for the destruction of the game, they often commit trespasses, and sometimes selony, at their pleasure.

But this offence was not of quite so high a nature, nor so dangerous to the society. Here therefore the justice behaved with some attention to the advice of his clerk: for in fact, he had already had two informations exhibited against him in the King's Bench, and had no curiosity to

try a third.

The 'fquire therefore, putting on a most wise and fignificant countenance, after a preface of several hum's and ha's, told his sister, that, upon more mature deliberation, he was of opinion, that "as there was no breaking up of the peace, such as the law," says he, "calls breaking open a door, or breaking a hedge, or breaking a head, or any fort of breaking, the matter did not amount to a felonious kind of a thing, nor trespasses nor damages, and therefore there was no punishment in the law for it."

Mrs Western said, "She knew the law much better; that she had known servants very severely punished for affronting their masters;" and then named a certain justice of the peace in London, "who," she said, "would commit a servant to Bridewell at any time, when a

" mafter or mistress desired it."

"Like enough," cries the 'squire, " it may be so in "London; but the law is different in the country." Here followed a very learned dispute between the brother and sister concerning the law, which we would insert, if we imagined many of our readers would understand it. This was, however, at length referred by both parties to the clerk, who decided it in favour of the magistrate; and Mrs Western was in the end obliged to content herself with the satisfaction of having Honour turned away, to which Sophia herself very readily and chearfully consented.

Thus fortune, after having diverted herself according

1

1

II.

ive

cu-

ice,

vir-

ta-

hey

neir

nor

tice

rk:

da,

y to

gni-

and

ion,

p of

ring

ead,

2-

affes

nent

ter;

l for

rtain

ould

en a

so in

try."

other

fert,

fand

par-

agif-

con-

rned

rful-

rding

10

to custom with two or three frolics, at last disposed all matters to the advantage of our heroine, who indeed succeeded admirably well in her deceit, considering it was the first she had ever practised: and, to say the truth, I have often concluded, that the honest part of mankind would be much too hard for the knavish, if they could bring themselves to incur the guilt, or thought it worth their while to take the trouble.

Honour acted her part to the utmost perfection. She no sooner saw herself secure from all danger of Bridewell, a word which had raised most horrible ideas in her mind, than she resumed those airs which her terrors before had a little abated, and laid down her place with as much as fectation of content, and indeed of contempt, as was ever practised at the resignation of places of much greater importance. If the reader pleases, therefore, we chuse rather to say she resigned—which hath indeed been always held a synonimous expression with being turned out, or turned away.

Mr Western ordered her to be expeditious in packking: for his sister declared she would not sleep another night under the same roof with so impudent a slut. To work therefore she went, and that so earnestly, that every thing was ready early in the evening, when, having received her wages, away packed she bag and baggage, to the great satisfaction of every one, but of none more than of Sophia, who, having appointed her maid to meet her at a certain place not far from the house, exactly at the dreadful and ghostly hour of twelve, began to prepare for

her own departure.

But first she was obliged to give two painful audiences, the one to her aunt, and the other to her father. In these Mrs Western herself began to talk to her in a more peremptory stile than before; but her father treated her in so violent and outrageous a manner, that he frightened her into an affected compliance with his will, which so highly pleased the good 'squire, that he changed his frowns into smiles, and his menaces into promises; he vowed his whole soul was wrapped in hers, that her consent (for he construed the words; "You know Sir, I "must not, nor can refuse to obey any absolute command of yours,") had made him the happiest of mankind.

E 2

the

QUI

(ho

m

ly rig ab

qu ed

W

He then gave her a large bank-bill to dispose of in any trinkets she pleased, and kissed and embraced her in the fondest manner, while tears of joy trickled from those eyes, which a few moments before had darted fire and

rage against the dear object of all his affection.

Instances of this behaviour in parents are so common, that the reader, I doubt not, will be very little astonished at the whole conduct of Mr Western. If he should, I own I am not able to account for it, since that he loved his daughter most tenderly, is, I think, beyond dispute. So indeed have many others, who have rendered their children most completely miserable by the same conduct; which, though it is almost universal in parents, hath always appeared to me to be the most unaccountable of all the absurdities which ever entered into the brain of that

strange prodigious creature, man.

The latter part of Mr Western's behaviour had so ftrong an effect on the tender heart of Sophia, that it fuggested a thought to her, which not all the sophistry of her politic aunt, nor all the menaces of her father, had ever once brought into her head. She reverenced her father fo piously, and loved him so passionately, that she had fcarce ever felt more pleasing fensations, than what arose from the thare she frequently had of contributing to his amusement, and sometimes perhaps to higher gratifications; for he never could contain the delight of hearing her commended, which he had the fatisfaction of hearing almost every every day of her life. The idea, therefore, of the immense happiness she should convey to her father by her consent to this match, made a strong impression on her mind. Again, the extreme piety of fuch an act of obedience worked very forcibly, as the had a very deep fense of religion. Lastly, when she reflected how much she herself was to suffer, being indeed to become little less than a facrifice, or a martyr, to filial love and duty, she felt an agreeable trickling in a certain little passion, which, though it bears no immediate affinity either to religion or virtue, is often fo kind as to lend great affiftance in executing the purposes of both.

Sophia was charmed with the contemplation of fo heroic an action, and began to compliment herfelf with much premature flattery, when Cupid, who lay hid in her muff,

fuddenly

V

ne

fe

nd

n,

ed

I

e.

t;

all

at

fo

gof

ad

ler he

at

ng

ra-

of is-

he

n-

etv

he

re-

ed

to

di-

as

th.

ne-

iff,

nddenly crept out, and like Punchinello in a puppetthew, kicked all out before him. In truth, (for we fcorn
to deceive our reader, or to vindicate the character of
our heroine, by ascribing her actions to supernatural impulse,) the thoughts of her beloved Jones, and some hopes
(however distant) in which he was very particularly concerned, immediately destroyed all which filial love, piety,
and pride had, with their joint endeavours, been labouring
to bring about.

But, before we proceed any farther with Sophia, we

must now look back to Mr Jones.

CHAP. X.

Containing feveral matters natural enough perhaps, but

HE reader will be pleased to remember, that we left Mr Jones, in the beginning of this book, on his road to Bristol, being determined to seek his fortune at sea, or rather indeed to sly away from his fortune on shore.

It happened, (a thing not very unufual,) that the guide, who undertook to conduct him on his way, was unluckily unacquainted with the road; fo that having miffed his right track, and being ashamed to ask information, herambled about backwards and forwards till night came on, and it began to grow dark. Jones, suspecting what had happened, acquainted the guide with his apprehensions; but he insisted on it, that they were in the right read, and added, it would be very strange if he should not know the road to Bristol; though, in reality, it-would have been much stranger if he had known it, having never past through it in his life before.

Jones had not fuch implicit faith in his guide, but that on their arrival at a village he inquired of the first fellow he saw, whether they were in the road to Bristol? Whence did you come?" cries the fellow. "No matter," says Jones, a little hastily, "I want to know if this be the road to Bristol." "The road to Bristol!" cries the fellow, scratching his head, "Why, measter, I believe you will hardly get to Bristol this way to-night."

da da

th

Pa

CC

W

ha

qu

re

n

" Prithee, friend, then," answered Jones, "do tell us which

"is the way."——" Why, Measter," cries the fellow,
"you must be come out of your road the Lord knows
"whither; for thick way goeth to Glocester." "Well,
and what way goes to Bristol?" said Jones. "Why,
you be going away from Bristol," answered the fellow.
"Then," said Jones, "we must go back again."
Ay, you must," said the fellow. "Well, and when
"we come back to the top of the hill, which way must
we take? "Why you must keep the strait road."
But I remember there are two roads, one to the right,

" and the other to the left." " Why you must keep " the right hand road, and then gu strait vorwards; on-

" ly remember to turn first to your right, and then to your left again, and then to your right; and that brings you to the 'fquire's, and then you must keep

Another fellow now came up, and asked which way

" strait vorwards, and turn to the left."

the gentlemen were going?—of which being informed by Jones, he first scratched his head, and then leaning upon a pole he had in his hand, began to tell him, "That he "must keep to the right-hand road for about a mile, or a "mile and a half, or such a matter, and then he must turn "short to the left, which would bring him round by "Measter Jin Bearnes's." "But which is Mr John "Bearnes's?" says Jones. "O Lord," cries the fellow,

" why, don't you know Measter Jin Bearnes? Whence

" did you come?"

These two sellows had almost conquered the patience of Jones, when a plain well-looking man, (who was indeed a quaker) accosted him thus: "Friend, I perceive thou hast lost thy way: and if thou wilt take my adwice, thou wilt not attempt to find it to-night. It is almost dark, and the road is difficult to hit; besides, there have been several robberies committed lately between this and Bristol. Here is a very creditable good house just by, where thou may'st find good entertainment for thyself and thy cattle till morning." Jones, after a little persuasion, agreed to stay in this place 'till the morning, and was conducted by his friend to the public-house.

The landlord, who was a very civil fellow, told Jones,

II.

ch

W,

WS

ell, ay,

w. n."

nen ust

d."

ht,

eep on-

1 to

hat

eep

wav

by

pon

he

or a

urn

l by

ohn

ow,

ence

ence

s in-

eive

ad-

It is

des,

be-

able

nter-

ng."

" he hoped he would excuse the badness of his accommodation; for that his wife was gone from home, and had " locked up almost every thing, and carried the keys a-" long with her." Indeed the fact was, that a favourite daughter of her's was just married, and gone, that morning, home with her husband: and that she, and her mother together, had almost stript the poor man of all his goods, as well as money; for though he had feveral children, this daughter only, who was the mother's favourite, was the object of her confideration; and to the humour of this one child she would, with pleasure, have facrificed all the rest, and her husband into the bargain.

Though Jones was very unfit for any kind of company, and would have preferred being alone; yet he could not refift the importunities of the honest quaker; who was the more defirous of fitting with him, from having remarked the melancholy which appeared both in his countenance and behaviour, and which the poor quaker thought his conversation might in some measure

relieve.

After they had past some time together, in such a manner that my honest friend might have thought himself at one of his filent meetings, the quaker began to be moved by some spirit or other, probably that of curiosity; and faid, " Friend, I perceive some sad disaster hath befallen * thee; but pray be of comfort. Perhaps thou hast lost a friend. If fo, thou must consider we are all mortal. And why shouldst thou grieve, when thou knowest thy grief will do thy friend no good? We are all born to affliction. I myfelf have my forrows as well as thee, and most probably greater forrows. Though I have a clear estate of 100 l. a year, which is as much as I want, and I have a conscience, I thank the Lord, void of offence. My conftitution is found and ftrong, and there is no man can demand a debt of me, nor accule me of an injury—yet, friend, I should be concerned to think thee as miserable as myself."

Here the quaker ended with a deep figh; and Jones presently answered, "I am very forry, Sir, for your unhappiness, whatever is the occasion of it." " Ah! friend," replied the quaker, "one only daughter is the occasion. One who was my greatest delight upon

earth.

place

the

mes, 6 he earth, and who within this week is run away from me, s and is married against my confent. I had provided " her a proper match, a fober man, and one of fubstance; " but she, forfooth, would chuse for herself, and away " fhe is gone with a young fellow not worth a groat. If " fhe had been dead, as I suppose thy friend is, I should " have been happy!" "That is very strange," Sir, faid Jones. "Why, would it not be better for her to be dead, than to be a beggar?" replied the quaker; " for, as I " told you, the fellow is not worth a groat; and furely " fhe cannot expect that I shall ever give her a shilling. " Nay, not a farthing. No, as the hath married " for love, let her live on love if the can: let her carry her love to market, and fee whether any " one will change it into filver, or even into half-" pence." You know your own concerns best, Sir," faid Jones. "It must have been," continued the quaker, " a long premeditated scheme to cheat me: for they " have known one another from their infancy; and I al-" ways preached to her against love-and told her a " thousand times over it was all folly and wickedness. "Nay, the cunning flut pretended to hearken to me, " and to despise all wantonness of the flesh; and yet at " last, broke out at a window two pair of stairs: " for I began, indeed, a little to fuspect her, and " had locked her up carefully, intending the very next " morning to have married her up to my liking. But " fhe disappointed me within a few hours, and escap-" ed away to the lover of her own chusing, who lost no " time; for they were married and bedded, and all with-" in an hour. "But it shall be the worst hour's work for them both

"that ever they did; for they may starve, or beg, or steal together for me. I will never give either of them a farthing." Here Jones starting up, cry'd, "I really must be excused; I wish you would leave me." Come, come, friend," said the quaker, "don't give

"way to concern. You fee there are other people miferable befides yourfelf." "I fee there are madmen,
and fools, and villains in the world," cries Jones,—

But let me give you a piece of advice; fend for your daughter and fon-in-law home, and don't be your

VII.

me,

vided

ance;

away

. If

hould

, faid

dead,

as I

furely

lling.

rried

t her

anv

half-

" faid

aker,

thev

I I al-

her a

dnefs.

o me,

vet at

tairs:

and

next

But

efcap-

oft no

with-

both

g, or

er of

, "[

me."

give

e mi-

men,

your

your.

· felt

" felf the only cause of misery to one you pretend to love." " Send for her and her husband home!" cries the quaker loudly, " I would fooner fend for the two greatest ene-" mies I have in the world !" Well, go home yourfelf, " or where you please," faid Jones; " for I will fit " no longer in fuch company. " Nay, friend," anfwered the quaker, "I fcorn to impose my company " on any one." He then offered to pull money from his pocket, but Jones pushed him with some violence out of the room.

The subject of the quaker's discourse had so deeply affected Jones, that he stared very wildly all the time he was speaking. This the quaker had observed, and this, added to the rest of his behaviour, inspired honest Broadbrim with a conceit, that his companion was, in reality, out of his fenses. Instead of refenting the at front, therefore, the quaker was moved with compassion for his unhappy circumstances: and having communicated his opinion to the landlord, he defired him to take great care of his guest, and to treat him with the highest civility.

" Indeed," fays the landlord, " I shall use no such ci-" vility towards him: for it feems, for all his laced waift-" coat there, he is no more a gentleman than myfelf; but " a poor parish bastard, bred up at a great 'squire's about " thirty miles off, and now turned out of doors (not for " any good to be fure.) I shall get him out of my house " as foon as possible. If I do lose my reckoning, the " first loss is always the best. It is not above a year ago

" that I loft a filver fpoon."

"What dost thou talk of a parish bastard, Robin?" answered the quaker. " Thou must certainly be mistaken

" in thy man."

" Not at all," replied Robin, " the guide, who knows " him very well, told it me." For, indeed, the guide had no fooner taken his place at the kitchen fire, than he acquainted the whole company with all he knew, or had ever heard concerning Jones.

The quaker was no fooner affured by this fellow of the birth and low fortune of Jones, than all compafsion for him vanquished; and the honest, plain man, went home fired with no lefs indignation than a duke

Vol. II.

would have felt at receiving an affront from such a perfon.

The landlord himself conceived an equal distain for his guest; so that when Jones rung the bell in order to retire to bed, he was acquainted that he could have no bed there.—Besides distain of the mean condition of his guest, Robin entertained violent suspicions of his intentions, which were, he supposed, to watch some favourable opportunity of robbing the house. In reality, he might have been very well eased of these apprehensions by the prudent precautions of his wife and daughter, who had already removed every thing which was not fixed to the freehold; but he was by nature suspicious, and had been more particularly so since the loss of his spoon. In short, the dread of being robbed totally absorbed the comfortable consideration that he had nothing to lose.

Jones being affured that he could have no bed, very contentedly betook himself to a great chair made with rushes, when sleep, which had lately shunned his company in much better apartments, generously paid him a visit

in his humble cell.

As for the landlord, he was prevented by his fears from retiring to rest. He returned therefore to the kitchen fire, whence he could survey the only door which opened into the parlour, or rather hole, where Jones was seated; and as for the window to that room, it was impossible for any creature larger than a cat to have made his escape through it.

CHAP. XI.

The adventure of a company of Soldiers.

It is landlord having taken his feat directly oppofite to the door of the parlour, determined to keep guard there the whole night. The guide and another fellow remained long on duty with him, though they neither knew his fuspicions nor had any of their own. The true cause of their watching did indeed, at length, put an end to it; for this was no other than the strength and goodness of the beer, of which having tippled a very large quantity. T.

r-

or

to

10

of

is

ne

a-

p-

h

ffs

y

)-

Y

h

3-

it

e

quantity, they grew at first very noisy and vociferous, and

afterwards fell both afleep.

But it was not in the power of liquor to compose the fears of Robin. He continued still waking in his chair, with his eyes fixed stedsastly on the door which led into the apartment of Mr Jones, till a violent thundering at his outward gate called him from his seat and obliged him to open it; which he had no sooner done, than his kitchen was immediately full of gentlemen in red coats, who all rushed upon him in as tumultuous a manner, as if they intended to take his castle by storm.

The landlord was now forced from his post to furnish his numerous guests with beer, which they called for with great eagerness; and, upon his second or third return from the cellar, he saw Mr Jones standing before the fire in the midst of the soldiers; for it may easily be believed, that the arrival of so much good company should put an end to any sleep, unless that from which we are to

be awakened by the last trumpet.

The company having now pretty well fatisfied their thirst, nothing remained but to pay the reckoning, a circumstance often productive of much mischief and discontent among the inferior rank of gentry; who are apt to find great difficulty in affesting the sum, with exact regard to distributive justice, which directs, that every man shall pay according to the quantity that he drinks. This difficulty occurred upon the present occasion; and it was the greater, as some gentlemen had, in their extreme hurry, marched off, after their first draught, and had entirely forgot to contribute any thing towards the said reckoning.

A violent dispute now arose, in which every word may be said to have been deposed upon oath; for the oaths were at least equal to all the other words spoken. In this controversy, the whole company spoke together, and every man seemed wholly bent to extenuate the sum which fell to his share; so that the most probable conclusion which could be foreseen was, that a large portion of the reckoning would fall to the landlord's share to pay, or (what is much the same thing) would remain

unpaid.

All this while Mr Jones was engaged in conversation with the serjeant; for that officer was entirely unconcerned in the present dispute, being privileged, by immemori-

al custom, from all contribution.

The dispute now grew so very warm, that it seemed to draw towards a military decision, when Jones stepping forward, silenced all their clamours at once, by declaring that he would pay the whole reckoning, which indeed amounted to no more than three shillings and sourpence.

This declaration procured Jones the thanks and applause of the whole company. The terms honourable, noble, and worthy gentleman, resounded thro' the room; nay, my landlord himself began to have a better opinion of him, and almost to disbelieve the account which the

guide had given.

The ferjeant had informed Mr Jones, that they were marching against the rebels, and expected to be commanded by the glorious Duke of Cumberland. By which the reader may perceive (a circumstance which we have not thought necessary to communicate before) that this was the very time when the late rebellion was at the highest; and indeed the banditti were now marched into England, intending, as it was thought, to fight the king's forces, and to attempt pushing forward to the metropolis.

Jones had fome heroic ingredients in his composition, and was a hearty well-wisher to the glorious cause of liberty, and of the protestant religion. It is no wonder, therefore, that in circumstances which would have warranted a much more romantic and wild undertaking, it should occur to him to serve as a volunteer in this ex-

pedition.

Our commanding officer had faid all in his power to encourage and promote this good disposition, from the first moment he had been acquainted with it.—
He now proclaimed the noble resolution aloud, which was received with great pleasure by the whole company, who all cried out, "God bless king George, "and your honour:" and then added with many oaths, "We will stand by you both to the last drop of our blood."

II.

tion

ern-

ori-

ned

tep-

de-

in-

ur-

apble,

m;

ion

the

ere

By

we

hat

at

red

the

ne-

on, of

on-

ng,

ex-

ver

mc

ch

m-

ge,

ur

he

The gentleman who had been all night tippling at the dehouse was prevailed on by some arguments which a corporal had put into his hand, to undertake the same expedition. And now the portmanteau belonging to Mr ones being put into the baggage-cart, the forces were about to move forwards; when the guide stepping up to Jones, faid, "Sir, I hope you will confider that the horses have been kept out all night, and we have travelled a great way out of our way." Jones was furprifed at the impudence of this demand, and acquainted the foldiers with the merits of his cause, who were all unanimous in condemning the guide for his endeavours to put upon a gentleman. Some faid he ought to be tied neck and heels; others, that he deserved to run the gantlope; and the ferjeant shook his cane at him, and wished he had him under his command, fwearing heartily he would make an example of him.

Jones contented himself, however, with a negative punishment, and walked off with his new comrades, leaving the guide to the poor revenge of cursing and reviling him, in which latter the landlord joined, saying, "Ay, ay, he is a pure one, I warrant you. A pretty gentleman, indeed, to go for a soldier. He shall

wear a laced waistcoat truly. It is an old proverb and a true one, All is not gold that glisters. I am glad my

" house is well rid of him."

All that day the ferjeant and the young foldier marched together; and the former, who was an arch fellow, told the latter many entertaining stories of his campaigns, though in reality he had never made any; for he was but lately come into the service, and had, by his own dexterity, so well ingratiated himself with his officers, that he had promoted himself to a halberd; chiefly indeed by his merit in recruiting, in which he was most excellently well skilled,

Much mirth and festivity passed among the soldiers during their march. In which the many occurrences that had passed at their last quarters were remembered, and every one, with great freedom, made what jokes he pleased on his officers some of which were of the coarser kind, and very near bordering on scandal. This brought to our hero's mind the custom which he had read of

among

Ch

no

int

in

WC

wa

ter

ne

fic

nu

to

tu

ye

h

to

h

th

V

t

h

Y

f

1

among the Greeks and Romans, of indulging, on certain festivals and solemn occasions, the liberty to slaves, of using an uncontrouled freedom of speech towards their masters.

Our little army, which confifted of two companies of foot, were now arrived at the place where they were to halt that evening. The ferjeant then acquainted his lieutenant, who was the commanding officer, that they had picked up two fellows in that day's march; one of which, he faid, was as fine a man as ever he faw, (meaning the tippler) for that he was near fix feet, well proportioned, and strongly limbed, and the other, (meaning Jones), would do well enough for the rear rank.

The new foldiers were now produced before the officer, who having examined the fix-feet man, he being first produced, came next to survey Jones; at the first fight of whom, the lieutenant could not help shewing some surprise; for besides that he was well dressed, and was naturally genteel, he had a remarkable air of dignity in his look, which is rarely seen amongst the vulgar, and is indeed not inseparably annexed to the features of their superiors.

"Sir," faid the lieutenant, "my ferjeant informed me, that you are desirous of enlisting into the company

- "I have at present under my command; if so, Sir, we shall very gladly receive a gentleman who promises to
- " do much honour to the company, by bearing arms in it."

Jones answered: "That he had not mentioned any thing of enlisting himself: that he was most zeal-

- " oufly attached to the glorious cause for which they
- "were going to fight, and was very defirous of fer"ving as a volunteer;" concluding with fome compliments to the lieutenant, and expressing the great satisfaction he should have in being under his command.

The lieutenant returned his civility, commended his refolution, shook him by the hand, and invited him to dine

with himfelf and the rest of the officers.

in of

ir

of

re

d

at

;

v,

t,

r,

f-

g

d

-

f

e

1

CHAP. XII.

The adventure of a company of Officers.

THE lieutenant, whom we mentioned in the preceding chapter, and who commanded this party, was now near fixty years of age. He had entered very young into the army, and had ferved in the capacity of an enfign in the battle of Tannieres; here he had received two wounds, and had fo well diffinguished himself, that he was by the duke of Marlborough advanced to be a lieutenant immeditately after that battle.

In this commission he had continued ever since, viz. near forty years; during which time he had seen vast numbers preferred over his head, and had now the mortification to be commanded by boys, whose fathers were at

nurse when he first entered into the service.

Nor was this ill fuccess in his profession folely owing to his having no friend in power. He had the misfortune to incur the displeasure of his colonel, who for many years continued in the command of this regiment. Nor did he owe the implacable ill will which this man bore him, to any neglect or deficiency as an officer, nor indeed to any fault in himself; but folely to the indiscretion of his wife, who was a very beautiful woman, and who, though she was remarkably fond of her husband, would not purchase his preferment at the expence of certain favours which the colonel required of her.

The poor lieutenant was more peculiarly unhappy in this, that while he felt the effects of the enmity of his colonel, he neither knew, nor suspected, that he really bore him any; for he could not suspect an ill-will for which he was not conscious of giving any cause; and his wife, fearing what her husband's nice regard to his honour might have occasioned, contented herself with preserving her virtue, without enjoying the triumphs of her con-

quest.

This unfortunate officer (for fo I think he may be called) had many good qualities, besides his merit in his profession; for he was a religious, honest, good-natured man; and had behaved so well in his command, that he was highly esteemed and beloved, not only by the soldiers of his own company, but by the whole regiment.

The other officers who marched with him were a French lieutenant, who had been long enough out of France to forget his own language, but not long enough in England to learn ours, fo that he really spoke no language at all, and could barely make himself understood on the most ordinary occasions. There were likewise two ensigns, both very young fellows; one of whom had been bred under an attorney, and the other was son to the wife of a nobleman's butler.

As foon as dinner was ended, Jones informed the company of the merriment which had passed among the soldiers upon their march; " and yet," says he, notwith"ftanding all their vociferation, I dare swear they will
behave more like Grecians than Trojans when they
come to the enemy." "Grecians and Trojans!" says one of the ensigns, " who the devil are they? I have heard of all the troops in Europe, but never of any
fuch as these."

"Don't pretend to more ignorance than you have, "Mr Northerton," faid the worthy lieutenant." "I fuppose you have heard of the Greeks and Trojans, though, perhaps, you never read Pope's Homer; who, I remember, now the gentleman mentions it, compares the march of the Trojans to the cackling of geese, and greatly commends the filence of the Grecians. And upon my honour there is great justice in the cadet's observation."

"Begar, me remember dem very well," faid the French lieutenant, "me ave read them at school in dans Madam Daciere, des Greek, des Trojan, dey fight for von wo"man,-ouy, ouy, me ave read all dat."

"D—n Homo with all my heart," fays Northerton,—
"I have the marks of him in my a— yet. There's
"Thomas of our regiment always carries a Homo in his
"pecket: d—n me if ever I come at it, if I don't burn
"it. And there's Corderius, another d—n'd fon of a
"whore, that hath got me many a flogging."

"Then you have been at school, Mr Northerton?" faid the lieutenant.

" Ay d-n me, have I," answered he, " the devil take

• my

1

1

T,

1-

h

to

in

1-

n

70

fe

n-

1-

nill

ey

ys

ve

ny

e,

IS,

0,

es

nd

t's

ch

m

0-

e's

118

rn

fa

id

ke

my

my father for sending me thither. The old put wanted to make a parson of me, but d—n me, thinks I to myself, I'll nick you there, old cull: the devil a smack of your nonsense shall you ever get into me. There's Jemmy Oliver of our regiment, he narrowly escaped being a pimp too; and that would have been a thousand pities: for d—n me if he is not one of the prettiest fellows in the whole world; but he went farther than I with the old cull, for Jemmy can neither write nor read."

"You give your friend a very good character," faid the lieutenant, "and a very deserved one, I dare say; but prithee, Northerton, leave off that soolish as well as wicked custom of swearing; for you are deceived I promise you, if you think there is wit or politeness in it. I wish too, you would take my advice, and desist from abusing the clergy. Scandalous names and reslections, cast on any body of men, must be always unjustifiable, but especially so when thrown on so facred a function; for to abuse the body is to abuse the function itself, and I leave you to judge how inconsistent such behaviour is in men who are going to fight in desence of the protestant religion."

Mr Adderly, which was the name of the other enfign, had fat hitherto kicking his heels and humming a tune, without feeming to liften to the discourse; he now answered, "O Monsieur, on ne parle, pas de la religion dans "la guere." "Well said, Jack," cries Northerton, "if la religion was the only matter, the parsons should fight

" their own battles for me."

"I don't know, gentlemen," fays Jones, "what may be your opinion; but I think no man can engage in a nobler cause than that of his religion; and I have observed in the little I have read of history, that no foldiers have fought so bravely as those who have been inspired with a religious zeal. For my own part, though I love my king and country, I hope, as well as any man in it, yet the protestant interest is no small motive to my becoming a volunteer in the cause."

Northerton now winked on Adderly, and whispered to him slily, "Smoke the prig, Adderly, smoke him;" then, Vol. II. G turning turning to Jones, faid to him, "I am very glad, Sir, you have chosen our regiment to be a volunteer in: for,

"if our parson should at any time take a cup too much,
"I find you can supply his place. I presume, Sir, you
"have been at the university; may I crave the favour to

" know what college?"

"Sir," answered Jones, " so far from having been at the university, I have even had the advantage of your-

" felf, for I was never at school."

"I prefumed," cries the enfign, "only on the information of your great learning."—Oh, Sir;" answered Jones, "it is as possible for a man to know something without having been at school, as it is to have been at school and to know nothing."

"Well said, young volunteer," cries the lieutenant: upon my word, Northerton, you had better let him a-

" lone, for he will be too hard for you."

Northerton did not very well relish the farcasin of Jones, but he thought the provocation was scarce sufficient to justify a blow, or a rascal, or scoundrel, which were the only repartees that suggested themselves. He was therefore silent at present, but resolved to take the first opportunity to return the jest by abuse.

It now came to the return of Jones to give a toaft, as it is called, who could not refrain from mentioning his dear Sophia. This he did the more readily, as he imagined it utterly impossible that any one present should guess the

person he meant.

But the lieutenant, who was the toast-master, was not contented with Sophia only. He said he must have her sirname; upon which Jones hesitated a little, and presently after named Miss Sophia Western. Ensign Northerton declared he would not drink her health in the same round with his own toast, unless somebody would vouch for her. "I knew one Sophy Western," says he, "that was lain with by half the young fellows at Bath; and perhaps this is the same woman." Jones very solemnly assured him of the contrary, afferting that the young lady he named was one of great sashion and fortune. "Ay ay," says the ensign, "and so she is; d—n me, it is the same woman; and I'll hold half a dozen of Burgundy, Tom French of our regiment brings her

ou or,

h,

ou

to

at

Ir-

. 1

04-

ed

ng

at

it:

2-

of if-

ch He

he

sit

ear

lit

he

ot

ner

re-

th-

he

ald

ne,

h;
fo-

he

ne.

ne,

of ner nto " into company with us at any tavern in Bridge's "Street." He then proceeded to describe her person exactly, (for he had seen her with her aunt,) and concluded with saying, "That her father had a great estate "in Somersetshire."

The tenderness of lovers can ill brook the least jesting with the names of their mistresses. However, Jones, though he had enough of the lover and of the hero too in his disposition, did not resent these slanders as hastily perhaps as he ought to have done. To fay the truth, having feen but little of this kind of wit, he did not readily understand it, and for a long time imagined Mr Northerton had really mistaken his charmer for some other. But now turning to the enfign with a stern afpect, he faid, " Pray, Sir, chuse some other subject "for your wit, for I promise you I will bear no jesting with this lady's character." Jesting!" cries the other; "d-n me if ever I was more in earnest in my Tom French of our regiment had both her " and her aunt at Bath." " Then I must tell you in " earnest," cries Jones, " that you are one of the most " impudent rafcals upon earth."

He had no fooner spoken these words, than the enfign, together with a volley of curses, discharged a bottle sull at the head of Jones, which, hitting him a little above the right temple, brought him instantly to the

ground.

The conqueror, perceiving the enemy to lie motionless before him, and blood beginning to flow pretty plentifully from his wound, began now to think of quitting the field of battle, where no more honour was to be gotten; but the lieutenant interposed, by stepping before the door, and thus cut off his retreat.

Northerton was very importunate with the lieutenant for his liberty, urging the ill confequences of his stay, asking him, what he could have done less? "Zounds!" fays he, "I was but in jest with the fellow. I never "heard any harm of Miss Western in my life." "Have "not you?" faid the lieutenant: "then you richly desse ferve to be hanged, as well for making such jests, as for using such a weapon. You are my prisoner, Sir;

Cha

atta

bee

the

ed

the

plia

pre

thi

COL

he

ha

ch

re

th

or

is

pa

di

tl

te

C

0

C

n

p

d

(

1

]

" nor shall you stir from hence till a proper guard comes

" to secure you."

Such an afcendant had our lieutenant over this enfign, that all that fervency of courage, which had levelled our poor hero with the floor, would fcarce have animated the faid enfign to have drawn his fword against the lieutenant, had he had then one dangling at his side; but all the swords, being hung up in the room, were at the very beginning of the fray secured by the French officer: so that Mr Northerton was obliged to attend the final issue of this affair.

The French gentleman and Mr Adderly, at the defire of their commanding officer, had raifed up the body of Jones; but as they could perceive but little (if any) fign of life in him, they again let him fall, Adderly damning him for having blooded his waiftcoat, and the Frenchnan declaring, "Begar me no tush de Engliseman, de mort "me ave heard de Englise say, law, what you call, hang

" up de man dat tush him last."

When the good lieutenant applied himself to the door, he applied himself likewise to the bell; and, the drawer immediately attending, he dispatched him for a file of musqueteers and a surgeon. These commands, together with the drawer's report of what he had himself seen, not only produced the soldiers, but presently drew up the landlord of the house, his wife, and servants, and indeed every one else who happened at that time to be in the inn.

To describe every particular, and to relate the whole conversation of the ensuing scene, is not within my power, unless I had forty pens, and could at once write with them altogether, as the company now spoke. The reader must therefore content himself with the most remarkable incident, and perhaps he may very well excuse th rest.

The first thing done was securing the body of Northerton, who, being delivered into the custody of six men with a corporal at their head, was by them conducted from a place which he was very willing to leave, but it was unluckily to a place whither he was very unwilling to go. To say the truth, so whimsical are the desires of ambition, the very moment this youth had

attained

,

r

e

-

e -

t

e

of

n

n

rt

10

or

S,

lf

W

nd

be

le

r,

th

ne

e-

ife

17-

ix

n-

re,

ry

re

ad

ed

attained the above-mentioned honour, he would have been well contented to have retired to fome corner of the world, where the fame of it would never have reached his ears.

It surprizes us, and so perhaps it may the reader, that the lieutenant, a worthy and good man, should have applied his chief care, rather to secure the offender, than to preserve the life of the wounded person. We mention this observation, not with any view of pretending to account for so odd a behaviour, but lest some critic should heareaster plume himself on discovering it. We would have these gentlemen know, we can see what is odd in characters as well as themselves, but it is our business to relate facts as they are; which, when we have done, it is the part of the learned and sagacious reader to consult that original book of nature, whence every passage in our work is transcribed, though we quote not always the particular page for its authority.

The company which now arrived were of a different disposition. They suspended their curiosity concerning the person of the ensign, till they should see him hereaster in a more engaging attitude. At present, their whole concern and attention were employed about the bloody object on the floor; which being placed upright in a chair, soon began to discover some symptoms of life and motion. These were no sooner perceived by the company (for Jones was, at first, generally concluded to be dead) than they all fell at once to prescribing for him: (for as none of the physical order was present, every one

Bleeding was the unanimous voice of the whole room; but unluckily there was no operator at hand: every one then cry'd, "Call the barber;" but none stirred a step. Several cordials were then prescribed in the same ineffective manner; till the landlord ordered up a tankard of strong beer, with a toast, which he said was the best cordial in England.

The person principally affistant on this occasion, indeed the only one who did any service or seemed likely to do any, was the landlady; she cut off some of herhair, and applied it to the wound to stop the blood: she fell to chassing the youth's temples with her hand;

and

66

66

and having exprest great contempt for her husband's prescription of beer, she dispatched one of her maids to her own closet for a bottle of brandy, of which, as soon as it was brought, she prevailed on Jones, who was just returned to his senses, to drink a very large and plentiful draught.

Soon afterwards arrived the furgeon, who having viewed the wound, having shaken his head, and blamed every thing that was done, ordered his patient instantly to bed; in which place we think proper to leave him sometime to his repose, and shall here, therefore, put an end to this

chapter.

CHAP. XIII.

Containing the great address of the landlady; the great learning of the Surgeon, and the solid skill in casuistry of the avorthy lieutenant.

THEN the wounded man was carried to his bed, and the house began again to clear up from the hurry which this accident had occasioned, the landlady thus addressed the commanding officer: " I am afraid, " Sir," faid the, " this young man did not behave him-" felf as well as he should do to your honours; and if " he had been killed, I suppose he had but his dearts: " to be fure, when gentlemen admit inferior persons into " their company, they oft to keep their distance; " but, as my first husband used to fay, few of 'em know " how to do it. For my own part, I am fure I should " not have fuffered any fellows to include themselves " into gentlemen's company: but I thoft he had been " an officer himfelf, till the ferjeant told me he was but " a recruit." " Landlady," answered the lieutenant, " you mistake

"the whole matter. The young man behaved himself extremely well, and is, I believe, a much better gentleman than the ensign who abused him. If the young fellow dies, the man who struck him will have the most reason to be forry for it; for the regiment will get rid

" reason to be forry for it; for the regiment will get rid
of a very troublesome fellow, who is a scandal to the
" army;

II.

l's

to

25

e-

ul

V.

rv

d;

to

is

11-

1-

d,

16

ly

d,

n-

if

s:

to

3

W

ld

cs

en

ut

ce

lf

e-

19

ft

id

ne

15

" army; and if he escapes from the hands of justice,

" blame me, Madam, that's all."

"Ay! ay! good lack-a-day!" faid the landlady, "who could have thoft it? Ay, ay, ay, I am fatisfied your honour will fee justice done; and to be fure it oft to be to every one. Gentlemen oft not to kill poor tolks without answering for it. A poor man hath a foul to be faved as well as his betters."

"Indeed, Madam," faid the lieutenant, "you do the volunteer wrong; I dare fwear he is more of a gentle-

" man than the officer."

" Ay," cries the landlady, "why look you there now: " well, my first husband was a wife man; he used to " fay, you can't always know the infide by the outfide. "Nay, that might have been well enough too; for I " never faw'd him till he was all over blood. Who " could have thoft it! mayhap, fome young gentleman " croffed in love. Good lack-a-day! if he should die, " what a concern it will be to his parents! why fure the " devil must possess the wicked wretch to do such an " act. To be fure, he is a fcandal to the army, as you " honour fays: for most of the gentlemen of the army " that ever I faw, are quite different fort of people, and " look as if they would fcorn to spill any christian blood " as much as any men, I mean, that is, in a civil way, " as my first husband used to say. To be sure, when " they come into the wars, there must be blood shed; " but that they are not to be blamed for it. The more " of our enemies they kill there, the better; and I wish " with all my heart, they could kill every mother's fon of " them."

" O fie! Madam," faid the lieutenant smiling, "ALL

" is rather too bloody-minded a with."

"Not at all, Sir," answered she, "I am not at all bloody minded, only to our enemies, and there is no harm in that. To be fure it is natural for us to wish our enimes dead, that the wars may be at an end, and our taxes to be lowered; for it is a dreadful thing to pay as we do. Why now there is above forty shillings for window-lights, and yet we have stopt up all we could; we have almost blinded the house I am sure: fays I to the excise-man, fays I, I think you oft to favour

ce us

Ch

16

..

16

lie

36

..

66

66

35

86

46

40

66

\$6

66

O

66

66

" us, I am fure we are very good friends to government; and so we are for fartin: for we pay a mint of money to 'um. And yet I often think to myself the government doth not imagine itself more obliged to us, than

to those that don't pay 'um a farthing. Ay, ay; it is " the way of the world." She was proceeding in this manner, when the furgeon entered the room. The lieutenant immediately asked how his patient did? but he refolved him only by faying, "Better, I believe, than he would have been by this time, " if I had not been called; and even as it is, perhaps it " would have been lucky if I could have been called " fooner." I hope, Sir," faid the lieutenant, " the skull is " not fractured." " Hum," cries the furgeon, "fractures " are not always the most dangerous symptoms. Contu-" fions and lacerations are often attended with worfe phæ-" nomena, and with more fatal confequences than frac "tures. People who know nothing of the matter con-" clude, if the skull is not fractured; all is well; whereas, " I had rather fee a man's skull broke all to pieces, than " fome contusions I have met with." "I hope," fays the lieutanant, there are no fuch fymptoms here." "Symptoms," answered the furgeon, are not always re-" gular nor constant. I have known very unfavourable " fymptoms in the morning, change to favourable ones " at noon, and return to unfavourable ones again at night. " Of wounds indeed, it is rightly and truly faid Nemo repente fuit turpissimus. I was once, I remember, called " to a patient, who had received a violent contusion in " his tibia, by which the exterior cutis was lacerated, fo " that there was a profuse, sanguinary discharge; and the " interior membranes were fo divellicated, that the os, " or bone, very plainly appeared through the aperture " of the vulnus, or wound. Some febrile fymptoms in-" tervening at the same time, (for the pulse was exube-" rant, and indicated much phlebotomy) I apprehended an " immediate mortification. To prevent which, I pre-" fently made a large orifice in the vein of the left arm, " whence I drew twenty ounces of blood; which I ex-" pected to have found extremely fizy and glutinous, " or indeed coagulated, as it is in plearetic complaints; but, to my surprize, it appeared rosy and florid, and its VIL

ent:

oney

ern-

than

it is

reon

ked

ing,

me,

os it

lled

ll is

ires

itu-

hæ.

rac

on-

eas,

ian

ays

e."

re.

ble

nes

ht.

re-

ed

in

fo

he

os.

re

n-

e-

an

e.

n,

X-

s,

tg

confistency differed little from the blood of those in perfect health. I then applied a fomentation to the part, which highly answered the intention, and after " three or four times dreffing, the wound began to difcharge a thick pus, or matter, by which means the " cohesion -----but perhaps I do not make myself per-" feetly well understood." "No, really," answered the lieutenant, " I cannot fay I understand a syllable." "Well, Sir," faid the furgeon, "then I shall not tire vour patience; in short, within fix weeks, my patient " was able to walk upon his legs, as perfectly as he could " have done before he received the contusion." "I wish " Sir," faid the lieutenant, " you would be fo kind only to inform me, whether the wound this young gentleman hath had the misfortune to receive is likely to " prove mortal?" " Sir," answered the furgeon, " to " fay whether a wound will prove mortal or not at first dreffing, would be very weak and foolish presumption: we are all mortal, and fymptoms often occur in a cure which the greatest of our profession could never fore-" fee."-" But do you think him in danger?" fays the other. "In danger! ay, furely," cries the doctor, "who " is there among us, who in the most perfect health can " be faid not to be in danger? Can a man, therefore, " with fo bad a wound as this, be faid to be out of danger? all I can fay at present is, that it is well I was " called as I was, and perhaps it would have been better " if I had been called fooner. I will fee him again early " in the morning, and in the mean time let him be kept " extremely quiet, and drink liberally of water-gruel." " Won't you allow him fack-whey?" faid the landlady. "Ay, ay, fack-whey," cries the doctor, "if you will, " provided it be very small." " And a little chicken-" broth, too," added she. "Yes, yes, chicken-broth," faid the doctor, " is very good." "May'nt I make him fome " jellies too?" faid the landlady. " Ay, ay," answered the doctor, "jellies are very good for wounds, for they " promote cohesion." And indeed it was lucky the had not named foop or high fauces, for the doctor would have complied, rather than have loft the cuftom of the house.

The doctor was no fooner gone, than the landlady began to trumpet forth his fame to the lieutenant, who had Vol. II.

CI

66

..

66

46

66

"

66

not, from their fhort acquaintance, conceived quite for favourable an opinion of his physical abilities as the good woman, and all the neighbourhood, entertained; (and perhaps very rightly), for though I am afraid the doctor was a little of a coxcomb, he might be nevertheless very much

of a furgeon.

The lieutenant having collected from the learned difcourse of the surgeon that Mr Jones was in great danger, gave orders for keeping Mr Northerton under a very strict guard, designing in the morning to attend him to a justice of peace, and to commit the conducting the troops to Gloucester to the French lieutenant, who, though he could neither read, write, nor speak any language, was,

however, a good officer.

In the evening our commander fent a meffage to Mr Jones, that, if a vifit would not be troublesome, he would wait on him. This civility was very kindly and thankfully received by Jones, and the lieutenant accordingly went up to his room, when he found the wounded man much better than he expected; nay, Jones affured his friend, that if he had not received express orders to the contrary from the surgeon, he should have got up long ago; for he appeared to himself to be as well as ever, and felt no other inconvenience from his wound, but an extreme foreness on that side of his head.

" I should be very glad," quoth the lieutenant, "if
you was as well as you fancy yourself; for then you could
be able to do yourself justice immediately: for when a

"matter can't be made up, as in a case of a blow, the fooner you take him out the better; but I am afraid

" you think yourfelf better than you are, and he would

" have too much advantage over you."

" I'll try, however," answered Jones, " if you please, and will be so kind to lend me a sword, for I have

" none here of my own."

"My fword is heartily at your fervice, my dear boy," cries the lieutenant, kiffing him, "you are a brave lad, and I love your spirit; but I fear your strength: for

" fuch a blow, and fo much loss of blood, must have wery much weakened you; and though you feel no want

" of strength in your bed, yet you most probably would after a thrust or two. I cannot consent to your taking him out

II.

fo

bod

er-

was

ich

lif-

er,

erv

o a

ego

he

as,

Mr

uld

nk.

gly

an

his

the

ng

nd

-XS

if i

uld

n a

the

aid

ald

ife,

ive

7, 99

ad,

for

ive

ant

ald

im

ut

" out to-night; but I hope you will be able to come " up with us before we get many days march advance; " and I give you my honour you shall have fatisfaction, or " the man who hath injured you shan't stay in our regi-" ment."

" I wish," faid Jones, " it was possible to decide this " matter to-night: now you have mentioned it to me,

" I shall not be able to rest."

"O never think of it," returned the other, " a few " days will make no difference. The wounds of honour " are not like those in your body. They fuffer nothing " by the delay of cure. It will be altogether as well " for you to receive fatisfaction a week hence as now."

"But suppose," faid Jones, "I should grow worse, " and die of the confequences of my prefent wound."

"Then your honour," answered the lieutenant, "will " require no reparation at all. I myself will do justice " to your character, and testify to the world your inten-" tion to have acted properly if you had recovered."

"Still," replied Jones, " I am concerned at the de-" lay. I am almost afraid to mention it to you who are a " foldier; but though I have been a very wild young " fellow, still in my most serious moments, and at the

" bottom, I am really a christian."

" So am I too, I affure you," faid the officer; " and fo " zealous a one, that I was pleased with you at dinner " for taking up the cause of your religion: and I am " a little offended with you now, young gentleman, that " you should express a fear of declaring your faith before " any one."

"But how terrible must it be," cries Jones, " to any " one who is really a christian, to cherish malice in his " breaft, in opposition to the command of Him who " hath expressly forbid it? How can I bear to do this

" on a fick-bed? or how shall I make up my ac-" count, with fuch an article as this in my bosom against

" me ?"

"Why, I believe there is fuch a command," cries the lieutenant, " but a man of honour can't keep it. And " you must be a man of honour, if you will be in the ar-" my. I remember I once put the case to our chaplain " over a bowl of punch, and he confessed there was much " difficulty

Ch

V

flui

the

fro

ate

jea

gre

no

ha

w

Jo

hi

no

as

be

pl

W

0

i

1

" difficulty in it; but he faid, he hoped there might be " a latitude granted to foldiers in this one instance; and " to be fure it is our duty to hope fo; for who would " bear to live without his honour? No, no, my dear boy, " be a good christian as long as you live: but be a man " of honour too, and never put up an affront; not all " the books, nor all the parsons in the world, shall ever " perfuade me to that. I love my religion very well, " but I love my honour more. There must be some mis-" take in wording the text, or in the translation, or in the " understanding it, or somewhere or other. But however " that be, a man must run the risque; for he must pre-" ferve his honour. So compose yourself to-night, and I " promife you, you shall have an opportunity of doing " yourself justice," Here he gave Jones a hearty buss, shook him by the hand, and took his leave.

But though the lieutenant's reasoning was very satisfactory to himself, it was not entirely so to his friend. Jones therefore having revolved this matter much in hi thoughts, at last came to a resolution, which the reader

will find in the next chapter.

CHAP. XIV.

A most dreadful chapter indeed, and which few readers ought to venture upon in an evening, especially when alone.

JONES swallowed a large mess of chicken, or rather cock-broth, with a very good appetite, as indeed he would have done the cock it was made of, with a pound of bacon into the bargain; and now, sinding in himself no deficiency of either health or spirit, he resolved to get

up and feek his enemy.

But first he sent for the serjeant, who was his first acquaintance among these military gentlemen. Unluckily, that worthy officer having, in a literal sense, taken his fill of liquor, had been some time retired to his bolster, where he was snoring so loud, that it was not easy to convey a noise in at his ears capable of drowning that which issued from his nostrils.

However, as Jones persisted in his desire of seeing him, a vociferous

II.

be

and

uld

oy,

nan

all

ver

ell,

nif-

the

ver

re-

ng

ıfs,

is-

id.

hi

ler

rs

a-

er

10

nd

elf

et

C-

11

e

d

1,

a vociferous drawer at length found means to diffurb his flumbers, and to acquaint him with the meffage: of which the ferjeant was no fooner made fenfible, than he aroffrom his bed, and, having his clothes already on, immedie ately attended. Jones did not think fit to acquaint the ferjeant with his defign, though he might have done it with great fafety; for the halberdier was himfelf a man of honour, and had killed his man. He would therefore have faithfully kept this fecret, or indeed any other which no reward was published for discovering. But as Jones knew not those virtues in so short an acquaintance, his caution was perhaps prudent and commendable enough.

He began, therefore, by acquainting the serjeant, that, as he was now entered into the army, he was ashamed of being without what was perhaps the most necessary implement of a soldier, namely, a sword, adding, that he would be infinitely obliged to him, if he could procure one. For which," says he, "I will give you any reason-" able price; nor do I insist upon its being silver-hilted, "only a good blade, and such as may become a soldier's

" thigh."

The ferjeant, who well knew what had happened, and had heard that Jones was in a very dangerous condition, immediately concluded from fuch a meffage, at fuch a time of night, and from a man in fuch a fituation, that he was lightheaded. Now, as he had his wit (to use that word in its common fignification) always ready, he bethought himself of making his advantage of this humour in the sick man. "Sir," says he, "I believe I can sit you. I have a most "excellent piece of suff hy man. It is not indeed silver

" excellent piece of ftuff by me. It is not indeed filver" hilted, which, as you fay, doth not become a foldier;
" but the handle is decent enough, and the blade one of

" the best in Europe.—It is a blade that—a blade that—
in thort, I will fetch it you this instant, and you shall

" fee it and handle it—I am glad to fee your honour fo

" well with all my heart."

Being inftantly returned with the fword, he delivered it to Jones, who took it and drew it, and then told the ferjeant it would do very well, and bid him name his price.

The ferjeant now began to harangue in praise of his goods.

Ch

66

66

66

66

hi

th

fic

h

0

h

C

t

n

h

goods. He faid, (nay, he swore very heartily,) "that the "blade was taken from a French officer of very high "rank at the battle of Dettingen. I took it myself," says he, "from his side, after I had knocked him o' the head. The hilt was a golden one. That I sold to one of our sine gentlemen; for there are some of them, an't

" please your honour, who value the hilt of a sword more than the blade."

Here the other stopped him, and begged him to name a price. The serjeant, who thought Jones absolutely out of his senses, and very near his end, was asraid, less the would injure his samily by asking too little.—However, aster, a moment's hesitation, he contented himself with naming twenty guineas, and swore he would not sell it for less to his own brother.

"Twenty guineas!" fays Jones in the utmost surprise; fure you think I am mad, or that I never saw a sword in my life. Twenty guineas, indeed! I did not imagine you would endeavour to impose upon me.—Here, take the sword—No, now I think on't; I will keep it myself, and shew it your officer in the morning, ac-

" quainting him at the same time what a price you ask" ed me for it."

The ferjeant, as we have faid, had always his wit (in fensu pradicto) about him, and now plainly saw, that Jones was not in the condition he apprehended him to be; he now therefore counterfeited as great surprize as the other had shewn, and said, "I am certain, Sir, I have not asked you so much out of the way. Besides, you are to consider it is the only sword I have, and I must run the risque of my officer's displeasure by going without one myself: and truly, putting all this together, and I don't think twenty shillings so much out of the way."

"Twenty shillings!" cries Jones; "why, you just now asked me twenty guineas." "How!" cries the serjeant—"Sure your honour must have mistaken me, or else I mistook myself—and indeed I am but half awake—Twenty guineas, indeed! no wonder your honour slew into such a passion. I say twenty guineas too!—no, no, I meant twenty shillings, I assure you: and, when your honour comes

I.

10

h ",

e

of 't

e

e

it

h

t

Chap. 14.

"to consider every thing, I hope you will not think that so extravagant a price. It is indeed true, you may buy a weapon which looks as well for less money; but"—

Here Jones interrupted him, faying, "I will be fo far from making any words with you, that I will give you a fhilling more than your demand." He then gave him a guinea, bid him return to his bed, and wished him a good march, adding, he hoped to be able to overtake them before the division reached Worcester.

The ferjeant very civilly took his leave, fully fatisfied with his merchandize, and not a little pleafed with his dextrous recovery from that false step, into which his opinion of the fick man's light-headedness had betrayed him.

As foon as the ferjeant was departed, Jones rofe from his bed, and dreffed himself entirely, putting on even his coat, which, as it's colour was white, shewed very visibly the streams of blood which had flowed down it; and now, having grafped his new-purchased sword in his hand, he was going to iffue forth, when the thought of what he was about to undertake laid fuddenly hold of him, and he began to reflect, that in a few minutes he might possibly deprive a human being of his life, or lose his own. "Very well," faid he, " and in what cause do I venture " my life? Why, in that of my honour. And who is this " human being? A rascal who hath injured and insulted " me without provocation. But is not revenge forbid-" den by Heaven?—Yes, but it is enjoined by the " world. Well, but shall I obey the world in opposition " to the express commands of Heaven? Shall I incur " the divine displeasure rather than be called —ha--coward " -fcoundrel? I'll think no more; I am refolved, and " must fight him."

The clock had now ftruck twelve, and every one in the house were in their beds, except the centinel who stood to guard Northerton, when Jones, softly opening his door, issued forth in pursuit of his enemy, of whose place of confinement he had received a perfect description from the drawer.—It is not easy to conceive a much more tremendous figure than he now exhibited. He had on, as we have said, a light-coloured coat, covered

the Act directs 1701 by J. Sibbald Blant

with streams of blood. His face, which missed that very blood, as well as twenty ounces more drawn from him by the surgeon, was pallid. Round his head was a quantity of bandage, not unlike a turban. In the right hand he carried a sword; and in the left a candle: so that the bloody Banquo was not worthy to be compared to him. In fact, I believe a more dreadful apparition was never raised in a church yard, nor in the imagination of any good people met in a winter-evening over a Christmassire in Somerset-shire.

When the centinel first saw our hero approach, his hair began gently to lift up his grenadier-cap; and in the same instant his knees sell to blows with each other. Presently his whole body was seized with worse than an ague-sit. He then fired his piece, and sell flat on his

face.

Whether fear or courage was the occasion of his firing, or whether he took aim at the object of his terror, I cannot fay. If he did, however, he had the good fortune to miss his man.

Jones, feeing the fellow fall, gueffed the cause of his fright, at which he could not forbear smiling, not in the least reflecting on the danger from which he had just escaped. He then passed by the fellow, who still continued in the posture in which he fell, and entered the room, where Northerton, as he had heard, was confined. Here, in solitary situation, he found—an empty quart-pot standing on the table, on which some beer being spilt, it looked as if the room had lately been inhabited, but at

present it was entirely vacant.

Jones then apprehended it might lead to some other apartment; but, upon searching all round it, he could perceive no other door than that at which he entered, and where the centinel had been posted. He then proceded to call Northerton several times by his name; but no one answered; nor did this serve to any other purpose than to consirm the centinel in his terrors, who was now convinced that the volunteer was dead of his wounds, and that his ghost was come in search of the murtherer: he now lay in all the agenies of horror; and I wish, with all my heart, some of those actors, who are hereafter to represent a man frighted out of his wits, had seen him, that



t.

y n de de le r y

is n r. n

0

is et - eli-

rdi, tevdell ty

264.

CI th ing an

fin the ble ch be for we co ce th in

po attended his ed his bit his his control in the h

they might be taught to copy nature, instead of performing several antic tricks and gestures, for the entertainment

and applause of the galleries.

Perceiving the bird was flown, at least despairing to find him, and rightly apprehending that the report of the firelock would alarm the whole house, our hero now blew out his candle, and gently stole back again to his chamber, and to his bed: whither he would not have been able to have gotten undiscovered, had any other perfon been on the same stair-case, save only one gentleman who was confined to his bed by the gout; for before he could reach the door to his chamber, the hall where the centinel had been posted was half full of people, some in their shirts, and others not half dress, all very earnestly inquiring of each other what was the matter?

The foldier was now found lying in the same place and posture in which we just now left him. Several immediately applied themselves to raise him, and some concluded him dead: but they presently saw their mistake; for he not only struggled with those who laid their hands on him, but fell a roaring like a bull. In reality, he imagined so many spirits or devils were handling him; for his imagination being possessed with the horror of an apparition, converted every object he saw or felt, into nothing

but ghofts and spectres.

At length he was over-powered by numbers, and got upon his legs; when candles being brought, and feeing two or three of his comrades prefent, he came a little to himfelf; but when they asked him what was the matter? he answered, I am a dead man, that's all; I am a dead man, "I can't recover it, I have seen him." "What hast "thou seen, Jack," says one of the soldiers. "Why I have seen the young volunteer that was killed yester-"day." He then imprecated the most heavy curses on himself, if he had not seen the volunteer, all over blood, vomiting fire out of his mouth and nostrils, pass by him into the chamber where Ensign Northerton was, and then seizing the ensign by the throat, sly away with him in a clap of thunder.

This relation met with a gracious reception from the audience. All the women prefent believed it firmly, and prayed heaven to defend them from murther. Amongst

the men, too, many had faith in the story; but others turned it into derision and ridicule; and a serjeant, who was present, answered very cooly; "Young man, you will hear more of this for going to sleep, and dreaming on your post."

The foldier replied, "You may punish me if you please; but I was as broad awake as I am now; and the devil

carry me away, as he hath the enfign, if I did not fee the dead man, as I tell you, with eyes as big and as fiery

" as two large flambeaux."

The commander of the forces, and the commander of the house, were now both arrived: for the former being awake at the time, and hearing the centinel fire his piece, thought it his duty to rise immediately, though he had no great apprehensions of any mischief; whereas the apprehensions of the latter were much greater, lest her spoons and tankards should be upon the march, without having received any such orders from her.

Our poor centinel, to whom the fight of this officer was not much more welcome than the apparition, as he thought it, which he had feen before, again related the dreadful story, and with many additions of blood and fire: but he had the misfortune to gain no credit with either of the lastmentioned persons; for the officer, though a very religious man, was free from all terrors of this kind; besides, having so lately lest Jones in the condition we have seen, he had no suspicion of his being dead. As for the landlady though not over religious, she had no kind of aversion to the doctrine of spirits; but there was a circumstance in the tale which she well knew to be false, as we shall inform the reader presently.

But whether Northerton was carried away in thunder or fire, or in whatever other manner he was gone, it was now certain, that his body was no longer in custody. Upon this occasion, the lieutenant formed a conclusion not very different from what the serjeant is just mentioned to have made before, and immediately ordered the centinel to be taken prisoner. So that, by a strange reverse of fortune, (tho' not very uncommon in a military life)

the guard became the guarded.

CHAP.

i

CHAP. XV.

The conclusion of the foregoing adventure.

BESIDES the suspicion of sleep, the lieutenant harboured another, and worse doubt, against the poor centinel, and this was that of treachery: for as he believed not one syllable of the apparition, so he imagined the whole to be an invention, formed only to impose upon him, and that the fellow had, in reality, been bribed by Northerton to let him escape. And this he imagined the rather, as the fright appeared to him the more unnatural in one who had the character of as brave and bold a man as any in the regiment, having been in several actions, having received several wounds, and, in a word, having behaved himself always like a good and valiant foldier.

That the reader, may therefore, not conceive the least ill opinion of such a person, we shall not delay a moment in rescuing his character from the imputation of this guilt.

Mr Northerton then, as we have before observed, was fully fatisfied with the glory which he had obtained from this action. He had, perhaps, feen, or heard, or gueffed, that envy is apt to attend fame. Not that I would here infinuate, that he was heathenishly inclined to believe in, or to worthip the goddess Nemesis; for, in fact, I am convinced he never heard of her name. He was, besides, of an active disposition, and had a great antipathy to those close winter quarters in the castle of Gloucester, for which a justice of peace might possibly give him a billet. Nor was he moreover free from some uneasy meditations on a certain wooden edifice, which I forbear to name, in conformity to the opinion of mankind, who, I think, ing, as it is, or, at least, might be made, of more benefit to fociety than almost any other public erection. In a rather ought to honour than to be ashamed of this buildword, to hint at no more reasons for his conduct, Mr Northerton was defirous of departing that evening, and nothing remained for him but to contrive the quomodo, which appeared to be a matter of fome difficulty.

Now this young gentleman, though fomewhat crooked his morals, was perfectly strait in his perfon, which was

extremely

extremely ftrong and well made. His face too was accounted handsome by the generality of women, for it was broad and ruddy, with tolerably good teeth. Such charms did not fail making an impression on my landlady, who had no little relish for this kind of beauty. She had, indeed, a real compassion for the young man; and hearing from the furgeon that affairs were like to go ill with the volunteer, the suspected they might hereafter wear no benign aspect with the ensign. Having obtained, therefore, leave to make him a vifit, and finding him in a very melancholy mood, which the confiderably heightened, by telling him there were scarce any hopes of the volunteer's life, the proceeded to throw forth fome hints, which the other readily and eagerly taking up, they foon came to a right understanding; and it was at length agreed, that the enfign should, at a certain signal, ascend the chimney, which communicating very foon with that of the kitchen, he might there again let himfelf down; for which she would give him an opportunity, by keeping the coast clear.

But leaft our readers, of a different complexion, should take this occasion of too hastily condemning all compassion as a folly, and pernicious to society, we think proper to mention another particular which might possibly have some little share in this action. The ensign happened to be at this time possessed of the sum of sifty pounds, which did indeed belong to the whole company: for the captain, having quarrelled with his lieutenant, had entrusted the payment of his company to the ensign. This money, however, he thought proper to deposit in my landlady's hand, possibly by way of bail or security that he would hereafter appear and answer to the charge against him: but whatever were the conditions, certain it is, that she had the money and the ensign his liberty.

The reader may, perhaps, expect, from the compationate temper of this good women, that when the faw the poor centinel taken prisoner for a fact of which she knew him innocent, she should immediately have interposed in his behalf; but whether it was that she had already exhausted all her compassion in the above-mentioned instance, or that the features of this fellow, tho not very different from those of the ensign, could not raise it, I will not determine; but far from being an ad-

vocate

The

vocate for the present prisoner, she urged his guilt to the officer declaring with uplifted eyes and hands, that she would not have had any concern in the escape of a murderer for all the world.

Every thing was now once more quiet; and most of the company returned again to their beds; but the landlady, either from the natural activity of her disposition, or from her fear for her plate, having no propensity to sleep, she prevailed with the officers, as they were to march within little more than an hour, to spend the time with her

over a bowl of punch,

Jones had lain awake all this while, and had heard great part of the hurry and bustle that had passed, of which he had now some curiosity to know the particulars. He therefore applied to his bell, which he rung at least twenty times without any effect; for my landlady was in such high mirth with her company, that no clapper could be heard there but her own; and the drawer and chambermaid, who were sitting together in the kitchen, (for neither durst he sit up, nor she lie in her bed alone,) the more they heard the bell ring, the more they were frightened, and, as it were, nailed down in their places.

At last, at a lucky interval of chat, the found reached the ears of our good landlady, who prefently fent forth her fummons, which both her fervants instantly obeyed. " Joe," fays the mistress, " don't you hear the gentle-" bell ring? Why don't you go up?" " It is not a " man's business," answered the drawer, to wait upon the " chambers. It is Betty Chambermaid's;" " If you come " to that," answered the maid, " it is not my business to " wait upon gentlemen. I have done it indeed fome-" times; but the devil fetch me if ever I do it again, since " you make your preambles about it." The bell ftill ringing violently, their mistress feil into a passion, and fwore, if the drawer did not go up immediately, she would turn him away that very morning, "If you do, Madam," fays he "I can't help it. I won't do another fervant's bufi-" nefs." She then applied herself to the maid, and endeavoured to prevail by gentle means; but all in vain; Betty was as inflexible as Joe; both infifted it was not their business, and they would not do it.

The lieutenant then fell a-laughing, and faid, "Come, "I will put an end to this contention;" and then turning to the fervants, commended them for their resolution in not giving up the point, but added, "he was sure, if one would consent to go, the other would." To which proposal they both agreed in an instant, and accordingly went up very lovingly and close together. When they were gone, the lieutenant appeared the wrath of the land-lady, by satisfying her why they were both so unwilling to go alone.

They returned foon after, and acquainted their miftress, that the fick gentleman was so far from being dead, that he spoke as heartily as if he was well; and that he gave his service to the captain, and should be very glad of the

favour of feeing him before he marched.

The good lieutenant immediately complied with his defires, and fitting down by his bed-fide, acquainted him with the scene which had happened below, concluding with his intentions to make an example of the centinel.

Upon this, Jones related to him the whole truth, and earnestly begged him not to punish the poor soldier, "who I am consident," says he, "is as innocent of the ensign's escape, as he is of forging any lie, or of endea-

" vouring to impose on you."

The lieutenant hefitated a few moments, and then anfwered: "Why, as you have cleared the fellow of one part " of the charge, so it will be impossible to prove the other; " because he was not the only centinel. But I have a " good mind to punish the rascal for being a coward. * Yet who knows what effect the terror of fuch an ap-" prehension may have? and to fay the truth, he hath " always behaved well against an enemy. Come, it is a " good thing to fee any fign of religion in those fellows; " fo I promise you he shall be set at liberty when we " march. But hark, the general beats! My dear boy, " give me another buss. Don't discompose or hurry " yourself; but remember the christian doctrine of pa-" tience, and I warrant you will foon be able to do yourfelf justice, and take an honourable revenge on the " fellow who hath injured you." The lieutenant then departed, and Jones endeavoured to compose himself to teft.

HISTORY

are to the distribution of the forest to be larger

evinoer of vicentiless va

and the A TOOR, recommended by the

FOUNDLING.

BOOK VIII.

CONTAINING ABOVE TWO DAYS.

CHAP. I.

A wonderful long chapter concerning the manuellous; being much the longest of all our introductory chapters.

As we are now entering upon a book, in which the course of our history will oblige us to relate some matters of a more strange and surprising kind than any which have hitherto occurred, it may not be amis in the prolegomenous, or introductory chapter, to say something of that species of writing which is called the marvellous. To this we shall, as well for the sake of ourselves, as of others, endeavour to set some certain bounds; and indeed nothing can be more necessary, as critics * of different complexions are here apt to run into different extremes; for while some are, with M. Dacier, ready to allow, that the same thing which is impossible may be yet probable †, others have so little historic or poetic faith,

It was happy for M. Dacier that he was not an Irishman.

^{*} By this word here, and in most other parts of our work, we mean every reader in the world.

they believe nothing to be either possible or probable, the like to which has not occurred to their own observation.

First, then, I think it may very reasonably be required of every writer, that he keeps within the bounds of posfibility; and fill remembers that what it is not possible for man to perform, it is scarce possible for man to believe he did perform. This conviction, perhaps, gave birth to many stories of the ancient Heathen deities (for most of them are of poetical original.) The poet, being desirous to indulge a wanton and extravagant imagination, took refuge in that power, the extent of which his readers were no judges, or rather which they imagined to be infinite, and confequently they could not be shocked at any prodigies related of it. This has been strongly urged in defence of Homer's miracles; and it is, perhaps, a defence; not, as Mr Pope would have it, because Ulysses told a fet of foolish lies to the Phæacians, who were a very dull nation; but because the poet himself wrote to heathens, to whom poetical fables were articles of faith. For my own part, I must confess, so compassionate is my temper, I wish Polypheme had confined himself to his milk diet, and preserved his eye; nor could Ulysses be much more concerned than myfelf, when his companions were turned into fwine by Circe, who shewed, I think, afterwards, too much regard for man's flesh, to be suppoled capable of converting it into bacon. I wish likewise, with all my heart, that Homer could have known the rule prescribed by Horace, to introduce supernatural agents as feldom as possible. We should not then have seen his gods coming on trivial errands, and often behaving themselves fo as not only to forfeit all title to respect, but to become the object of fcorn and derifion. A conduct which must have shocked the credulity of a pious and fagacious heathen; and which never could have been defended, unless by agreeing with a supposition to which I have been fometimes almost inclined, that this glorious poet, as he certainly was, had an intent to burlefque the superstitious faith of his own age and country.

But I have rested too long on a doctrine which can be of no use to a christian writer; for as he cannot introduce into his works any of that heavenly host which make

dinary

a part of his creed; fo is it horrid puerility to fearch the heathen theology for any of those deities who have been long since dethroned from their immortality. Lord Shaftesbury observes, that nothing is more cold than the invocation of a muse by a modern; he might have added, that nothing can be more absurd. A modern may with much more elegance invoke a ballad, as some have thought Homer did, or a mug of ale with the author of Hudibras; which latter may perhaps have inspired much more poetry as well as prose, than all the liquors of Hippocrene or Helicon.

The only fupernatural agents which can in any manner be allowed to us moderns, are ghosts; but of these I would advise an author to be extremely sparing. These are indeed like arsenic, and other dangerous drugs in physic, to be used with the utmost caution; nor would I advise the introduction of them at all in those works, or by those authors to which, or to whom a horse-laugh in the reader would be any great prejudice or mortification.

As for elves and fairies, and other fuch mummery, I purposely omit the mention of them, as I would be very unwilling to confine within any bounds those surprising imaginations, for whose vast capacity the limits of human nature are too narrow, whose works are to be considered as a new creation, and who have consequently just right to do what they will with their own.

Man therefore is the highest subject, (unless on very extraordinary occasions indeed,) which presents itself to the pen of our historian, or of our poet; and, in relating his actions, great care is to be taken, that we do not exceed

the capacity of the agent we describe.

Vol. II.

Nor is possibility alone sufficient to justify us; we must keep likewise within the rule of probability. It is, I think, the opinion of Aristotle, or, if not, it is the opinion of some wise man, whose authority will be as weighty when it is as old, "That it is no excuse for a poet who relates "what is incredible, that the thing related is really matter of fact." This may perhaps be allowed true with regard to poetry, but it may be thought impracticable to extend it to the historian; for he is obliged to record matters as he finds them, though they may be of so extraor-

dinary a nature, as will require no small degree of historical faith to swallow them. Such was the successless armament of Xerxes, described by Herodotus, or the successful expedition of Alexander, related by Arrian. Such of later years was the victory of Agincourt, obtained by Henry the Fifth, or that of Narva, won by Charles the Twelfth of Sweden: all which instances, the more we restect on

them, appear still the more astonishing.

Such facts, however, as they occur in the thread of the ftory, nay, indeed, as they constitute the effential parts of it, the historian is not only justifiable in recording as they really happened, but indeed would be unpardonable, should he omit or alter them. But there are other facts not of so much consequence, nor so necessary, which, though ever so well attested, may nevertheless be facrificed to oblivion in complaisance to the scepticism of a reader. Such is that memorable story of the ghost of George Villiers, which might with more propriety have been made a present of to Dr Drelincourt, to have kept the ghost of Mrs Veale company, at the head of his discourse upon death, than have been introduced into so solemn a work as the history of the rebellion.

To fay the truth, if the historian could confine himself to what really happened, and utterly reject any circumstance, which, though ever so well attested, he must be well assured is false, he will sometimes fall into the marvellous, but never into the incredible. He will often raife the wonder and furprife of his reader, but never that incredulous hatred mentioned by Horace. It is by falling into fiction, therefore, that we generally offend against this rule, of deferting probability, which the historian feldom if ever quits, till he forfakes his character, and commences a writer of romance. In this, however, those historians who relate public transactions have the advantage of us who confine ourselves to scenes of private life. The credit of the former is by common notoriety supported for a long time; and public records, with the concurrent testimony of many authors, bear evidence to their truth in future ages. Thus a Trajan and an Antoninus, a Nero and a Caligula, have all met with the belief of posterity; and no one doubts but that men so very good, good, and fo very bad, were once the masters of man-kind.

But we who deal in private character, who fearch into the most retired recesses, and draw forth examples of virtue and vice, from holes and corners of the world, are in a more dangerous situation. As we have no public notoriety, no concurrent testimony, no records to support and corroborate what we deliver, it becomes us to keep within the limits not only of possibility, but of probability too; and this more especially in painting what is greatly good and amiable. Knavery and folly, though ever so exorbitant, will more easily meet with assent; for ill-nature adds great support and strength to faith.

Thus we may perhaps, with little danger, relate the history of Fisher; who having long owed his bread to the generofity of Mr Derby and having one morning received considerable bounty from his hands, yet in order to posfels himself of what remained in his friend's scrutore, concealed himself in a public office of the temple, through which there was a paffage into Mr Derby's chambers. Here he overheard Mr Derby for many hours folacing himself at an entertainment which he that evening gave his friends, and to which Fisher had been invited. During all this time, no tender, no grateful reflections arose to restrain his purpose: but when the poor gentleman had let his company out through the office, Fisher came fuddenly from his lurking place, and walking foftly behind his friend into his chamber, discharged a pistol-ball into his head. This may be believed, when the bones of Fisher are as rotten as his heart. Nay, perhaps, it will be credited that the villain went two days afterwards with fome young ladies to the play of Hamlet; and with an unaltered countenance heard one of the ladies, who little fuspected how near she was to the person, cry out, " Good God! if the man that murdered Mr Derby was " now present!" manifesting in this a more seared and callous conscience than even Nero himself; of whom we are told by Suetonius, "that the consciousness of his guilt, " after the death of his mother, became immediately in-" tolerable, and fo continued; nor could all the congra-K 2

Ch

hit

air

no wl

bu

te

in

fe

n

h

tl

p

a

1

" tulations of the foldiers, of the fenate, and the people,

" allay the horrors of his conscience."

But now, on the other hand, should I tell my reader, that I had known a man whose penetrating genius had enabled him to raife a large fortune in a way where no beginning was chalked out to him: that he had done this with the most perfect preservation of his integrity, and not only without the least injustice or injury to any one individual person, but with the highest advantage to trade, and a vast increase of the public revenue: that he had expended one part of the income of this fortune in discovering a taste superior to most, by works where the highest dignity was united with the purest simplicity; and another part in displaying a degree of goodness superior to all men, by acts of charity to objects whose only recommendations were their merits, or their wants: that he was most industrious in fearching after merit in distress, most eager to relieve it, and then as careful, (perhaps too careful) to conceal what he had done: that his house, his furniture, his gardens, his table, his private hospitality, and his public beneficence, all denoted the mind from which they flowed, and were all intrinfically rich and noble, without tinfel, or external oftentation; that he filled every relation in life with the most adequate virtue: that he was most piously religious to his Creator, most zealously loyal to his fovereign; a most tender husband to his wife, a kind relation, a munificent patron, a warm and firm friend, a knowing and a cheerful companion, indulgent to his fervants, hospitable to his neighbours, charitable to the poor, and benevolent to all mankind. Should I add to these the epithets of wife, brave, elegant, and indeed every other amiable epithet in our language, I might furely fay,

-Quis credit? nemo Hercule; nemo Vel duo, vel nemo.

And yet I know a man who is all I have here described. But a fingle instance (and I really know not such another) is not sufficient to justify us, while we are writing to thousands who never heard of the person, nor of any thing like him. Such Rara Aves should be remitted to the epitaph.

epitaph writer, or to fome poet, who may condescend to hitch him in a distich, or to slide him into rhime with an air of carelessness and neglect, without giving any offence to the reader.

In the last place, the actions should be such as may not only be within the compass of human agency, and which human agents may probably be supposed to do; but they should be likely for the very actors and characters themselves to have performed: for what may be only wonderful and surprising in one man, may become improbable, or indeed impossible, when related of another.

This last requisite is what the dramatic critics call confervation of character; and it requires a very extraordinary degree of judgment, and a most exact knowledge of human nature.

It is admirably remarked by a most excellent writer; that zeal can no more hurry a man to act in direct opposition to itself, than a rapid stream can carry a boat against its own current. I will venture to say, that for a man to act in direct contradiction to the dictates of his nature, is, if not impossible, as improbable and as miraculous as any thing which can well be conceived. Should the best parts of the story of M. Antoninus be ascribed to Nero, or should the worst incidents of Nero's life be imputed to Antoninus, what would be more shocking to belief than either instance; whereas both these being related of their proper agent, constitute the truly marvellous.

Our modern authors of comedy have fallen almost universally into the error here hinted at: their heroes, generally, are notorious rogues, and their heroines abandoned jades, during the first four acts; but in the fifth, the former become very worthy gentlemen, and the latter, women of virtue and discretion; nor is the writer often so kind as to give himself the least trouble, to reconcile or account for this monstrous change and incongruity. There is, indeed, no other reason to be assigned for it, than because the play is drawing to a conclusion; as if it was no less natural in a rogue to repent in the last act of a play, than in the last of his life; which we perceive to be generally the case at Tyburn, a place which might, indeed, close

the scene of some comedies with much propriety, as the heroes in these are most commonly eminent for those very talents, which not only bring men to the gallows, but enable them to make an heroic figure when they are there.

Within these few restrictions, I think, every writer may be permitted to deal as much in the wonderful as he pleases; nay, if he thus keeps within the rules of credibility, the more he can surprise the reader, the more he will engage his attention, and the more he will charm him. As a genius of the highest rank observes in his 5th chapter of the Bathos, "The great art of all poetry is to mix truth with siction; in order to join the credible

" with the furprifing."

For though every good author will confine himself within the bounds of probability, it is by no means neceffary that his character, or his incidents, should be trite, common, or vulgar; fuch as happen in every street, or in every house, or which may be met with in the home articles of a news-paper: nor must he be inhibited from shewing many persons and things, which may possibly have never fallen within the knowledge of great part of his readers. If the writer strictly obferves the rules above mentioned, he hath discharged his part; and is then intitled to some faith from his reader, who is indeed guilty of critical infidelity if he difbelieves him. For want of a portion of fuch faith, I remember the character of a young lady of quality, which was condemned on the stage for being unnatural, by the unanimous voice of a very large affembly of clerks and apprentices; though it had the previous fuffrages of many ladies of the first rank; one of whom, very eminent for her understanding, declared it was the picture of half the young people of her acquaintance.

in

le

hi

te

W

li

.66

44

6

e

y

e

e

h

S

e

f

.

e

e

1

V

f

d

S

e

9

y __

f

1

CHAP. II.

In which the Landlady pays a vifit to Mr Jones.

WHEN Jones had taken leave of his friend the lieutenant, he endeavoured to close his eyes, but all in vain; his spirits were too lively and wakeful to be lulled to sleep. So having amused or rather tormented himself with the thoughts of Sophia, till it was open daylight, he called for some tea, upon which occasion my

landlady herfelf vouchfafed to pay him a vifit.

This was indeed the first time she had seen him, or at least had taken any notice of him; but as the lieutenant had assured her that he was certainly some young gentleman of fashion, she now determined to shew him all the respect in her power; for, to speak truly, this was one of those houses where gentlemen, to use the language of advertisements, meet with civil treatment for

their money.

She had no fooner begun to make his tea, than she likewise began to discourse, " La! Sir," said she, " I " think it is great pity that fuch a pretty young gentleman " should undervalue himself so, as to go about with those " foldier-fellows. They call themselves gentlemen, I " warrant you; but, as my first husband used to say, " they should remember it is we that pay them: and to " be fure it is very hard upon us to be obliged to pay " them, and to keep 'em too, as we publicans are. " had twenty of 'um last night besides officers: nay, for " matter o'that, I had rather have the foldiers than the " officers: for nothing is ever good enough for those " sparks; and I am sure, if you was to see the bills, la, "Sir, it is nothing. I have had less trouble, I war-" rant you, with a good 'fquire's family, where we take " forty or fifty thillings of a night, besides horses: and " yet I warrants me, there is arrow a one of these of-" ficer-fellows, but looks upon himfelf to be as good as " arrow a 'fquire of 500l. a-year. To be fure it doth " me good to hear their men run about after 'um, crying " Your honour, and your honour. Marry come up with " fuch honour, and an ordinary at a shilling a head. " Then

"Then there's fuch fwearing among 'um, to be fure, it " frightens me out of my wits; I thinks nothing can " ever profper with fuch wicked people: and here one of " them has used you in so barbarous a manner. I " thought indeed how well the rest would secure him: "they all hang together; for if you had been in danger " of death, which I am glad to fee you are not, it would " have been all as one to fuch wicked people. They " would have let the murderer go. Laud have mercy " upon him, I would not have fuch a fin to answer for, " for the whole world. But, though you are likely, with " the bleffing, to recover, there is law for him yet; and " if you will employ Lawyer Small, I dareft be fworn he'll " make the fellow fly the country for him; though he'll per-" haps have fled the country before; for it is here to-day, and " gone to-morrow with fuch chaps. I hope, however, you will " learn more wit for the future, and return back to your " friends: I warrant youthey are all miserable for your loss; " and if they was but to know what had happened! " La, my feeming! I would not for the world they should. " Come, come, we know very well what all the matter " is; but, if one won't, another will; fo pretty a gen-" tleman need never want a lady. I am fure, if I was as " you, I would fee the finest she that ever wore a head " hanged, before I would go for a foldier for her .- Nay, " don't blush so, (for indeed he did to a violent degree): " why, you thought, Sir, I knew nothing of the matter, " I warrant you, about Madam Sophia." " How," fays Jones, flarting up, " do you know my Sophia?" " Do !! " ay, marry," cries the landlady, many's the time hath " fhe lain in this house." "With her aunt, I suppose," fays Jones.—" Why there it is now," cries the land-" Ay, ay, ay, I know the old lady very well. " And asweet young creature is Madam Sophia, that's "the truth on't." "A fweet creature!" cries Jones;" " O heavens!

" Angels are painted fair to look like her.

"There's in her all that we believe of heaven, Amazing brightness, purity, and truth,

" Eternal joy, and everlasting love.

" And could I ever have imagined that you had known " my Sophia!" " I wish," fays the landlady, you knew " half fo much of her. What would you have given to " have fat by her bed-fide? What a delicious neck she " hath! her lovely limbs have stretched themselves in " that very bed you now lie in." "Here!" cries Jones, " hath Sophia ever lain here?" " Ay, ay, here: there; " in that very bed," fays the landlady, " where I wish " you had her this moment; and she may wish so too, " for any thing I know to the contrary; for she hath " mentioned your name to me." " Ha!" cries Jones, " did she ever mention her poor Jones?-You flatter me " now; I can never believe fo much." " Why then," answered she, " as I hope to be faved, and may the " devil fetch me if I speak a syllable more than the " truth, I have heard her mention Mr Jones, but in a " civil and modest way, I confess; yet I could perceive " fhe thought a great deal more than fhe faid." " O " my dear woman," cries Jones, " her thoughts of me " I shall never be worthy of. O she is all gentleness, "kindness, goodness! why was fuch a rascal as I born, " ever to give her foft bosom a moment's uneasiness? " why am I curfed ?-I, who would undergo all the " plagues and miferies, which any dæmon ever invented " for mankind, to procure her any good; nay, torture " itself could not be misery to me, did I but know that he was happy." "Why, look you there now," says the landlady, " I told her you was a constant lover." " But pray, Madam, tell me when or where you knew " any thing of me; for I never was here before, nor do "I remember ever to have feen you." "Nor is it pof-"fible you should," answered she; "for you was a lit-" tle thing when I had you in my lap at the 'fquire's." " -How! the 'fquire's!" fays Jones; what, do youknow " that great and good man Mr Allworthy then?" Yes, " marry do I," fays she; " who in the country doth not?" " __ " The fame of his goodness indeed," answered Jones, "must have extended farther than this; but " Heaven only can know him, can know that benevolence " which it copied from itself, and sent upon earth as its " own pattern. Mankind are as ignorant of fuch divine " goodness, as they are unworthy of it; but none so un-" worthy Vol. II.

e, it can e of

III

m: ger uld

rcy for,

ind e'll er-

and vill our

fs;

ld. ter

as ad y,

): T, VS

ys I! th

l. 's

ing

for

ve fa

pl

tl

C

fi

"worthy of it as myself:—I, who was raised by him to fuch a height; taken in, as you must well know, a poor base born child, adopted by him, and treated as his own son, to dare by my sollies to disoblige him, to draw his vengeance upon me. Yes, I deserve it all; for I will never be so ungrateful as ever to think he hath done an act of unjustice by me. No, I deserve to be turned out of doors as I am. And now, Madam," says he, "I believe you will not blame me for turning foldier, especially with such a fortune as this in my pocket." At which words he shook a purse, which had but very little in it, and which still appeared to the land-

lady to have less.

My good landlady was (according to the vulgar phrase) struck all of a heap by this relation. She answered coldly, "That to be sure people were the best judges what "was most proper for their circumstances."——"But hark," says she, "I think I hear somebody call. Coming! Coming! the devil's in all our volk; no body hath any ears. I must go down stairs; if you want any more breakfast, the maid will come up.—Coming!"—At which words, without taking any leave, she flung out of the room: for the lower fort of people are very tenacious of respect: and though they are contented to give this gratis to persons of quality, yet they never confer it on those of their own order, without taking care to be well paid for their pains.

CHAP. III.

In which the Surgeon makes his fecond appearance.

BEFORE we proceed any farther, that the reader may not be mistaken in imagining the landlady knew more than she did, nor surprised that she knew so much, it may be necessary to inform him, that the lieutenant had acquainted her that the name of Sophia had been the occasion of the quarrel; and as for the rest of her knowledge, the sagacious reader will observe how she came by it in the preceding scene. Great curiosity was indeed mixed with her virtues; and she never willingly suffered any one to depart from her house, without inqui-

ring

ing as much as possible into their names, families, and fortunes.

She was no fooner gone than Jones, instead of animadverting on her behaviour, reflected that he was in the fame bed which he was informed had held his dear So-This occasioned a thousand fond and tender thoughts, which we would dwell longer upon, did we not consider that such kind of lovers will make a very inconfiderable part of our readers. In this fituation the furgeon found him, when he came to drefs his wound. The doctor, perceiving, upon examination, that his pulse was disordered, and hearing that he had not slept, declared that he was in great danger: for he apprehended a fever was coming on, which he would have prevented by bleeding, but Jones would not fubmit, declaring he would lofe no more blood; and, "doctor," fays he, if you will be fo " kind only to drefs my head, I have no doubt of being " well in a day or two."

"I wish," answered the surgeon, "I could assure

" your being well in a month or two. Well indeed!
" No, no, people are not fo foon well of fuch contusions;

" but, Sir, I am not at this time of day to be instructed in my operations by a patient, and I insist on making a

" revulsion before I dress you."

Jones perfifted obstinately in his refusal, and the doctor at last yielded, telling him at the same time, that he would not be answerable for the ill consequence, and hoped he would do him the justice to acknowledge that he had given him a contrary advice; which the patient promised he would.

The doctor retired into the kitchen, where, addressing himself to the landlady, he complained bitterly of the undutiful behaviour of his patient, who would not be blooded, though he was in a fever.

"It is an eating fever then," fays the landlady; "for he hath devoured two fwinging buttered toasts this

" morning for breakfast."

"Very likely," fays the doctor; "I have known people eat in a fever; and it is very eafily accounted for, because the acidity, occasioned by the febrile mat-

"ter, may stimulate the nerves of the diaphragm, and thereby occasion a craving, which will not be easily dis-

L 2 " tinguishable

66

46

46

J

61

" tinguishable from a natural appetite: but the aliment " will not be concreted, nor affimilated into chyle, and

" fo will corrode the vascular orifices, and thus will ag-

" gravate the febrific fymptoms. Indeed, I think the segentleman in a very dangerous way, and, if he is not

" blooded, I am afraid will die."

" Every man must die some time or other," answered the good woman; "it is no business of mine. I hope, " doctor, you would not have me hold him while you " bleed him. - But harkee, a word in your ear; I " would advise you, before you proceed too far, to take " care who is to be your paymaster."

" Paymaster!" faid the doctor, staring; " why, I've a

" gentleman under my hands, have I not?"

" I imagined fo as well as you," faid the landlady; " but, as my first husband used to fay, Every thing is " not what it looks to be. He is an arrant scrub, " I affure you. However, take no notice that I men-" tioned any thing to you of the matter; but I think

" people in business oft always to let one another know " fuch things."

" And have I suffered such a fellow as this," cries the doctor in a passion, " to instruct me? Shall I hear " my practice infulted by one who will not pay me? I " am glad I have made this discovery in time. I will " fee now whether he will be blooded or no." He then immediately went up stairs, and flinging open the door of the chamber with much violence, awaked poor Jones from a very found nap, into which he had fallen, and, what was still worse, from a delicious dream concerning Sophia.

"Will you be blooded or no?" cries the doctor in a rage. "I have told you my refolution already," anfwered Jones, "and I wish with all my heart you had " taken my answer, for you have awaked me out of the

" fweetest sleep which I ever had in my life." " Ay, ay," cries the doctor, " many a man hath dof-" ed away his life. Sleep is not always good, no more " than food; but remember I demand of you for the " last time, - Will you be blooded?" " I answer you for "the last time," faid Jones, "I will not." "Then I " wash my hands of you," cries the doctor, "and I deII.

nt

bi

g-

ot

d

uI

e

"fire you to pay me for the trouble I have had already. "Two journies at 5 s. each, two dreffings at 5 s. more, and half-a-crown for phlebotomy." "I hope," faid Jones, "you don't intend to leave me in this condition." Indeed but I shall," faid the other. "Then," faid Jones, "you have used me rascally, and I will not pay you a farthing." "Very well," cries the doctor, "the first loss is the best. What a pox did my landlady mean by sending for me to such vagabonds?" At which words he slung out of the room, and his patient, turning himself about, soon recovered his sleep, but his dream was unfortunately gone.

CHAP. IV.

In which is introduced one of the pleasantest barbers that was ever recorded in history, the barber of Bagdad, or he in Don Quinote, not excepted.

HE clock had now struck five, when Jones awaked from a nap of seven hours, so much refreshed, and in such perfect health and spirits, that he resolved to get up and dress himself: for which purpose he unlocked his portmanteau, and took out clean linen, and a suit of clothes; but first he slipt on a frock, and went down into the kitchen to be speak something that might pacify certain tumults he found rising within his stomach.

Meeting the landlady, he accosted her with great civility, and asked "what he could have for dinner." "For dinner! says she; "it is an odd time of day to think about dinner. There is nothing dress in the house, and the fire is almost out."——"Well, but," says he, I must have something to eat, and it is almost indifferent to me what; for, to tell you the truth, I was never more hungry in my life." "Then," says she, I believe there is a piece of cold buttock and carrot, which will sit you."—"Nothing better, answered Jones; "but I should be obliged to you if you would let it be fryed." To which the landlady consented, and said, smiling, "She was glad to see him so well recovered:" for the sweetness of our hero's temper was almost irresistible: besides, she was really no ill-humoured woman

66

66

66

6

woman at the bottom; but she loved money so much, that she hated every thing which had the semblance of poverty.

Jones now returned in order to drefs himself, while his dinner was preparing, and was, according to his orders,

attended by the barber.

This barber, who went by the name of Little Benjamin, was a fellow of great oddity and humour, which had frequently led him into small inconveniencies, such as slaps in the face, kicks in the breech, broken bones, &c.; for every one doth not understand a jest; and those who do, are often displeased with being themselves the subjects of it. This vice was however incurable in him; and though he had often smarted for it, yet, if ever he conceived a joke, he was certain to be delivered of it, without the least respect of persons, time, or place.

He had a great many other particularities in his character, which I shall not mention, as the reader will himself very easily perceive them, on his farther acquaintance with

this extraordinary person.

Jones being impatient to be drest, for a reason which may easily be imagined, thought the shaver was very tedious in preparing his fuds, and begged him to make hafte; to which the other answered, with much gravity, (for he never discomposed his muscles on any account,) " Pestina lenté is a proverb which I learnt long before I " ever touched a razor." " I find, friend, you are a " fcholar," replied Jones. " A poor one," faid the barber, " non omnia possumus omnes." " Again!" faid Jones; "I fancy you are good at capping verses." "Ex-" cuse me, Sir," said the barber, " non tanto me dignor " honore." And then proceeding to his operation, "Sir," faid he, "fince I have dealt in fuds, I could never difco-" ver more than two reasons for shaving, the one is to " get a beard, and the other to get rid of one. - I conjec-" ture, Sir, it may not be long fince you shaved from the " former of these motives. Upon my word you have " had good fuccefs; for one may fay of your beard, that " it is tondenti gravior." " I conjecture," fays Jones, " that thou art a very comical fellow." " You mistake " me widely, Sir," faid the barber, " I am too much ad-" dicted I.

f

e

h

n

"dicted to the study of philosophy, hinc illa lachryma, "Sir, that's my misfortune. Too much learning has "been my ruin." "Indeed," faid Jones, " I confess, " friend, you have more learning than generally belongs "to your trade; but I can't fee how it can have injured " you." "Alas, Sir," answered the shaver, " my father "difinherited me for it. He was a dancing-mafter; and " because I could read before I could dance, he took an " aversion to me, and left every farthing among his o-"ther children.-Will you please to have your temples " -- O la! I ask your pardon, I fancy there is hiatus in " manuscriptis. I heard you was going to the wars: but " I find it was a mistake." "Why do you conclude so?" fays Jones. "Sure, Sir," answered the barber, "you are " too' wife a man to carry a broken head thither; for " that would be carrying coals to Newcastle."

"Upon my word," cries Jones, "thou art a very odd " fellow, and I like thy humour extremely; I shall be " very glad if thou wilt come to me after dinner, and " drink a glass with me: I long to be better acquainted

" with thee."

"O dear Sir," faid the barber, "I can do you twen-"ty times as great a favour if you will accept of it." "What is that, my friend?" cries Jones. "Why, I " will drink a bottle with you, if you please; for I " dearly love good-nature; and as you have found me " out to be a comical fellow, fo I have no skill in phy-" fiognomy, if you are not one of the best-natured gen-"tlemen in the universe." Jones now walked down ftairs neatly dreft, and perhaps the fair Adonis was not a lovelier figure; and yet he had no charms for my landlady: for as that good woman did not at all refemble Venus in her person, so neither did she in her taste. Happy had it been for Nanny the chambermaid, if she had feen with the eyes of her mistress; for that poor girl fell to violently in love with Jones in five minutes, that her paffion cost her afterwards many a figh. This Nancy was extremely pretty, and altogether as coy; for she had refuled a drawer, and one or two young farmers in the neighbourhood, but the bright eyes of our hero thawed all her ice in a moment.

When Jones returned to the kitchen, his cloth was

not yet laid; nor indeed was there any occasion it should, his dinner remaining in statu quo, as did the fire which was to dress it. This disappointment might have put many a philosophical temper into a passion, but it had no such effect on Jones. He only gave the landlady a gentle rebuke, saying, "fince it was so difficult to get it heat—"ed, he would eat the beef cold." But now the good woman, whether moved by compassion, or by shame, or by whatever other motive, I cannot tell, first gave her fervants a round scold for disobeying the orders which she had never given, and then bidding the drawer lay a nap-kin in the Sun, she set about the matter in good earnest, and soon accomplished it.

This Sun, into which Jones was now conducted, was truly named, as *lucus a non lucendo*; for it was an apartment into which the fun had fcarce ever looked. It was indeed the worst room in the house; and happy was it for Jones that it was so. However, he was now too hungry to find any fault; but having once satisfied his appetite, he ordered the drawer to carry a bottle of wine into a better room, and expressed some resentment at having

been shewn into a dungeon.

The drawer having obeyed his commands, he was, after fome time, attended by the barber; who would not indeed have fuffered him to wait fo long for his company, had he not been liftening in the kitchen to the landlady, who was entertaining a circle that she had gathered round her with the history of poor Jones, part of which she had extracted from his own lips, and the other part was her own ingenious composition; "for fhe said he was a poor parish boy, taken into the house of 'Squire Allworthy, where he was bred up as an apprentice, and now turned out of doors for his misdeeds, particularly for making love to his young mistress, and probably for robbing the house: for how else should he come by the little money he hath; and this," says she, "is your fine gentleman forsooth."
A fervant of 'squire Allworthy!" says the barber,

what's his name?"—" Why he told me his name was Jones," fays she, " perhaps he goes by a wrong name. "Nay, and he told me too, that the fquire had main-

" tained him as his own fon, thof he had quarrelled with

II.

ld,

ch

a-

no

n-

od

or

er-

he

it,

as

t-

as it

e-

ig

s,

1-

e

1-

rt

le

r

e

,

e

d

S

"him now." "And if his name be Jones, he told you the truth," faid the barber; "for I have relations who, live in that country, nay, and fome people fay he is his fon." "Why doth he not go by the name of his father?" "I can't tell that," faid the barber, "many people's fons don't go by the name of their father." Nay," faid the landlady, "if I thought he was a gentleman's fon, thof he was a bye-blow, I should behave to him in another guess manner; for many of these bye-blows come to be great men, and, as my poor first husband used to say, Never affront any customer that's a gentleman."

CHAP. V.

A dialogue between Mr Jones and the Barber.

HIS conversation passed partly while Jones was at dinner in his dungeon, and partly while he was expecting the barber in the parlour. And, as foon as it was ended, Mr Benjamin, as we have faid, attended him, and was very kindly defired to fit down: Jones then filling out a glass of wine, drank his health by the appellation of doctiffime tonforum. "Ago tibi gratias, domine," faid the barber; and then looking very stedfastly at Jones, he faid with great gravity, and with a feeming furprife; as if he had recollected a face he had feen before, "Sir, may I " crave the favour to know if your name is not Jones?" To which the other answered, that it was. " Prob deam " atque hominum fidem," fays the barber, " how strangely "things come to pass! Mr Jones, I am your most obe-" dient fervant. I find you do not know me, which in-" deed is no wonder, fince you never faw me but once, and then you was very young. Pray, Sir, how doth " the good 'fquire Allworthy? how doth ille optimus omni-" um patronus?" "I find," faid Jones, ' you do indeed " know me; but I have not the like happiness of recol-" lecting you." -- " I do not wonder at that," cries Benjamin; "but I am furprifed I did not know you " fooner, for you are not in the least altered. And pray, " Sir, may I without offence inquire whither you are tra-" velling this way?" " Fill the glass Mr Barber," said VOL. II. lones,

Jones, " and ask no more questions." " Nav. Sir." answered Benjamin, " I would not be troublesome; and " I hope you don't think me to be a man of an imperti-" nent curiofity, for that is a vice which nobody can " lay to my charge; but I ask pardon, for when a gen-" tleman of your figure travels without his fervants, we " may suppose him to be, as we say, in casu incognito, and " perhaps I ought not to have mentioned your name." " I own," fays Jones, " I did not expect to have been fo " well known in this country as I find I am, yet, for parti-" cular reasons, Ishall be obliged to you, if you will not men-" tion my name to any person, till I am gone from hence." " Pauca verba," answered the barber; " and I wish no o-" ther here knew you but myself: for some people have " tongues; but I promife you I can keep a fecret. My " enemies will allow me that virtue." " And yet that " is not the characteristic of your profession, Mr Bar-" ber," answered Jones. " Alas! Sir," replied Benjamin, " Non si male nunc et olim sic erit. I was not born " nor bred a barber, I affure you. I have fpent most of " my time among gentlemen, and though I fay it, I un-" derstand something of gentility: and, if you had " thought me as worthy of your confidence as you have " fome other people, I would have flewn you I could " have kept a fecret better. I should not have degra-" ded your name in a public kitchen; for indeed, Sir, " fome people have not used you well; for, besides ma-" king a public proclamation of what you told them of a " quarrel between yourfelf and 'fquire Allworthy, they " added lies of their own, things which I knew to be " lies." "You furprife me greatly," cries Jones. "U-" pon my word, Sir," answered Benjamin, " I tell the " truth, and I need not tell you my landlady was the " person. I am sure it moved me to hear the story, and " I hope it is all false; for I have a great respect for you; " I do affure you I have, and have had, ever fince the " good-nature you shewed to Black George, which was " talked of all over the country, and I received more than " one letter about it. Indeed, it made you beloved by " every body. You will pardon me, therefore; for it " was real concern at what I heard made me ask so ma-" ny questions; for I have no impertinent curiofity " about

H.

nd

ti-

1-

re

d

ò

-

" about me; for I love good-nature, and thence becam:

" amoris abundantia erga te."

Every profession of friendship easily gains credit with the miferable; it is no wonder, therefore, if Jones, who, besides his being miserable, was extremely open hearted, very readily believed all the professions of Benjamin, and received him into his bosom. The scraps of Latin, fome of which Benjamin applied properly enough, tho' it did not favour of profound literature, feemed yet to indicate fomething fuperior to a common barber, and fo indeed did his whole behaviour. Jones therefore believed the truth of what he had faid as to his original and education, and at length, after much entreaty, he faid, "Since you have heard, my friend, fo much of my af-" fairs, and feem fo defirous to know the truth, if you " will have patience to hear it, I will inform you of the " whole." " Patience," cries Benjamin: that I will, if " the chapter was ever fo long, and I am very much o-" bliged to you for the honour you do me."

Jones now began, and related the whole history, forgetting only a circumstance or two, namely, every thing which passed on that day on which he had fought with Thwackum, and ended with his resolution to go to sea, till the rebellion in the north had made him change his purpose, and had brought him to the place where he then

was.

Little Benjamin, who had been all attention, never ence interrupted the narrative; but, when it was ended, he could not help observing, that there must be surely something more invented by his enemies, and told Mr Allworthy against him, or so good a man would never have dismissed one he had loved so tenderly in such a manner: to which Jones answered, "He doubted not but such villainous arts had been made use of to def"troy him."

And it was surely scarce possible for anyone to have avoided making the same remark with the barber, who had not indeed heard from Jones one single circumstance upon which he was condemned: for his actions were not now placed in those injurious lights in which they had been misrepresented to Allworthy: nor could he mention those many false accusations, which had been from to time pre-

M 2

ferred against him to Allworthy; for with none of these he was acquainted. He had likewise, as we have observed, omitted many material facts in his present relation. Upon the whole, indeed every thing now appeared in such favourable colours to Jones, that malice itself would have found it no easy matter to fix any blame u-

pon him.

Not that Jones desired to conceal or disguise the truth: nay, he would have been more unwilling to have suffered any censure to fall on Mr Allworthy for punishing him, than on his own actions for deserving it; but in reality it so happened, and so it always will happen; for, let a man be ever so honest, the account of his own conduct will, in spite of himself, be so very savourable, that his vices will come purished through his lips, and like soul liquors well strained, will leave all their soulness behind: for though the facts themselves may appear, yet so different will be the motives, circumstances, and consequences, when a man tells his own story, and when his enemy tells it, that we can scarce recognize the facts to be one and the same thing.

Though the barber had drunk down this story with greedy ears, he was not yet satisfied. There was a circumstance behind, which his curiosity, cold as it was, most eagerly longed for. Jones had mentioned the fact of his amour, and of his being the rival of Blissl, but had cautiously concealed the name of the young lady. The barber therefore, after some hesitation, and many hum's and ha's, at last begged leave to crave the name of the lady, who appeared to be the principal cause of all this mischief. Jones paused a moment, and then said, "Since I have trusted you with so much, and since, I am afraid, her name is become too public already on

" this occasion, I will not conceal it from you. Her

" name is Sophia Western."

"Prob Deum atque hominum fidem! 'Squire Western hath a daughter grown a woman!" "Ay, and such a "woman," cries Jones, "that the world cannot match. No eye ever saw any thing so beautiful; but that is her least excellence. Such sense! Such goodness! O I could praise her for ever, and yet should omit half her virtues."

66 Mp

d

£

Mr Western a daughter grown up!" cries the barber, I remember the father a boy: well, Tempus edax rerum."

The wine being now at an end, the barber pressed very eagerly to be his bottle; but Jones absolutely refused, saying, "He had already drank more than he ought, and that he now chose to retire to his room, where he wished he could procure himself a book." "A book!" cries Benjamin; "what book would you have? Lating or English? I have some curious books in both languages such as Erasmi Colloquia, Ovid de Tristibus, Gradus ad Parnassum; and in English I have several of the best books, though some of them are a little torn; but I have a great part of Stowe's Chronicle, the sixth volume of Pope's Homer, the third volume of the Spectator, the second volume of Echard's Roman History, the Craftsman, Robinson Crusoe, Thomas a Kempis, and two volumes of Tom Brown's works."

"Those last," cries Jones, "are books I never faw; "fo if you please to lend me one of those volumes." The barber affured him he would be highly entertained: for he looked upon the author to have been one of the greatest with that ever the nation produced. He then stepped to his house, which was hard by, and immediately returned; after which the barber having received very strict injunctions of secrecy from Jones, and having sworn inviolably to maintain it, they separated: the barber went home, and Jones retired to his

chamber.

CHAP. VI,

In which more of the talents of Mr Benjamin will appear, as well as who this extraordinary person was.

In the morning Jones grew a little uneasy at the defertion of his surgeon, as he apprehended some inconvenience, or even danger, might attend the not dressing his wound: he inquired therefore of the drawer what other surgeons were to be met with in that neighbourhood? The drawer told him there was one not far off; but he had known him often resuse to be concerned after another had been sent for before him; "But, Sir," says

he, " if you will take my advice, there is not a man in the kingdom can do your business better than the bar- ber who was with you last night. We look upon him to be one of the ablest men at a cut in all this neighbourhood; for though he hath not been here above

"three months, he hath done several great cures."

The drawer was presently dispatched for Little Benjamin, who being acquainted in what capacity he was wanted, prepared himself accordingly, and attended, but with so different an air and aspect from that which he wore when his bason was under his arm, that he could scarce

be known to be the fame perfon.

"So, tonsor," says Jones, "I find you have more trades than one. How came you not to inform me of this last night?" "A furgeon," answered Benjamin with great gravity, "is a profession, not a trade. The reason why I did not acquaint you last night that I professed this art was, that I then concluded you was under the hands of another gentleman, and I never love to interfere with my brethren in their business. Brs omnibus communis. But now, Sir, if you please, I will inspect your head, and when I see into your skull I will

" give my opinion of your case."

Jones had no great faith in this new professor; however, he suffered him to open the bandage, and to look at his wound, which, as soon as he had done, Benjamin began to groan and shake his head violently: upon which Jones, in a peevish manner, bid him not play the sool, but tell him in what condition he found him. "Shall "I answer you as a surgeon, or a friend?" faid Benjamin." "As a friend, and seriously," said Jones, "Why then, upon my soul," cries Benjamin, "it would require a great deal of art to keep you from being well after a very sew dressings; and, if you will suffer me to apply some salve of mine, I will answer for the success." Jones gave his consent, and the plaister was applied accordingly.

"There, Sir," cries Benjamin, "now I will, if you please, resume my former self; but a man is obliged to keep up some dignity in his countenance whilst he is performing these operations, or the world will not submit to be handled by him. You can't imagine,

" SiF,

in

r.

m

3-

ve

t-

h e

e

C f

1

"Sir, of how much consequence a grave aspect is to a " grave character. A barber may make you laugh, but

" a furgeon ought rather to make you cry."

" Mr Barber, or Mr Surgeon, or Mr Barber-furgeon," faid Jones, "O dear Sir," answered Benjamin, interrupting him, " Infandum, regina, jubes renovare dolorem. "You recal to my mind that cruel separation of the united " fraternities, fo much to the prejudice of both bodies, as " all separations must be, according to the old adage, " Vis unita fortior; which to be fure there are not want-" ing some of one or of the other fraternity who are able " to construe. What a blow was this to me, who unite "both in my own person."—" Well, by whatever name " you please to be called," continued Jones, " you cer-" tainly are one of the oddest, most comical fellows I " ever met with, and must have something very surprising " in your story, which you must confess I have a right to "hear." "I do confess it," answered Benjamin, "and " will very readily acquaint you with it, when you have " fufficient leisure; for I promise you it will require a " good deal of time." Jones told him, he could never be more at leifure than at prefent. "Well then," faid Benjamin, "I will obey you: but first I will fasten the door, " that none may interrupt us." He did fo, and then advancing with a folemn air to Jones, faid: "I must " begin by telling you, Sir, that you yourfelf have been " the greatest enemy I ever had." Jones was a little ftartled at this fudden declaration. " I your enemy, Sir!" fays he with much amazement, and fome sternness in his " Nay be not angry," faid Benjamin, "for I pro-" mife you I am not. You are perfectly innocent of hav-"ing intended me any wrong; for you was then an in-" fant: but I shall, I believe, unriddle all this the moment " I mention my name. Did you never hear, Sir, of one " Partridge, who had the honour of being reputed your " father, and the misfortune of being ruined by that " honour?" " I have indeed heard of that Partridge," fays Jones, " and have always believed myself to be his " fon." "Well, Sir," answered Benjamin, "I am that " Partridge: but I here absolve you from all filial duty; " for I do assure you, you are no son of mine." "How!" replied Jones: " and is it possible that a false suspicion

fould have drawn all the ill confequences upon you with which I am too well acquainted?" " It is poffi-" ble," cries Benjamin, " for it is fo; but, though it is " natural enough for men to hate even the innocent " causes of their sufferings, yet I am of a different tem-" per. I have loved you ever fince I heard of your be-" haviour to Black George, as I told you; and I am convinced, from this extraordinary meeting, that you " are born to make me amends for all I have fuffered " on that account. Besides, I dreamt the night before I " faw you, that I stumbled over a stool without hurting " myfelf, which plainly shewed me something good was " towards ine; and last night I dreamt again, that I rode " behind you on a milk-white mare, which is a very ex-" cellent dream, and betokens much good fortune, which " I am refolved to purfue, unless you have the cruelty to deny me."

"I should be very glad, Mr Partridge," answered Jones, " to have it in my power to make you amends for "your sufferings on my account, though at present I see "no likelihood of it: however, I assure you I will deny

" you nothing which is in my power to grant."

"It is in your power fure enough," replied Benjamin;

for I defire nothing more than leave to attend you in

this expedition. Nay, I have so entirely fet my heart

upon it, that, if you should refuse me, you will kill

" both a barber and a furgeon in one breath."

Jones answered smiling, "That he would be very for"ry to be the occasion of so much mischief to the public."
He then advanced many prudential reasons in order to
dissuade Benjamin (whom we shall hereafter call Partridge)
from his purpose; but all were in vain. Partridge relied
strongly on his dream of the milk-white mare. "Besides,
"Sir," says he, "I promise you I have as good an incli"nation to the cause as any man can possibly have; and
"go I will, whether you admit me to go in your company
"or not."

Partridge could be with him, and who had not confulted his own inclination but the good of the other in defiring him to stay behind, when he found his friend so resolute, at last gave his consent; but then recollecting himself,

IIT.

you

ffi-

t is

ent

m-

be-

m

oui

ed

I

ig

as

le

(-

h

Ó

r

he faid, "Perhaps, Mr. Partridge, you think I shall be able "to support you; but I really am not;" and then, taking out his purse, he told out nine guineas, which he declared were his whole fortune.

Partridge answered, "That his dependence was on"ly on his future favour; for he was thoroughly con"vinced he would shortly have enough in his power.
"At present, Sir," said he, "I believe I am rather the
"richer man of the two; but all I have is at your ser"vice, and at your disposal. I insist upon your taking the
"whole, and I beg only to attend you in the quality of your
fervant, Nil desperandum est Teucro duce et auspice Teu"cro;" but to this generous proposal concerning the mo"ney, Jones would by no means submit.

It was resolved to set out the next morning, when a difficulty arose concerning the baggage; for the portmanteau of Mr Jones was too large to be carried without

a horfe.

"If I may prefume to give my advice," faid Partridge,
"this portmanteau, with every thing in it, except a few
fhirts, should be left behind. Those I shall be easily
able to carry for you, and the rest of your clothes will
remain very safely locked up in my house."

This method was no fooner proposed than agreed to, and then the barber departed, in order to prepare every

thing for his intended expedition.

CHAP. VII.

Gontaining better reasons than any which have yet appeared for the conduct of Partridge, an apology for the weakness of Jones, and some farther anecdotes concerning my Landlady.

HOUGH Partridge was one of the most superstitious of men, he would hardly perhaps have defired to accompany Jones in his expedition merely from the omens of the joint-stool, and white mare, if his prospect had been no better than to have shared the plunder gained in the field of battle. In fact, when Partridge came to ruminate on the relation he had heard from Jones, he could not reconcile to himself, that Mr Allwor-Vol. Hi

thy should turn his fon (for fo he most firmly believed him to be) out of doors, for any reason he had heard asfigned. He concluded therefore, that the whole was a fiction, and that Jones, of whom he had often from his correspondents heard the wildest character, had in reality run away from his father. It came into his head therefore, that, if he could prevail with the young gentleman to return back to his father, he should by that means render a service to Allworthy, which would obliterate all his former anger: nay, indeed, he conceived that very anger was counterfeited, and that Allworthy had facrificed him to his own reputation: and this fuspicion indeed he well accounted for from the tender behaviour of that excellent man to the foundling child; from his great feverity to Partridge, who, knowing himfelf to be innocent, could not conceive that any other should think him guilty: laftly, from the allowance which he had privately received long after the annuity had been publicly taken from him, and which he looked upon as a kind of fmart-money, or rather by way of atonement for injuffice; for it is very uncommon, I believe, for men to ascribe the benefactions they receive to pure charity, when they can possibly impute them to any other motive. If he could by any means, therefore, perfuade the young gentleman to return home, he doubted not but he should again be received into the favour of Allworthy, and well rewarded for his pains, nay, and should again be restored to his native country; a restoration which Ulysses himself never wished more heartily than poor Partridge.

As for Jones, he was well fatisfied with the truth of what the other had afferted, and believed that Partridge had no other inducements but love to him, and zeal for the cause; a blameable want of caution and dissidence in the veracity of others, in which he was highly worthy of censure. To say the truth, there are but two ways by which men become possessed of this excellent quality. The one is from long experience, and the other is from nature; which last, I presume, is often meant by genius, or great natural parts; and it is infinitely the better of the two, not only as we are massers of it much earlier in life, but as it is much more infallible and conclusive: for a man, who hath been

Ĭ,

1-

imposed upon by ever so many, may still hope to find others more honest; whereas he, who receives certain necessary admonitions from within, that this is impossible, must have very little understanding indeed, if he ever renders himself liable to be once deceived. As Jones had not this gift from nature, he was too young to have gained it by experience; for at the dissident wisdom, which is to be acquired this way, we feldom arrive till very late in life, which is perhaps the reason why some old men are apt to despite the understandings of all those who are a lit-

tle vounger than themselves.

Jones spent most part of the day in company of a new acquaintance. This was no other than the landlord of the house, or rather the husband of the landlady. He had but lately made his descent down stairs, after a long fit of the gout, in which diftemper he was generally confined to his room during one half of the year; and during the rest he walked about the house, smoked his pipe, and drank his bottle with his friends, without concerning himself in the least with any kind of business. He had been bred, as they call it, a gentleman, that is, bred up to do nothing, and had fpent a very small fortune, which he inherited from an industrious farmer his uncle, in hunting, horse-racing, and cock-fighting, and had been married by my landlady for certain purposes, which he had long fince defifted from answering: for which she hated him heartily. But as he was a furly kind of fellow, fo she contented herfelf with frequently upbraiding him by difadvantageous comparisons with her first husband, whose praise she had eternally in her mouth; and as she was for the most part mistress of the profit, so she was satisfied to take upon herfelf the care and government of the family, and after a long fuccefsless struggle, to suffer her husband to be master of himself.

In the evening, when Jones retired to his room, a small dispute arose between this fond couple concerning him. "What," says the wife, "you have been appling with the gentleman, I see. "Yes," answered the husband, we have cracked a bottle together, and a very gentleman-like man he is, and hath a very pretty notion of horse-flesh. Indeed he is young, and hath not seen much of the world: for I believe he hath been at very N 2 "few

T

" few horse-races;" " O ho! he is one of your order, is he?" replies the landlady; "he must be a gentleman to be fure, if he is a horfe-racer. The devil fetch " fuch gentry; I am fure I wish I had never feen any of them. I have reason to love horse-racers truly." "That you have," fays the hufband; " for I was one, " you know." " Yes," answered she, " you are a pure " one indeed. As my first husband used to fay, I may put all the good I have ever got by you in my eyes, and fee never the worse." "D-n your first husband," cries he. " Don't d-n a better man than yourfelf," answered the wife; " if he had been alive you durst not have done it."——" Then you think," fays he, " I " have not fo much courage as yourfelf; for you have "d-n'd him often in my hearing."-" If I did," " fays she, I have repented of it, many's the good time " and oft, and if he was fo good to forgive me a word " fpoken in hafte, or fo, it doth not become fuch a one " as you to twitter me. He was a good hufband to me, " he was; and if ever I did make use of an ill word or " fo in a paffion, I never called him rafcal; I should " have told a lie, if I had called him rafcal." Much more she said, but not in his hearing: for having lighted his pipe, he staggered off as fast as he could. We shall therefore transcribe no more of her speech, as it approached still nearer and nearer to a subject too indelicate to find any place in this hiftory.

Early in the morning Partridge appeared at the bedfide of Jones, ready equipped for the journey, with his knapfack at his back. This was his own workmanship; for befides his other trades, he was no indifferent tailor. He had already put up his whole stock of linen in it, confisting of four shirts, to which he now added eight for Mr Jones; and then packing up the portmanteau, he was departing with it towards his own house, but was stopt in his way by the landlady, who refused to suffer any removals till after the payment of the

reckoning.

The landlady was, as we have faid, absolute governess in these regions; it was therefore necessary to comply with her rules; so the bill was presently writ out, which amounted to a much larger sum than might have been expect-

e

Y

ed, from the entertainment which Jones had met with. But here we are obliged to disclose some maxims which publicans hold to be the grand mysteries of their trade. The first is, if they have any thing good in their house (which indeed very seldom happens) to produce it only to persons who travel with great equipages. 2dly, To charge the same for the very worst provisions, as if they were the best. And, lastly, if any of their guests call but for little, to make them pay a double price for every thing they have, so that the amount by the head may be much the same.

The bill being made and discharged, Jones set forward with Partridge carrying his knapsack; nor did the land-lady condescend to wish him a good journey: for this was, it seems, an inn frequented by people of fashion; and I know not whence it is, but all those who get their livelihood by people of sashion, contract as much insolence to the rest of mankind as if they really belonged to

that rank themselves.

CHAP. VIII.

Jones arrives at Gloucester, and goes to the Bell; the character of that house, and of a Petty-Fogger, whom he there meets with.

R Jones, and Partridge, or little Benjamin, (which epithet Little was perhaps given him ironically, he being in reality near fix feet high) having left their last quarters in the manner before described, travelled on to Gloucester, without meeting any adventure worth re-

lating.

Being arrived here, they chose for their house of entertainment the sign of the Bell, an excellent house indeed, and which I do most seriously recommend to every reader who shall visit this ancient city. The master of it is brother to the great preacher Whitesield; but is absolutely untainted with the pernicious principles of methodism, or of any other heretical sect. He is indeed a very honest plain man, and, in my opinion, not likely to create any disturbance either in church or state. His wise hath, I believe, had much pretension to beauty, and still is avery sine woman.

C

re

A

ki

go

be

W

of

bu

fo

m

na

fo

Her person and deportment might have made a shining figure in the politest assemblies; but though she must be conscious of this, and many other perfections. the feems perfectly contented with, and refigned to that state of life to which she is called; and this refignation is entirely owing to the prudence and wisdom of her temper; for the is at prefent as free from any methodiffical notions as her husband. I fay at prefent: for she freely confesses that her brother's documents made at first some impression upon her, and that she had put herself to the expence of a long hood, in order to attend the extraordinary motions of the spirit; but having found, during an experiment of three weeks, no emotions, the fays, worth a farthing, the very wifely laid by her hood, and abandoned the fect. To be concise, she is a very friendly good natured woman; and fo industrious to oblige, that her guests must be of a very morose disposition who are not extremely well fatisfied in her house.

Mrs Whitefield happened to be in the yard when Jones and his attendant marched in. Her fagacity foon discovered in the air of our hero fomething which distinguished him from the vulgar. She ordered her fervants, therefore, immediately to shew him into a room, and prefently afterwards invited him to dinner with herself; which invitation he very thankfully accepted, for indeed much less agreeable company than that of Mrs Whitefield, and a much worse entertainment than she had provided would have been welcome, after so long fasting, and

fo long a walk.

Besides Mr Jones and the good governess of the manshon, there sat down at table an attorney of Salisbury, indeed the very same who had brought the news of Mrs Blisil's death to Mr Allworthy, and whose name, which I think we did not before mention, was Dowling: there was likewise present another person, who stiled himself a lawyer, and who lived somewhere near Linlinch, in Somersetshire. This fellow, I say, stiled himself a lawyer, but was indeed a most vile petty-sogger, without sense or knowledge of any kind; one of those who may be termed train-bearers to the law; a sort of supernumeraries in the profession, who are the hackneys of attornies, and will ride more miles, for half-a-crown than a post-boy.

During

During the time of dinner, the Somersetshire lawyer recollected the face of Jones, which he had seen at Mr Allworthy's; for he had often visited in that gentleman's kitchen. He therefore took occasion to inquire after the good family there, with that familiarity which would have become an intimate friend or acquaintance of Mr Allworthy; and indeed he did all in his power to infinuate himself to be such, though he had never had the honour of speaking to any person in that family higher than the butler. Jones answered all his questions with much civility, though he never remembered to have seen the petty-fogger before, and though he concluded from the outward appearance and behaviour of the man, that he usurped a freedom with his betters to which he was by no means intitled.

As the conversation of fellows of this kind is of all others the most detestable to men of any sense, the cloth was no sooner removed than Mr Jones withdrew, and a little barbarously lest poor Mrs Whitesield to do a pennance, which I have often heard Mr Timothy Harris, and other publicans of good taste, lament, as the severest lot annexed to their calling, namely, that of being obliged to keep company with their guests.

Jones had no fooner quitted the room, than the pettyfogger in a whifpering tone, afked Mrs Whitefield, "if

" she knew who that fine spark was?" She answered, "She had never seen the gentleman before." "The gentleman indeed!" replied the petty-fogger: a pretty gentleman truly! Why, he's the bastard of a fellow

"who was hanged for horse-stealing. He was dropt at "Squire Allworthy's door, where one of the servants

" found him in a box fo full of rain-water, that he would " certainly have been drowned, had he not been referved

" for another fate." " Ay, ay, you need not mention it, I protest; we understand what that fate is very

" well," cries Dowling, with a most facetious grin.
" Well," continued the other, " the 'squire ordered him

"to be taken in: for he is a timbersome man every body knows, and was afraid of drawing himself into a

" fcrape; and there the baftard was bred up and fed and " cloathified all to the world like any gentleman; and

"there he got one of the fervant-maids with child, and

" perfuaded her to fwear it to the 'fquire himself; and " afterwards he broke the arm of one Mr Thwackum a

" clergyman, only because he reprimanded him for fol-" lowing whores; and afterwards he fnapt a pistol at

" Mr Blifil behind his back; and once when 'fquire All-

worthy was fick, he got a drum, and beat it all over the " house, to prevent him from sleeping; and twenty

" other pranks he hath played; for all which, about " four or five days ago, just before I left the country,

" the 'fquire stripp'd him stark naked, and turned him

" out of doors."

"And very juffly too, I protest," cries Dowling; "I would turn my own fon out of doors, if he was guil-" ty of half as much. And pray what is the name of

" this pretty gentleman?"

"The name o' un!" answered the petty-fogger;

why, he is called Thomas Jones."

" Jones!" answered Dowling a little eagerly; "what! " Mr Jones that lived at Mr Aliworthy's! Was that the " gentleman that dined with us?" " The very fame," "I have heard of the gentleman," cries faid the other. Dowling, "often; but I never heard any ill character " of him." " And I am fure," faid Mrs. Whitefield, " if half what this gentleman hath faid be true, Mr " Jones hath the most deceitful countenance I ever faw; " for fure his looks promife fomething very different;

and I must fay, for the little I have seen of him, he is as civil a well-bred man as you would with to converte

se with."

The petty-fogger calling to mind that he had not been fworn, as he usually was before he gave his evidence; now bound what he had declared with fo many oaths and imprecations, that the landlady's ears were shocked, and The put a stop to his swearing by affuring him of her belief: Upon which he faid, "I hope, Madam, you imagine " I would fcorn to tell fuch things of any man, unless t "knew them to be true. What interest have I in taking " away the reputation of a man who never injured me! " I promise you every syllable of what I have said is fact,

" and the whole country knows it." As Mrs Whitefield had no reason to suspect that the petty fogger had any motive or temptation to abuse Jones,

t

the reader cannot blame her for believing what he so confidently affirmed with many oaths. She accordingly gave up her skill in physiognomy, and henceforwards conceived so ill an opinion of her guest, that she heartily wished him out of her house.

This diflike was now farther increased by a report, which Mr Whitefield made from the kitchen, where Partridge had informed the company, "That though he "carried the knapsack, and contented himself with stay-"ing among servants, while Tom Jones (as he called him) was regaling in the parlour, he was not his ferwant, but only a friend and companion, and as good a

" gentleman as Mr Jones himfelf."

Dowling fat all this while filent, biting his fingers, making faces, grinning, and looking wonderfully arch: at last he opened his lips, and protested that the gentleman looked like another fort of man. He then called for his bill with the utmost haste, declared he must be at Hereford that evening, lamented his great hurry of business, and wished he could divide himself into twenty

pieces, in order to be at once in twenty places.

The petty-fogger now likewise departed, and then Jones desired the favour of Mrs Whitesield's company to drink tea with him; but she refused, and with a manner so different from that with which she had received him at dinner, that it a little surprised him. And now he soon perceived her behaviour totally changed; for instead of that natural affability which we have before celebrated, she wore a constrained severity on her countenance, which was so disagreeable to Mr Jones, that he resolved however

late to quit the house that evening.

He did indeed account somewhat unfairly for this sudden change; for besides some hard and unjust surmises concerning semale sickleness and mutability, he began to suspect that he owed this want of civility to his want of horses; a fort of animals which, as they dirty no sheets, are thought, in inns, to pay better for their beds than their riders, and are therefore considered as the more desirable company; but Mrs Whitesield, to do her justice, had a much more liberal way of thinking. She was perfectly well-bred, and could be very civil to a gentleman, though he walked on foot. In reality, she looked on our hero as Vol. II.

a forry scoundrel, and therefore treated him as such, for which not even Jones himself, had he known as much as the reader, could have blamed her; nay, on the contrary, he must have approved her conduct, and have esteemed her the more for the disrespect shewn towards himself. This is indeed a most aggravating circumstance which attends depriving men unjustly of their reputation; for a man who is conscious of having an ill character cannot justly be angry with those who neglect and slight him: but ought rather to despise such as affect his conversation, unless where a perfect intimacy must have convinced them that their friend's character hath been falsely and injuriously aspersed.

This was not, however, the case of Jones; for as he was a perfect stranger to the truth, so he was with good reason offended at the treatment he received. He therefore paid his reckoning and departed, highly against the will of Mr Partridge, who having remonstrated much against it to no purpose, at last condescended to take up his

knapfack, and to attend his friend.

CHAP. IX.

Containing several dialogues between Jones and Partridge, concerning love, cold, and hunger, and other matters; with the lucky and narrow escape of Partridge, as he was on the very brink of making a fatal discovery to his friend.

THE shadows began now to descend larger from the high mountains: the seathered creation had betaken themselves to their rest. Now the highest order of mortals were sitting down to their dinners, and the lowest order to their suppers. In a word, the clock struck sive just as Mr Jones took his leave of Gloucester; an hour at which (as it was now midwinter) the dirty singers of night would have drawn her sable curtain over the universe, had not the moon forbid her, who now, with a sace as broad and as red as those of some jolly mortals, who, like her, turn night into day, began to rise from her bed, where she hadslumbered away the day, in order to sit up all night. Jones had not travelled far before he paid his compliments to that beautiful planet, and turning to his companion.

nion, asked him, if he had ever beheld so delicious an evening? Partridge making no ready answer to his question, he proceeded to comment on the beauty of the moon, and repeated some passages from Milton, who hath certainly excelled all other poets in his description of the heavenly luminaries. He then told Partridge the story from the Spectator of two lovers who had agreed to entertain themselves, when they were at a great distance from each other, by repairing, at a certain fixed hour, to look at the moon; thus pleasing themselves with the thought that they were both employed in contemplating the fame object at the same time. "Those lovers," added he, "must " have had fouls truly capable of feeling all the tender-" ness of the sublimest of all human passions."-" Very probably," cries Partridge: " but I envy them " more, if they had bodies incapable of feeling cold; for " I am almost frozen to death, and am wery much afraid " I shall lose a piece of my nose before we get to ano-" ther house of entertainment. Nay, truly, we may well " expect some judgment should happen to us for our " folly in running away so by night from one of the most " excellent inns I had ever fet my foot into. I am fure I " never faw more good things in my life, and the greatest " lord in the land cannot live better in his own house than " he may there. And to forfake fuch a house, and go a " rambling about the country, the Lord knows whither, " per devia rura viarum, I say nothing for my part; but " fome people might not have charity enough to con-" clude we were in our fober fenses." " Fie upon it, " Mr Partridge," fays Jones, "have a better heart : con-" fider you are going to face an enemy; and are you " afraid of facing a little cold? I wish indeed we had a " guide to advise which of the roads we should take." " May I be so bold," fays Partridge, " to offer my ad-" vice; interdum fightus opportuna loquitur." " Why, "which of them," cries Jones, "would you recommend?" "Truly neither of them," answered Partridge. " only road we can be certain of finding, is the road we " came. A good hearty pace will bring us back to Glou-" cefter in an hour; but if we go forward, the Lord Har-" ry knows when we shall arrive at any place; for I fee at

02

" least fifty miles before me, and no house in all the way."
"You see, indeed, a very fair prospect," says Jones,
"which receives great additional beauty from the extreme lustre of the moon. However, I will keep the
left-hand track, as that seems to lead directly to those

"ter. And here, if you are inclined to quit me, you may, and return back again; but for my part, I am re-

" folved to go forward."

"It is unkind in you, Sir," fays Partridge, "to fuffpect me of any fuch intention. What I have advised hath been as much on your account as on my own: but fince you are determined to go on, I am as much de-

" termined to follow. I pra, fequar te."

They now travelled fome miles without speaking to each other, during which suspence of discourse Jones often fighed, and Benjamin groaned as bitterly, though from a very different reason. At length Jones made a full stop, and turning about, cries, "Who knows, Par-" tridge, but the loveliest creature in the universe may " have her eyes now fixed on that very moon which I be-" hold at this inftant?" " Very likely, Sir," answered Partridge, "and if my eyes were fixed on a good firloin of " roaft beef, the devil might take the moon and her " horns into the bargain," " Did ever Tramontane " make fuch an answer?" cries Jones. " Prithee, Par-" tridge, wast thou ever susceptible of love in thy life, or " hath time worn away all the traces of it from thy me-" mory?" " Alack-a-day," cries Partridge, " well " would it have been for me if I had never known what " love was. Infandum, Regina, jubes renovare dolorem. I " am fure I have tafted all the tenderness and sublimities, " and bitternesses of the passion." " Was your mistress " unkind, then?" fays Jones. "Very unkind, indeed, "Sir," answered Partridge; "for she married me, and " made one of the most confounded wives in the world. However, heaven be praised, she's gone; and if I be-" lieved she was in the moon, according to the book I " once read, which teaches that to be the receptacle of departed spirits, I would never look at it for fear of " feeing her; but I wish, Sir, that the moon was a look-" ing-glass for your sake, and that Miss Sophia Western " was

" was now placed before it." " My dear Partridge," eries Jones, "what a thought was there! A thought " which I am certain could never have entered into any " mind but that of a lover. O Partridge! could I hope " once again to fee that face; but, alas! all those golden " dreams are vanished for ever, and my only refuge from " future misery is to forget the object of all my former " happiness." " And do you really despair of ever fee-" ing Mifs Western again?" answered Partridge: "If " you will follow my advice, I will engage you shall not " only fee her, but have her in your arms." " Ha! " do not awaken a thought of that nature," cries Jones, " I have struggled sufficiently to conquer all such wishes " already." " Nay," answered Partridge, " if you do " not wish to have your mistress in your arms, you are a " most extraordinary lover indeed." " Well, well," fays Jones, " let us avoid this subject; but pray what is " your advice?" "To give it you in the military phrase "then," fays Partridge, "as we are foldiers, To the " right about. Let us return the way we came; we " may yet reach Gloucester to-night, though late; where-" as if we proceed, we are likely, for ought I fee, to ram-" ble about for ever without coming either to house or " home." " I have already told you my refolution is " to go on," answered Jones; " but I would have you " to go back. I am obliged to you for your company " hither: and I beg you to accept a guinea as a small " instance of my gratitude. Nay, it would be cruel in " me to fuffer you to go any farther; for, to deal plainly " with you, my chief end and defire is a glorious death " in the fervice of my king and country." " As for " your money," replied Partridge, "I beg, Sir, you will " put it up. I will receive none of you at this time; for at " present I am, I believe, the richer man of the two. And " as your refolution is to go on, fo mine is to follow you if " you do. Nay, now my presence appears absolutely neces-" fary to take care of you, fince your intentions are fo def-" perate; for I promise you my views are much more " prudent; as you are resolved to fall in battle if you can, " fo I am resolved as firmly to come to no hurt, if I can " help it. And indeed I have the comfort to think there " will be but little danger; for a popish priest told me " the

" the other day, the business would soon be over, and he " believed without a battle." " A popish priest," cries Jones, "I have heard, is not always to be believed when " he speaks in behalf of his religion." " Yes, but so " far," answered the other, " from speaking in behalf 46 of his religion, he affured me the catholicks did not " expect to be any gainers by the change; for that " Prince Charles was as good a protestant as any in Eng-" land; and that nothing but regard to right made him " and the rest of the popish party to be Jacobites." "I believe him to be as much a protestant as I believe " he hath any right," fays Jones, "and I make no " doubt of our fuccess, but not without a battle. So " that I am not so sanguine as your friend the popish " priest." " Nay, to be fure, Sir," answered Partridge, " all the prophecies I have ever read, speak of a great " deal of blood to be spilt in the quarrel, and the miller " with three thumbs, who is now alive, is to hold the " horses of three kings up to his knees in blood. Lord " have mercy upon us all, and fend better times!" " With what stuff and nonsense hast thou filled thy head," answered Jones? "This too, I suppose, comes from the " popish priest. Monsters and prodigies are the proper " arguments to support monstrous and absurd doctrines. "The cause of King George is the cause of liberty and 44 true religion. In other words, it is the cause of common fense, my boy, and I warrant you will succeed, "though Briareus himself was to rise again with his "hundred thumbs, and to turn miller." made no reply to this. He was indeed cast into the utmost confusion by this declaration of Jones. For to inform the reader of a secret which we had no proper opportunity of revealing before, Partridge was in truth a Jacobite, and had concluded that Jones was of the same party, and was now proceeding to join the rebels; an opinion, which was not without foundation; for the tall long-fided dame, mentioned by Hudibras, that manyeyed, many-tongued, many-mouthed, many-eared monster of Virgil, had related the story of the quarrel between Jones and the officer with her usual regard to truth. She had indeed changed the name of Sophia into that of the Pretender, and had reported, that drinking his health was

was the cause for which Jones was knocked down. This Partridge had heard, and most sirmly believed. 'Tis no wonder, therefore, that he had thence entertained the above-mentioned opinion of Jones, and which he had almost discovered to him, before he found out his own mistake: and at this the reader will be the less inclined to wonder, if he pleases to recollect the doubtful phrase in which Jones first communicated his resolution to Mr Partridge; and indeed, had the words been less ambiguous, Partridge might very well have construed them as he did, being persuaded, as he was, that the whole nation were of the same inclination in their hearts: nor did it stagger him that Jones had travelled in the company of soldiers; for he had the same opinion of the army which he had of the rest of the people.

But however well affected he might be to James or Charles, he was still much more attached to Little Benjamin than to either: for which reason he no sooner discovered the principles of his fellow-traveller, than he thought proper to conceal, and outwardly to give up his own to the man on whom he depended for the making his fortune, since he by no means believed the affairs of Jones to be so desperate as they really were with Mr Allworthy: for, as he had kept a constant correspondence with some of his neighbours since he left that country, he had heard much, indeed more than was true, of the great affection Mr Allworthy bore this young man, who, as Partridge had been instructed, was to be that gentleman's heir, and whom, as we have said, he did not in the least

doubt to be his fon.

He imagined, therefore, that whatever quarrel was between them, it would certainly be made up at the return of Mr Jones; an event, from which he promifed great advantages, if he could take this opportunity of ingratiating himself with that young gentleman; and, if he could by any means be instrumental in procuring his return, he doubted not, as we have before said, but it would as highly advance him in the favour of Mr Allworthy.

We have already observed, that he was a very goodnatured fellow; and he hath himself declared the violent attachment he had to the person and character of Jones;

but possibly the views, which I have just before mentioned, might likewise have some little share in prompting him to undertake this expedition, at least in urging him to continue it, after he had discovered his master and himself, like some prudent fathers and sons, though they travelled together in great friendship, had embraced opposite parties. I am led into this conjecture by having remarked, that though love, friendship, esteem, and fuch like, have very powerful operations on the human mind; interest, however, is an ingredient seldom omitted by wife men, when they would work others to their own This is indeed a most excellent medicine, purposes. and, like Ward's pill, flies at once to the particular part of the body on which you defire to operate, whether it be the tongue, the hand, or any other member, where it scarce ever fails of immediately producing the defired effect.

CHAP. X.

In which our travellers meet with a very extraordinary adventure.

JUST as Jones and his friend came to the end of their dialogue in the last chapter, they arrived at the bottom of a very steep hill. Here Jones stopt short, and, directing his eyes upwards, flood for a while filent. At length he called to his companion, and faid, " Partridge, " I wish I was at the top of this hill: it must certainly " afford a most charming prospect, especially by this " light; for the folemn gloom, which the moon cafts on " all objects, is beyond expression beautiful, especially to so an imagination which is defirous of cultivating me-" lancholy ideas." " Very probably," answeredPartridge; " but, if the top of the hill be properest to produce me-" lancholy thoughts, I suppose the bottom is the likeliest " to produce merry ones, and these I take to be much " the better of the two. I protest you have made " my blood run cold at the very mentioning the top of " that mountain, which feems to me to be one of the " highest in the world. No, no, if we look for any thing " let it be for a place under ground, to screen ourselves from

from the frost."—" Do so," said Jones, "but let it be "within hearing of this place, and I will halloo to you at my return back." "Surely, Sir, you are not mad," said Partridge. "Indeed, I am," answered Jones, "if as-cending this hill be madness: but as you complain so much of the cold already, I would have you to stay be-low; I will certainly return to you within an hour."
"Pardon me, Sir," cries Partridge, "I have determined to follow you where-ever you go." Indeed he was now asraid to stay behind; for though he was coward enough in all respects, yet his chief fear was that of ghosts, with which the present time of night, and the wildness of the place, extremely well suited.

At this instant Partridge espied a glimmering light through some trees, which seemed very near to them. He immediately cried out in a rapture, "Oh, Sir! "Heaven hath at last heard my prayers, and hath brought us to a house; perhaps it may be an inn. Let me besech you, Sir, if you have any compassion either for me or yourself, do not despise the goodness of Providence, but let us go to you light. Whether it be a public-house or no, I am sure, if they be Christians that dwell there, they will not resuse a little house-room to persons in our miserable condition." Jones at length yielded to the earnest supplications of Partridge, and both together made directly towards the place

from whence the light iffued.

They foon arrived at the door of this house or cottage: for it might be called either, without impropriety. Here Jones knocked several times, without receiving any anfwer from within; at which Partridge, whose head was full of nothing but of ghosts, devils, witches, and such like, began to tremble, crying, " Lord have mercy upon us! " fure the people must be all dead. I can see no light " neither now, and yet I am certain I faw a candle " burning but a moment before.—Well! I have heard " of fuch things."-" What hast thou heard of?" faid Jones. "The people are either fast asleep, or probably, " as this is a lonely place, are afraid to open the door." He then began to vociferate pretty loudly, and at last an old woman, opening an upper casement, asked, " who "they were, and what they wanted?" Jones answered, VOL. II.

te

" they were travellers who had loft their way, and having " feen a light in the window, had been led thither in " hopes of finding fome fire to warm themselves." "Whoever you are," cries the woman, " you have no " business here; nor shall I open the door to any " body at this time of night." Partridge, whom the found of a woman's voice had recovered from his fright, fell to the most earnest supplications to be admitted for a few minutes to the fire, faying, " he was almost dead " with the cold," to which indeed fear had contributed equally with the frost. He assured her, that the gentleman who fpoke to her, was one of the greatest 'squires in the country, and made use of every argument save one, which Jones afterwards effectually added, and this was the promife of half a crown. A bribe too great to be refifted by fuch a person, especially as the genteel appearance of Jones, which the light of the moon plainly discovered to her, together with his affable behaviour, had entirely fubdued those apprehensions of thieves which she had at first conceived. She agreed, therefore, at last to let them in, where Partridge, to his infinite joy, found a good fire ready for his reception.

The poor fellow, however, had no fooner warmed himfelf, than those thoughts which were always uppermost in his mind began a little to disturb his brain. There was no article in his creed in which he had a stronger faith than he had in witchcraft, nor can the reader conceive a figure more adapted to inspire this idea, than the old woman who now stood before him. She answered exactly to that picture drawn by Otway in his Orphan. Indeed, if this woman had lived in the reign of James the First, her appearance alone would have hanged her

almost without any evidence.

Many circumstances likewise conspired to consirm Partridge in his opinion. Her living, as he then imagined, by herself, in so lonely a place, and in a house, the outside of which seemed much too good for her; but its inside was surnished in the most neat and elegant manner. To say the truth, Jones himself was not a little surprised at what he saw; for, besides the extraordinary neatness of the room, it was adorned with a great number of nick-

nacks and curiofities, which might have engaged the attention of a virtuofo.

While Iones was admiring these things, and Partridge fat trembling in the firm belief that he was in the house of a witch, the old woman faid, "I hope, gentlemen, " you will make what hafte you can; for I expect my " mafter prefently, and I would not for double the money " he should find you here." "Then you have a master," cried Jones: " indeed you will excuse me, good woman; " but I was furprifed to fee all those fine things in your "house." "Ah, Sir!" faid she, "if the twentieth " part of these things were mine, I should think myself " a rich woman; but pray, Sir, do not flay much longer; " for I look for him in every minute." - " Why fure he " would not be angry with you," faid Jones, "for doing a " common act of charity?" " Alack-a-day, Sir," faid fhe, "he is a strange man, not at all like other people. "He keeps no company with any body, and feldom " walks out but by night; for he doth not care to be feen, " and all the country people are as much afraid of meet-" ing him; for his drefs is enough to frighten those who " are not used to it. They call him the Man of the Hill, " (for there he walks by night), and the country people " are not, I believe, more afraid of the Devil himself. "He would be terribly angry, if he found you here." "Pray, Sir," fays Partridge, "don't let us offend " the gentleman; I am ready to walk, and was never " warmer in my life. Do, pray Sir, let us go: ---" Here are pistols over the chimney; who knows whether " they be charged or no, or what he may do with them?" " Fear nothing, Partridge," cries Jones; "I will fecure "thee from danger,"-" Nay, for matter o' that, he " never doth any mischief," said the woman; " but to be " fure, it is necessary he should keep some arms for his " own fafety; for his house hath been beset more than " once, and it is not many nights ago, that we thought " we heard thieves about it: for my own part, I have " often wondered that he is not murdered by fome villain " or other, as he walks out by himself at such hours; " but then, as I faid, the people are afraid of him, and " besides they think, I suppose, he hath nothing about " him worth taking." " I should imagine, by this col-" lection

" lection of rarities," cries Jones, " that your mafter had " been a traveller." "Yes, Sir," answered she, " he " hath been a very great one; there be few gentlemen " that know more of all matters than he; I fancy he hath " been crost in love, or whatever it is, I know not, but I " have lived with him above thefe thirty years, and in all " that time he hath hardly fpoke to fix living people." She then again folicited their departure, in which she was backed by Partridge; but Jones purposely protracted the time; for his curiofity was greatly raifed to fee this extraordinary person. Though the old woman, therefore, concluded every one of her answers with desiring him to be gone, and Partridge proceeded fo far as to pull him by the sleeve, he still continued to invent new questions, till the old woman, with an affrighted countenance, declared the heard her master's fignal; and at the same instant more than one voice was heard without the door, crying, "D-n your blood, shew us your money this instant. "Your money, you villain, or we will blow your brains " about your ears."

"O, good Heavens!" cries the old woman, "fome " villains, to be fure, have attacked my master. O la! " what shall I do? what shall I do?" "How!" cries Iones, "how !----Are thefe piftols loaded?" "O, good " Sir, there is nothing in them, indeed—O, pray don't " murder us, gentlemen," (for in reality she now had the fame opinion of those within as she had of those without). Jones made her no answer; but, fnatching an old broad-fword which hung in the room, he infantly fallied out, where he found the old gentleman struggling with two ruffians, and begging for mercy. Jones asked no queftions, but fell fo brifkly to work with his broad-fword, that the fellows immediately quitted their hold, and, without offering to attack our hero, betook themselves to their heels, and made their escape: for he did not attempt to purfue them, being contented with having delivered the old gentleman; and indeed he concluded he had pretty well done their business: for both of them, as they ran off, cried out with bitter oaths, that they were dead men.

Jones presently ran to lift up the old gentleman, who had been thrown down in the scuffle, expressing at the same time great concern, lest he should have received any

harm

harm from the villains. The old man stared a moment at Jones, and then cried, --- "No; Sir, no, I have very " little harm, I thank you. Lord have mercy upon " me." " I fee, Sir," faid Jones, " you are not free " from apprehensions even of those who have had the " happiness to be your deliverers: nor can I blame any " fuspicions which you may have; but indeed you have " no real occasion for any, here are none but your " friends prefent. Having mis'd our way this cold night, " we took the liberty of warming ourselves at your fire, " whence we were just departing when we heard you call " for affistance, which I must say Providence alone seems " to have fent you." "Providence indeed," cries the old gentleman, " if it be fo."-" So it is, I affure you," cries Jones; "here is your own fword, Sir. I have used " it in your defence, and now I return it into your own "hand." The old man, having received the fword, which was stained with the blood of his enemies, looked stedfaftly at Jones during fome moments, and then with a figh cried out, "You will pardon me, young gentleman, "I was not always of a suspicious temper, nor am I a " friend to ingratitude." " Be thankful then," cries Jones, "to that Providence to which you owe your deli-" verance; as to my part, I have only discharged the " common duties of humanity, and what I would have " done for any fellow creature in your fituation." " Let " me look at you a little longer," cries the old gentleman. -" You are a human creature then?-Well, perhaps " you are. Come, pray walk into my little hut. You " have been my deliverer indeed."

The old woman was distracted, between the fears which she had of her master, and for him; and Partridge was, if possible, in a greater fright. The former of these, however, when she heard her master speak so kindly to Jones, and perceived what had happended, came again to herself; but Partridge no sooner saw the gentleman, than the strangeness of his dress insused greater terrors into that poor sellow, than he had before selt, either from the strange description which he had heard, or from

the uproar which had happened at the door.

To fay the truth, it was an appearance which might have affected a more constant mind than that of Mr Partridge.

C

tridge. This person was of the tallest fize, with a long beard as white as snow. His body was clothed with the skin of an ass, made something into the form of a coat. He wore likewise boots on his legs, and a cap on his head, both composed of the skin of some other animals.

head, both composed of the skin of some other animals.

As soon as the old gentleman came into his house, the old woman began her congratulations on his happy escape from the rustians. "Yes," cried he, "I have "escaped indeed, thanks to my preserver." "O the blessing on him," answered she, "he is a good gentleman, I warrant him. I was asraid your worship would have been angry with me for letting him in; and to be certain I should not have done it, had not I seen by the moon-light, that he was a gentleman, and almost frozen to death. And to be certain, it must have been some good angel that sent him hither, and tempited me to do it."

"I am asraid, Sir," said the old gentleman to Jones.

"I am afraid, Sir," faid the old gentleman to Jones, "that I have nothing in this house which you can either eat or drink, unless you will accept a dram of brandy, of which I can give you some most excellent, and which I have had by me these thirty years." Jones declined this offer in a very civil and proper speech; and then the other asked him, whither he was travelling when he miss'd his way, saying, "I must own myself furprised to see such a person as you appear to be journeying on foot at this time of night. I suppose, "Sir, you are a gentleman of these parts; for you do not look like one who is used to travel far without "horses."

" Appearances," cried Jones, " are often deceitful; men sometimes look like what they are not. I assure you I am not of this country, and whither I am travel- ling, in reality I scarce know myself."

"Whoever you are, or whithersoever you are going," answered the old man, "I have obligations to you which

" I can never return."

"I once more," replied Jones, "affirm, that you have none; for there can be no merit in having hazarded that in your service on which I set no value: and nothing is so contemptible in my eyes as life."

" I am forry, young gentleman," answered the stran-

ger, " that you have any reason to be so unhappy at your

" years."

"Indeed I am, Sir," answered Jones, "the most unhap"py of mankind."——"Perhaps you have had a friend,
"or a mistres," replied the other. "How could you,"
cries Jones, "mention two words sufficient to drive me
"to distraction?" "Either of them are enough to drive
any man to distraction," answered the old man. "I
"inquire no farther, Sir. Perhaps my curiosity hath
led me too far already."

"Indeed, Sir," cries Jones, "I cannot censure a passion, which I feel at this instant in the highest degree. You will pardon me, when I assure you, that every thing which I have seen or heard, since I first entered this house, hath conspired to raise the greatest curiosity in me. Something very extraordinary must have determined you to this course of life, and I have reason to sear your own history is not without missortunes."

Here the old gentleman again fighed, and remained filent for some minutes: At last, looking earnestly on Jones, he said, "I have read, that a good countenance is "a letter of recommendation; if so, none ever can be "more strongly recommended than yourself. If I did not feel some yearning towards you from another confideration, I must be the most ungrateful monster upon earth; and I am really concerned it is no otherwise in my power, than by words, to convince you of my gratitude."

Jones, after a moment's hesitation, answered, "That it was in his power by words to gratify him extremely. I have confest a curiosity," said he, "Sir, need
I say how much obliged I shall be to you, if you
would condescend to gratify it? Will you suffer me
therefore to beg, unless some consideration restrains
you, that you would be pleased to acquaint me, what
motives have induced you thus to withdraw from the
fociety of mankind, and to betake yourself to a course
of life, to which it sufficiently appears you were notborn?"

"I fcarce think myfelf at liberty to refuse you any thing, after what hath happened," replied the old man;

" if you defire therefore to hear the story of an unhap-" py man, I will relate it to you. Indeed, you judge " rightly, in thinking there is commonly fomething ex-" traordinary in the fortunes of those who fly from focie-" ty: for however it may feem a paradox, or even a con-" tradiction, certain it is, that great philanthropy chiefly " inclines us to avoid and detest mankind, not on ac-" count fo much of their private and felfish vices, but for " those of a relative kind, such as envy, malice, treachery " cruelty, with every other species of malevolence. These " are the vices, which true philanthropy abhors, and " which, rather than fee and converse with, she avoids so-" ciety it felf. However, without a compliment to you, " you do not appear to me one of those whom I should " shun or detest; nay, I must say, in what little hath dropt " from you, there appears some parity in our fortunes; "I hope, however, yours will conclude more fuccefs-" fully."

Here some compliments passed between our hero and his host, and then the latter was going to begin his history, when Partridge interrupted him. His apprehensions had now pretty well lest him; but some effects of his terrors remained; he therefore reminded the gentleman of that excellent brandy he had mentioned. This was presently brought, and Partridge swallowed a large

bumper.

The gentleman then, without any farther preface, began, as you may read in the next chapter.

CHAP. XI.

In which the Man of the Hill begins to relate his History.

Was born in a village of Somersetshire, called Mark, in the year 1657; my father was one of those whom they call gentlemen farmers. He had a little estate of about 300l, a-year of his own, and rented another estate of near the same value. He was prudent and industrious, and so good a husband, that he might have led a very easy and comfortable life, had not an arrogant vixen of a wife sourced his domestic quiet. But, though this circumstance perhaps made

" made him miserable, it did not make him poor; for " he confined her almost entirely at home, and rather " chose to bear eternal upbraidings in his own houser " than to injure his fortune by indulging her in the ex-

" travagancies she defired abroad.

" By this Xantippe," - " So was the wife of Socrates " called," faid Partridge-" By this Xantippe he had " two fons, of which I was the younger. He defigned " to give us both good education; but my elder brother, " who, unhappily for him, was the favourite of my mo-" ther, utterly neglected his learning, infomuch that, " after having been five or fix years at school with little " or no improvement, my father, being told by his maf-" ter that it would be to no purpose to keep him longer " there, at last complied with my mother in taking him " home from the hands of that tyrant, as she called his " mafter, though indeed he gave the lad much less cor-" rection than his idleness deserved, but much more, it " feems, than the young gentleman liked, who constant-" ly complained to his mother of his fevere treatment, " and fhe as confrantly gave him a hearing."

"Yes, yes," cries Partridge, "I have feen fuch mo-"thers; I have been abused myself by them, and very " unjustly; fuch parents deferve correction as much as

" their children."

Jones chid the pedagogue for his interruption, and then the stranger proceeded: " My brother now, at the age " of fifteen, bid adieu to all learning, and to every thing " elfe but to his dog and gun, with which latter he be-" came fo expert, that, though perhaps you may think " it incredible, he could not only hit a standing mark " with great certainty, but hath actually shot a crow as " it was flying in the air. He was likewise excellent at " finding a hare fitting, and was foon reputed one of the " best sportsmen in the country; a reputation which " both he and his mother enjoyed as much as if he had " been thought the finest scholar. "The fituation of my brother made me at first think

" my lot the harder, in being continued at fchool: but I " foon changed my opinion; for, as I advanced pretty Vol. II.

"fast in learning, my labours became easy, and my ex"ercise so delightful, that holidays were my most unpleastant time: for my mother, who never loved me, now
apprehending that I had the greater share of my sather's affection, and finding, or at least thinking, that
I was more taken notice of by some gentlemen of learning, and particularly by the parson of the parish, than
my brother, she now hated my sight, and made
home so disagreeable to me, that what is called by
fchool-boys black Monday, was to me the whitest in the
whole year.

"Having at length gone through the school at Taunton, I was thence removed to Exeter college in Oxford,
where I remained four years; at the end of which an
accident took me off entirely from my studies; and
hence I may truly date the rise of all which happened

" to me afterwards in life.

"There was at the same college with myself one Sir. "George Gresham, a young fellow who was entitled to " a very confiderable fortune; which he was not, by the " will of his father, to come into full possession off till " he arrived at the age of twenty-five.—However, the " liberality of his guardians gave him little cause to re-" gret the abundant caution of his father: for they al-" lowed him five hundred pounds a year while he re-" mained at the university; where he kept his horses and " his whore, and lived as wicked and as profligate a life, as " he could have done, had he been ever fo entirely mafter " of his fortune; for befides the five hundred a year, " which he received from his guardians, he found means " to fpend a thousand more. He was above the age of " twenty-one, and had no difficulty in gaining what cre-" dit he pleafed.

"This young fellow, among many other tolerable bad qualities, had one very diabolical. He had a great delight in destroying and ruining the youth of inferior fortune, by drawing them into expences which they could not afford so well as himself; and the better, and worthier, and soberer, any young man was, the greater pleasure and triumph had he in his destruction; thus acting the character which is record-

" ed of the devil, and going about feeking whom he

" might devour.

"It was my misfortune to fall into an acquaintance and intimacy with this gentleman. My reputation of diligence in my studies, made me a desirable object of his mischievous intention; and my own inclination made it sufficiently easy for him to effect his purpose; for though I had applied myself with much industry to books, in which I took great delight, there were other pleasures in which I was capable of taking much greater; for I was high-mettled, and had a violent flow of animal spirits, was a little ambitious, and extremely amorous.

"I had not long contracted an intimacy with Sir George, before I became a partaker of all his pleafures; and when I was once entered on that scene, neither my inclination, nor my spirit, would suffer me to play an under-part. I was second to none of the company in any acts of debauchery; nay, I soon distinguished myself so notably in all riots and disorders, that my name generally stood first in the roll of delinquents; and, instead of being lamented as the unfortunate pupil of Sir George, I was now accused as the perfon who had misled and debauched that hopeful young gentleman; for though he was the ringleader and promoter of all the mischief, he was never so considered.

I fell at last under the censure of the vice-chancellor,

" and very narrowly escaped expulsion.

"You will easily believe, Sir, that such a life as I am now describing must be incompatible with my further progress in learning; and that in proportion as I addicted myself more and more to loose pleasure, I must grow more and more remiss in application to my studies. This was truly the consequence; but this was not all. My expences now greatly exceeded not only my former income, but those additions which I extorted from my poor generous father, on pretences of sums being necessary for preparing for my approaching degree of bachelor of arts. These demands, however, grew at last so frequent and exorbitant, that my father, by slow degrees, opened his ears to the accounts which he received from many quarters of my present behaviour,

OI

" and which my mother failed not to echo very faithful-" ly and loudly : adding, " Ay, this is the fine gentleman, " the scholar who doth so much honour to his family, " and is to be the making of it. I thought what all this " learning would come to. He is to be the ruin of us " all, I find, after his elder brother hath been denied " necessaries for his fake, to perfect his education for-" footh, for which he was to pay us fuch interest; I "thought what the interest would come to:" " with " much more of the same kind; but I have, I believe, sa-" tisfied you with this tafte. " My father, therefore, began now to return remon-

" strances, instead of money, to my demands, which " brought my affairs perhaps a little fooner to a crifis; " but had he remitted me his whole income, you will " imagine it could have fufficed a very short time to sup-" port one who kept pace with the expences of Sir

" George Gresham. " It is more than possible, that the distress I was now " in for money, and the impracticability of going on in " this manner, might have restored me at once to my " fenses, and to my studies, had I opened my eyes, be-" fore I became involved in debts, from which I faw " no hopes of ever extricating myself. This was indeed " the great art of Sir George, and by which he accom-" plished the ruin of many, whom he afterwards laugh-" ed at as fools and coxcombs, for vying, as he called it, " with a man of his fortune. To bring this about, he " would now and then advance a little money himfelf, " in order to support the credit of the unfortunate youth " with other people; till, by means of that very credit he " was irretrievably undone.

" My mind being, by these means, grown as desperate " as my fortune, there was fcarce a wickedness which I " did not meditate, in order for my relief. Self-murder it-" felf became the fubject of my ferious deliberation; and I " had certainly refolved on it, had not a more shameful, " though perhaps aless sinful thought expelled it frommy " head." Here he hefitated a moment, and cried out, " I protest, so many years have not washed away the " shame of this act, and I shall blush while I relate it." Jones defired him to pass over any thing that might give

him pain in the relation; but Partridge eagerly cried out, "O pray Sir, let us hear this; I had rather hear " this than all the rest; as I hope to be faved, I will ne-" ver mention a word of it." Jones was going to rebuke him, but the stranger prevented it, by proceeding thus: "I had a chum, a very prudent, frugal young lad, who, " though he had no very large allowance, had by his " parfimony heaped up upwards of forty guineas, which "I knew he kept in his escrutore. I took therefore an " opportunity of purloining his key from his breeches " pocket while he was afleep, and thus made myfelf maf-" ter of all his riches: after which I again conveyed his key " into his pocket, and counterfeiting fleep, though I ne-" ver once closed my eyes, lay in bed till after he arose " and went to prayers, an exercise to which I had long " been unaccustomed.

" Timorous thieves, by extreme caution, often subject " themselves to discoveries which those of a bolder kind " escape. Thus it happened to me; for, had I boldly " broke open his escrutore, I had perhaps escaped even " his fuspicion; but as it was plain that the person who " robbed him had poffeffed himself of his key, he had no "doubt, when he first missed his money, but that his " chum was certainly the thief. Now, as he was of a " fearful disposition, and much my inferior in strength, " and I believe, in courage, he did not dare to confront " me with my guilt, for fear of worfe bodily confequen-" ces, which might happen to him. He repaired there-" fore immediately to the vice-chancellor, and, upon " fwearing to the robbery, and to the circumstances of it, " very eafily obtained a warrant against one who now " had fo bad a character through the whole university. " Luckily for me I lay out of the college the next " evening; for that day I attended a young lady in a " chaife to Whitney, where we staid all night; and, in " our return the next morning to Oxford, I met one of " my cronies, who acquainted me with fufficient news " concerning myself to make me turn my horse another " way."

"Pray, Sir, did he mention any thing of the war-"rant?" faid Partridge. But Jones begged the gentleman to proceed, without regarding any impertinent questions; which he did as follows:

"Having now abandoned all thoughts of returning to Oxford, the next thing which offered itself was a journey to London. I imparted this intention to my female companion, who at first remonstrated against

" it; but upon producing my wealth, she immediately consented. We then struck a-cross the country into

" the great Cirencester road, and made such haste, that we " spent the next evening (save one) in London.

"When you confider the place where I now was, and the company with whom I was, you will, I fan"cy, conceive that a very short time brought me to an end of that sum of which I had so iniquitously possessed myself.

" I was now reduced to a much higher degree of dif-" trefs than before; the necessaries of life began to be " numbered among my wants; and what made my cafe " ftill the more grievous, was, that my paramour, of " whom I was now grown immoderately fond, shared " the fame distresses with myself. To see a woman " you love in diffress; to be unable to relieve her, and " at the same time to reflect that you have brought her " into this fituation, is perhaps a curse of which no ima-" gination can reprefent the horrors to those who have " not felt it." "I believe it from my foul," cries Jones; " and I pity you from the bottom of my heart." He then took two or three diforderly turns about the room, and at last begged pardon, and flung himself into his chair, crying, "I thank heaven, I have escaped " that."

"This circumstance," continued the gentleman, " for severely aggravated the horrors of my present situation, that they became absolutely intolerable. I could with less pain endure the raging of my own natural unsatisfied appetites, even hunger or thirst, than I could submit to leave ungratisfied the most whimsical desires of a woman, on whom I so extravagantly doated, that though I knew she had been the mistress of half my acquaintance, I sirmly intended to marry her. But the good creature was unwilling to consent to an action which the world might think so much to my disadvantage

"advantage. And as possibly she compassionated the daily anxieties which the must have perceived me suffer on her account, she resolved to put an end to my distress. She soon indeed found means to relieve me from my troublesome and perplexed situation; for while I was distracted with various inventions to supply her with pleasures, she very kindly—betrayed me to one of her former lovers at Oxford, by whose care and diligence I was immediately apprehended and committed to goal.

"Here I first began seriously to reslect on the miscar"riages of my former life, on the errors I had been
guilty of, on the missfortunes which I had brought on
"myself, and the grief which I must have occasioned
"to one of the best of fathers. When I added to all
"these the persidy of my mistress, such was the horror
of my mind, that life, instead of being longer desirable,
grew the object of my abhorrence; and I could have
gladly embraced death, as my dearest friend, if it had
"offered itself to my choice unattended by shame.

"The time of the affizes foon came, and I was removed by Habeas Corpus to Oxford, where I expected certain conviction and condemnation; but, to
my great furprife, none appeared against me, and I
was, at the end of the fessions, discharged for want of
prosecution. In short, my chum had lest Oxford, and
whether from indolence, or from what other motive, I
am ignorant, had declined concerning himself any far-

" ther in the affair."

"Perhaps," cries Partridge, "he did not care to have your blood upon his hands, and he was in the right on't. If any person was to be hanged upon my evidence, I should never be able to lie alone afterwards,

" for fear of feeing his ghost."

"I shall shortly doubt, Partridge," fays Jones, "whether thou art more brave or wife." "You may laugh
at me, Sir, if you please," answered Partridge; but
if you will hear a very thort story which I can tell, and
which is most certainly true, perhaps you may change
your opinion. In the parish where I was born—"
Here Jones would have silenced him; but the stranger interceded that he might be permitted to tell his story, and

in the mean time promised to recollect the remainder of his own.

Partridge then proceeded thus: " In the parish where "I was born, there lived a farmer whose name was " Bridle, and he had a fon named Francis, a good hope-" ful young fellow: I was at the grammar school with " him, where I remember he was got into Ovid's Epif-" tles, and he could construe you three lines together " fometimes without looking into a dictionary. Befides " all this, he was a very good lad, never miffed the church " o' Sundays, and was reckoned one of the best pfalm-" fingers in the whole parish. He would indeed now " and then take a cup too much, and that was the on-" ly fault he had .- " Well, but come to the ghost," cries Jones. " Never fear, Sir, I shall come to him foon " enough," answered Partridge. You must know then, " that farmer Bridle loft a mare, a forrel one, to the best " of my remembrance; and fo it fell out that this young " Francis shortly afterwards, being at a fair at Hindon, " and as Ithink it was on- I can't remember the day; and " being as he was, what should he happen to meet but a " man upon his father's mare. Frank called out prefent-" ly, Stop thief; and it being in the middle of the fair, " it was impossible, you know, for the man to make his " escape. So they apprehended him, and carried him " before the justice: I remember it was justice Willough-" by of Noyle, a very worthy good gentleman, and he " committed him to prison, and bound Frank in recog-" nizance, I think they call it; a hard word, compound-" ed of re and cognosco; but it differs in its meaning from " the use of the simple, as many other compounds do. "Well, at last down came my Lord Justice Page to hold " the affizes, and fo the fellow was had up, and Frank " was held up as a witness. To be fure I shall never for-" get the face of the judge, when he began to ask him " what he had to fay against the prisoner. He made " poor Frank tremble and shake in his shoes." "Well, " you fellow," fays my Lord, " what have you to fay? "Don't fland humming and hawing, but speak out;" " but however, he foon turned altogether as civil to " Frank, and began to thunder at the fellow; and when " he asked him, if he had any thing to say for himself,

VOL. II.

" the fellow faid he had found the horse," " Ay!" answered the judge, " thou art a lucky fellow; I have tra-" velled the circuit these forty years, and never found a " horse in my life: but I'll tell thee what, friend, thou " wast more lucky than thou didst know of; for thou " didst not only find a horse, but a halter too, I promile " thee." "To be fure I shall never forget the word. "Upon which every body fell a laughing, as how could " they help it? Nay, and twenty other jests he made; " which I can't remember now. There was fomething " about his skill in horse-slesh, which made all the folks " laugh. To be certain, the judge must have been a very " brave man, as well as a man of much learning. It is " indeed charming sport to hear trials upon life and " death. One thing I own I thought a little hard, that " the prisoner's counsel was not suffered to speak for " him, though he defired only to be heard one very " fhort word; but my Lord would not hearken to him, " though he fuffered a counfellor to talk against him for " above half an hour. I thought it hard, I own, that " there should be so many of them, my Lord, and the " court, and the jury, and the counfellors, and the wit-" nesses, all upon one poor man, and he too in chains. "Well, the fellow was hanged, as to be fure it could be " no otherwise, and poor Frank could never be easy a-" bout it. He never was in the dark alone, but he fan-" cied he faw the fellow's spirit." "Well, and is this "thy ftory?" cries Jones! "No, no," answered Partridge; "O Lord, have mercy upon me! - I am just " now coming to the matter, for one night, coming from " the ale-house in a long narrow dark lane, there he ran " directly up against him, and the spirit was all in white " and fell upon Frank; and Frank, who is a fturdy lad " fell upon the spirit again, and there they had a tuffel " together, and poor Frank was dreadfully beat: indeed " he made a shift at last to crawl home; but what with " the beating, and what with the fright, he lay ill above " a fortnight. And all this is most certainly true, and " the whole parish will bear witness to it." The stranger smiled at this story, and Jones burst into a loud fit of laughter, upon which Partridge cried, " Ay, " you may laugh, Sir, and fo did fome others, particular-

" ly a 'fquire, who is thought to be no better than an " atheist; who, forfooth, because there was a calf with " a white face found dead in the same lane the next " morning, would fain have it, that the battle was be-" tween Frank and that, as if a calf would fet upon a " man. Besides, Frank told me he knew it to be a spirit, " and could fwear to him in any court in Christendom, " and he had not drank above a quart or two, or fuch " matter of liquor, at the time. Lud have mercy upon us, " and keep us all from dipping our hands in blood, I fay." "Well, Sir," faid Jones to the stranger, "Mr Par-" tridge hath finished his story, and I hope will give " you no further interruption, if you will be so kind to " proceed." He then refurned his narration; but as he hath taken breath for a while, we think it proper to give it to our reader, and shall therefore put an end to this chapter.

CHAP. XII.

In which the Man of the Hill continues his History.

HAD now regained my liberty," faid the stranger, but I had lost my reputation; for there is a wide difference between the case of a man who is barely acquitted of a crime in a court of justice, and of him who is acquitted in his own heart, and in the opinion of the people. I was conscious of my guilt, and ashamed to look any one in the face, so resolved to leave Oxford the next morning, before the day-light discovered me to the eyes of any beholders.

"to the eyes of any beholders.
"When I had got clear of the city, it first entered in"to my head to return home to my father, and endeavour to obtain his forgiveness; but as I had no reason
to doubt his knowledge of all which had past, and as I
was well assured of his great aversion to all acts of dishonesty, I could entertain no hopes of being received
by him, especially since I was too certain of all the
good offices in the power of my mother: nay, had
my father's pardon been as sure, as I conceived his refentment to be, I yet question whether I could have
had the assurance to behold him, or whether I could,
"upon

" upon any terms, have submitted to live and converse with those, who, I was convinced, knew me to have

" been guilty of fo base an action."

"I hastened therefore back to London, the best retirement of either grief or shame, unless for persons
of a very public character; for here you have the advantage of solitude without its disadvantage; since you
may be alone and in company at the same time; and
while you walk or sit unobserved, noise, hurry, and a
constant succession of objects, entertain the mind, and
prevent the spirits from preying on themselves, or rather on grief or shame, which are the most unwholefome diet in the world; and on which, (though there
are many who never taste either but in public,) there
are some who can feed very plentifully, and very satally when alone.

"But as there is scarce any human good without its concomitant evil, so there are people who find an inconvenience in this unobserving temper of mankind: I mean persons who have no money: for as you are not put out of countenance, so neither are you clothed or fed by those who do not know you. And a man

" may be as easily starved in Leadenhall-market as in the deserts of Arabia.

" It was at present my fortune to be destitute of that " great evil, as it is apprehended to be by feveral writers, " who I suppose were over-burthened with it, namely, "Money." "With submission, Sir," faid Partridge, " I do not remember any writers who have called it Ma-" lorum; but irritamenta Malorum. Effodiuntur opes irri-" tamenta Malorum." " Well Sir," continued the stranger, " whether it be an evil, or only the cause of evil, I was entirely void of it, and at the fame time of friends, " and, as I thought, of acquaintance; when one evening " as I was passing through the Inner Temple, very hun-" gry, and very miserable, I heard a voice on a sudden " haling me with great familiarity by my Christian name; " and upon my turning about, I presently recollected the " person who so saluted me, to have been my fellow-collegiate; one who had left the university above a year, and of long before any of my misfortunes had befallen me-"This gentleman, whose name was Watfon, shook me " heartily R 2

Ch

46

heartily by the hand, and expressing great joy at meeting me, proposed our immediately drinking a bottle together. I at first declined the proposal, and pretended business; but as he was very earnest and pressing, hunger at last overcame my pride, and I fairly confessed to him I had no money in my pocket; yet not without framing a lie for an excuse, and imputing it to my having changed my breeches that morning. Mr Watson answered, I thought, Jack, you and I had been too old acquaintance for you to mention such a matter. He then took me by the arm, and was pulling me along; but I gave him very little trouse ble, for my own inclinations pulled me much stronger than he could do.

"We then went into the Friars, which you know is the " fcene of all mirth and jollity. Here, when we arrived " at the tavern, Mr Watson applied himself to the draw-" er only, without taking the least notice of the cook; " for he had no suspicion but that I had dined long fince. However, as the case was really otherwise, I " forged another fallehood, and told my companion, I " had been at the farther end of the city on business of " confequence, and had fnapt up a mutton chop in hafte; " fo that I was again hungry, and wished he would add " a beef-stake to his bottle." "Some people," cries Partridge, " ought to have good memories, or did you find " just money enough in your breeches to pay for the " mutton chop?" " Your observation is right," answered the stranger, " and I believe such blunders are insepa-" rable from all dealing in untruth.—But to proceed.— " I began now to feel myself extremely happy. The " meat and wine foon revived my fpirits to a high pitch, and I enjoyed much pleasure in the conversation of of my old acquaintance, the rather as I thought him en-

"But he did not fuffer me to remain long in this agreeable delusion; for taking a bumper in one hand, and holding me by the other, "Here my boy," cries he, "here's wishing you joy of your being so honourably acquitted of that affair laid to your charge." I

" tirely ignorant of what had happened at the university

was thunderstruck with confusion at these words,

" which Watfon observing, proceeded thus :--- " Nay, " never be ashamed, man; thou hast been acquitted, " and no one dares now call thee guilty; but prithee " do tell me, who am thy friend, I hope thou didst " really rob him; for rat me if it was not a meritorious " action to strip such a fneaking pitiful rascal, and, inftead of the two hundred guineas, I wish you had ta-" ken as many thousands. Come, come, my boy, don't " be fly of confessing to me; you are not now brought " before one of the pimps. D-n me, if I don't ho-" nour you for it; for, as I hope for falvation, I would " have made no manner of scruple of doing the same thing."

"This declaration a little relieved my abashement; " and, as the wine had now fomewhat opened my heart, I " very freely acknowledged the robbery, but acquainted " him that he had been misinformed as to the sum ta-" ken, which was little more than a fifth part of what he

" had mentioned."

"I am forry for it with all my heart," quoth he, " and " I wish thee better success another time; though, if " you will take my advice, you shall have no occasion to " run any fuch risk. " Here, said he, taking some dice " out of his pocket, " here's the stuff: here are the im-" plements; here are the little doctors which cure the " diftempers of the purfe. Follow but my counfel, and I " will shew you a way to empty the pocket of a queer " cull, without any danger of the nubbing cheat."

"Nubbing cheat!" cries Partridge; " Pray Sir, what

" is that ?"

"Why that, Sir," fays the stranger, " is a cant phrase " for the gallows; for as gamesters differ little from high-" waymen in their morals, so do they very much refem-

" ble them in their language. "We had now each drank our bottle, when Mr Wat-" fon faid, the board was fitting, and that he must attend, " earnestly pressing me, at the same time, to go with him" " and try my fortune. I answered, he knew that was " at present out of my power, as I had informed him of " the emptiness of my pocket. To say the truth, I " doubted not, from his many strong expressions of friend-

"fhip, but that he would offer to lend me a small sum for that purpose; but he answered, "Never mind that, man, e'en boldly run a levant;" (Partridge was going to inquire the meaning of that word; but Jones stopped his mouth;) "but be circumspect as to the man. I will tip you the proper person, which may be necessary, as you do not know the town, nor can differ tinguish a rum cull from a queer one."

"The bill was now brought, when Watfon paid his fhare, and was departing. I reminded him, not without blushing, of my having no money. He answered, "that fignisties nothing, score it behind the door, or make a bold brush, and take no notice—Or—stay," says he, "I will go down stairs first, and then do you take up my money, and score the whole reckoning at the bar, and I will wait for you at the corner." I expressed some dislike at this, and hinted my expectation that he would have deposited the whole; but he swore he had not

" another fix-pence in his pocket.

"He then went down, and I was prevailed on to take up the money and follow him, which I did close enough to hear him tell the drawer the reckoning was on the table. The drawer passed by me up stairs;
but I made such haste into the street, that I heard nothing of his disappointment, nor did I mention a sylla-

" ble at the bar, according to my instructions.

"We now went directly to the gaming table, where "Mr Watson, to my surprise, pulled out a large sum of money, and placed it before him, as did many others; all of them, no doubt, considering their heaps as so many decoy-birds, which were to entice and draw over

" the heaps of their neighbours.

"Here it would be tedious to relate all the freaks which fortune, or rather the dice, played in this her temple. Mountains of gold were in a few moments reduced to nothing at one part of the table, and rofe as suddenly in another. The rich grew in a moment poor, and the poor as suddenly became rich; so that it seemed a philosopher could no where have so well instructed his pupils in the contempt of riches, at least he could no where have better inculcated the uncertainty of their duration.

" For

"For my own part, after having confiderably improved my small estate, I at last entirely demolished it.

Mr Watson too, after much variety of luck, rose
from the table in some heat, and declared he had lost
a cool hundred, and would play no longer. Then
coming up to me, he asked me to return with him
to the tavern; but I positively resused, saying, I would
not bring myself a second time into such a dilemma,
and especially as he had lost all his money, and was
now in my own condition." "Pooh," says he, "I
have just borrowed a couple of guineas of a friend; and
one of them is at your service." "He immediately
put one of them into my hand, and I no longer resisted his invitation.

"I was at first a little shocked at returning to the same house, whence we had departed in so unhands some a manner; but when the drawer, with very civil address, told us, he believed we had forgot to pay our reckoning, I became perfectly easy, and very readily gave him a guinea, bid him pay himself, and acquired esced in the unjust charge which had been laid on my

" memory.

"Mr Watson now bespoke the most extravagant fupper he could well think of, and though he had contented himself with simple claret before, nothing now but the most precious Burgundy would serve his

" purpose,

"Our company was foon increased by the addition of feveral gentlemen from the gaming-table; most of whom, as I afterwards found, came not to the tavern to drink, but in the way of business; for the true gamesters pretended to be ill, and refused their glass, while they plied heartily two young fellows, who were to be afterwards piliaged, as indeed they were without mercy. Of this plunder I had the good fortune to be a sharer, though I was not yet let into the secret.

"There was one remarkable accident attended this ta"vern-play; for the money by degrees totally difappeared, fo that though at the beginning the table was halfcovered with gold, yet before the play ended, which it
did not till the next day, being Sunday at noon, there

"was scarce a single guinea to be seen on the table; and this was the stranger, as every person present except myself declared he had lost; and what was become of

" the money, unless the Devil himself had carried it a-

" way, is difficult to determine."

"Most certainly he did," says Partridge; "for evil spi"rits can carry away any thing without being seen, tho?
"there were never so many folk in the room; and I
"should not have been surprised, if he had carried a"way all the company of a set of wicked wretches, who
"were at play in sermon-time: and I could tell you a
"story if I would, where the Devil took a man out of
bed from another man's wife, and carried him away
"through the key-hole of the door. I've seen the very
house where it was done, and nobody hath lived in it
these thirty years."

Though Jones was a little offended by the impertinence of Partridge, he could not however avoid smiling at his simplicity. The stranger did the same, and then proceeded with his story, as will be seen in the next chap-

ter.

CHAP. XIII.

In which the foregoing flory is farther continued.

mew scene of life. I soon became acquainted with the whole fraternity of sharpers, and was let into their secrets; I mean into the knowledge of those gross cheats, which are proper to impose upon the raw and unexperienced: for there are some tricks of a siner kind, which are known only to a few of the gang, who are at the head of their profession; a degree of honour beyond my expectation; for drink, to which I was immoderately addicted, and the natural warmth of my passions, prevented me from arriving at any great success in an art, which requires as much cooliness as the most austere school of philosophy.

"Mr Watson, with whom I now lived in the closest

"Mr Wation, with whom I now lived in the closest amity, had unluckily the former failing to a very great excels; so that instead of making a fortune by his

" profession, as some others did, he was alternately rich " and poor, and was often obliged to furrender to his " cooler friends, over a bottle which they never tafted, " that plunder that he had taken from culls at the public " table.

" However, we both made a shift to pick up an un-" comfortable livelihood, and for two years I continued of the calling, during which time I tafted all the va-" rieties of fortune, fometimes flourishing in affluence, " and at others being obliged to struggle with almost in-" credible difficulties; to-day wallowing in luxury, and " to-morrow reduced to the coarfest and most homely

" fare; my fine clothes being often on my back in the

" evening, and at the pawn-shop the next morning. "One night as I was returning pennyless from the " gaming table, I observed a very great disturbance, and " a large mob gathered together in the street. As I " was in no danger from pickpockets, I ventured into " the croud, where upon inquiry I found, that a man " had been robbed and very ill used by some ruffians. "The wounded man appeared very bloody, and feemed " fcarce able to support himself on his legs. As I had " not therefore been deprived of my humanity by my " present life or conversation, though they had left me " very little of either honesty or shame, I immediately of-" fered my affiftance to the unhappy person, who thank-" fully accepted it, and, putting -himself under my con-" duct, begged me to convey him to fome tavern, " where he might fend for a furgeon, being, as he faid, " faint with loss of blood. He seemed indeed highly " pleased at finding one who appeared in the dress of a " gentleman, for, as to all the rest of the company pre-" fent, their outfide was fuch, that he could not wifely " place any confidence in them.

" I took the poor man by the arm, and led him to the " tavern where we kept our rendezvous, as it happened " to be the nearest at hand. A furgeon happening lucki-

" ly to be in the house, immediately attended, and ap-" plied himself to dressing his wounds, which I had the

" pleasure to hear were not likely to be mortal.

"The furgeon, having very expeditiously and dextrous-" ly finished his business, began to inquire, " in what Vol. II.

of part of the town the wounded man lodged?" who an-" fwered, " That he was come to town that very morn-

"ing; that his horse was at an inn in Piccadilly, and " that he had no other lodging, and very little or no ac-

" quaintance in town."

"This furgeon, whose name I have forgot, though I " remember it began with an R, had the first character " in his profession, and was a serjeant-surgeon to the king.

" He had moreover many good qualities, and was a very " generous, good-natured man, and ready to do any " fervice to his fellow creatures. He offered his patient

"the use of his chariot to carry him to his" inn, and at " the same time whispered in his ear, " That if he want-

" ed any money he would furnish him."

"The poor man was not now capable of returning " thanks for this generous offer: for, having had his " eyes for some time stedfastly fixed on me, he threw " himself back in his chair, crying, " O, my son! my

" fon!" and then fainted away. " Many of the people present imagined this accident " had happened through his loss of blood; but I, who " at the same time began to recollect the features of my " father, was now confirmed in my fuspicion, and fatis-" fied that it was he himself who appeared before me, "I prefently ran to him, raifed him in my arms, and kiffed his cold lips with the utmost eagerness. Here I " must draw a curtain over a scene which I cannot describe: " for though I did not lose my being, as my father for a while did, my fenfes were however to overpowered with " affright and furprise, that I am a stranger to what pas-66 fed for some minutes, and indeed till my father had " again recovered from his fwoon; and I found my-" felf in his arms, both tenderly embracing each other,

" of us. " Most of those present seemed affected with this scene, " which we, who might be confidered as the actors in " it, were defirous of removing from the eyes of all spec-" tators as fast as we could: my father therefore accept-66 ed the kind offer of the furgeon's chariot, and I attend-

" while the tears trickled apace down the cheeks of each

" ed him in it to his inn.

When we were alone together, he gently upbraid-

" ed me with having neglected to write to him during fo " long a time, but entirely omitted the mention of that " crime which had occasioned it. He then informed me " of my mother's death, and infifted on my returning " home with him, faying, " That he had long fuffered " the greatest anxiety on my account; that he knew not " whether he had most feared my death or wished it, since " he had fo many more dreadful apprehensions for me. " At last, he faid, a neighbouring gentleman who had just " recovered a fon from the fameplace, informed him where "I was; and that to reclaim me from this course of life " was the fole cause of his journey to London." He " thanked Heaven he had fucceeded fo far as to find " me out by means of an accident, which had like " to have proved fatal to him, and had the pleasure to " think he partly owed his prefervation to my humani-" ty, with which he profest himself to be more delight-" ed than he should have been with my filial piety, " if I had known that the object of all my care was my " own father."

"Vice had not fo depraved my heart, as to excite in it an infenfibility of fo much paternal affection, though fo unworthily bestowed. I presently promised to obey his commands in my return home with him, as foon as he was able to travel, which indeed he was in a very few days, by the affistance of that excellent surgeon

" who had undertaken his cure.

"The day preceding my father's journey, (before which time I scarce ever left him), I went to take my leave of some of my most intimate acquaintance, particularly of Mr Watson, who distinated me from burying myself, as he called it, out of a simple compliance with the fond desires of a foolish old fellow. Such folicitations, however, had no effect, and I once more faw my own home. My father now greatly solicited me to think of marriage; but my inclinations were utterly averse to any such thoughts. I had tasted of love already, and perhaps you know the extravagant excesses of that most tender and most violent passion." Here the old gentleman paused, and looked earnestly at Jones whose countenance within a minute's space displayed the extremities both of red and white; upon which the

old man, without making any observations, renewed his narrative.

"Being now provided with all the necessaries of life, I betook myself once again to study, and that with a more inordinate application than I had ever done formerly. The books, which now employed my time solely, were those, as well ancient as modern, which treat of true philosophy, a word which is by many thought to be the subject only of farce and ridicule. I now read over the works of Aristotle and Plato, with the rest of those inestimable treasures, which ancient Greece has bequeathed to the world.

"These authors, though they instructed me in no feience by which men may promise to themselves to acquire the least riches or worldly power, taught me however the art of despising the highest acquisitions of both. They elevate the mind, and steel and harden it against the capricious invasions of fortune. They not only instruct in the knowledge of wisdom, but

"confirm men in their habits, and demonstrate plainly, that this must be our guide, if we propose ever to artive at the greatest worldly happiness, or to defend

" ourselves with any tolerable security against the misery,

" which every where furrounds and invefts us.

"To this I added another study, compared to which, " all the philosophy taught by the wifeft Heathens is lit-"tle better than a dream, and is indeed as full of vanity " as the filliest jester ever pleased to represent it. " is that divine wifdom, which is alone to be found in "the holy scriptures: for they impart to us the know-" ledge and affurance of things, much more worthy our attention than all which this world can offer to our acceptance; of things, which Heaven itself has condescend-" ed to reveal to us, and to the smallest knowledge of " which the highest human wit unaffisted could never afcend. I began now to think all the time I had fpent with " the best heathen writers was little more than labour " loft; for however pleafant and delightful their leftons " may be, or however adequate to the right regulation of our conduct with respect to this world only, yet, when compared with the glory revealed in scripture, " their highest documents will appear as triffing, and of

6 25

68

66

66

44

66

66

46

" as little consequence as the rules by which children re-" gulate their childish little games and pastimes. True " it is, that philosophy makes us wifer, but Christianity " makes us better men. Philosophy elevates and fleels the " mind; christianity softens and sweetens it: the former " makes us the objects of human admiration, the lat-

" ter of divine love: that infures us a temporal, but this

" an eternal happiness. But I am afraid I tire you-" with my rhapfody."

" Not at all," cries, Partridge; " Lud forbid we should

" be tired with good things."

- "I had fpent," continued the stranger, " about four " years in the most delightful manner to myfelf, totally " given up to contemplation, and entirely unembaraf-" fed with the affairs of the world, when I loft the " best of fathers, and one whom I so entirely loved, that " my grief at his lofs exceeds all description. I now a-" bandoned my books, and gave myfelf up for a whole " month to the efforts of melancholy and despair. Time, " however, the best physician of the mind, at length " brought me relief." " Ay, ay, Tempus edan re-" I then," continued the " rum," faid Partridge. " stranger, " betook myself again to my former studies, "which I may fay perfected my cure: for philosophy " and religion may be called the exercises of the mind; " and, when this is difordered, they are as wholfome as " exercise can be to a distempered body. They do in-
- " ftrengthen and confirm the mind, till man becomes, " in the noble strain of Horace, Fortis, et in seipso totus teres atque rotundus,
 - " Externi ne quid valeat per læve morari: " In quem manca ruit semper Fortuna *."-

Here Jones smiled at some conceit, which intruded itfelf into his imagination; but the stranger, I believe, perceived it not and proceeded thus:

" deed produce fimilar effects with exercise; for they

" My circumstances were now greatly altered by the " death of that best of men; for my brother, who was " now become master of the house, differed so widely

^{*} Firm in himself, who on himself relies, Polish'd and round, who runs his proper course, And breaks misfortunes with superior force. Mr FRANCIS. " from

66

46

66

" from me in his inclinations, and our pursuits in life " had been fo very various, that we were the worst of " company to each other; but what made our living together still more disagreeable, was the little harmo-" ny which could fubfift between the few who reforted " to me, and the numerous train of sportsmen, who of-" ten attended my brother from the field to the table: " for fuch fellows, besides the noise and nonsense with " which they perfecute the ears of fober men, endeavour " always to attack them with affront and contempt, "This was fo much the case, that neither I myself, nor " my friends, could ever fit down to a meal with them, " without being treated with derifion, because we were " unacquainted with the phrases of sportsmen: for men of " true learning, and almost universal knowledge, always " compassionate the ignorance of others; but fellows " who excel in some little, low, contemptible art, are al-" ways certain to despise those who are unacquainted with " that art.

" In short, we soon separated, and I went by the ad-" vice of a physician to drink the Bath waters: for my " violent affliction, added to a fedentary life, had thrown " me into a kind of paralytic diforder, for which those " waters are accounted an almost certain cure. The fe-" cond day after my arrival, as I was walking by the river, " the fun shone so intensely hot (though it was early in " the year) that I retired to the shelter of some wil-" lows, and fat down by the river-side. Here I " had not been feated long before I heard a per-" fon on the other fide the willows, fighing and be-" moaning himfelf bitterly." On a fudden, having uttered " a most impious oath, he cried, " I am resolved to bear " it no longer," and directly threw himself into the " water. I immediately started, and ran towards the " place, calling at the fame time as loudly as I could for " affiftance. An angler happened luckily to be a fithing " a little below me, though fome very high hedge had " hid him from my fight. He immediately came up, " and both of us together not without fome hazard of " our lives, drew the body to the shore. At first we " perceived no fign of life remaining; but having held the " body up by the heels, (for we foon had affiftance enough)

" it discharged a vast quantity of water at the mouth, and at length began to discover some symptoms of

" breathing, and a little afterwards to move both its

" hands and its legs.

"An apothecary who happened to be present among others, advised that the body, which seemed now to have pretty well emptied itself of water, and which began to have many convulsive motions, should be directly taken up, and carried into a warm bed. This was accordingly performed, the apothecary and myself attending.

"As we were going towards an inn, for we knew not the man's lodgings, luckily a woman met us, who after fome violent fcreaming, told us, that the gentleman

" lodged at her house.

"When I had feen the man fafely deposited there, "I left him to the care of the apothecary, who, I "fuppose, used all the right methods with him: for the next morning I heard he had perfectly recovered his senses.

"I then went to vifit him, intending to fearch out, as well as I could, the cause of his having attempted so desperate an act, and to prevent, as far as I was able, his pursuing such wicked intentions for the suture. I was no sooner admitted into his chamber, than we both instantly knew each other; for who should this person be but my good friend Mr Watson! here I will not trouble you with what past at our first interview; for I would avoid prolixity as much as possible." Pray let us hear all," cries Partridge, "I want mighti-

" ly to know what brought him to Bath."

"You shall hear every thing material," answered the stranger; and then proceeded to relate what we shall proceed to write, after we have given a short breathing time to both ourselves and the reader.

CHAP. XIV.

In which the Man of the Hill concludes his History.

" MR Watson," continued the stranger, " very freely acquainted me, that the unhappy situation

"tion of his circumstances, occasioned by a tide of ill-

" luck, had in a manner forced him to a refolution of

" destroying himself.

" I now began to argue very feriously with him, in " opposition to this heathenish, or indeed diabolical prin-" ciple, of the lawfulness of felf-murder; and faid every

" thing which occurred to me on the subject; but, to

" my great concern, it feemed to have very little effect on " him. He feemed not at all to repent of what he had "done, and gave me reason to fear he would soon make

" a fecond attempt of the like horrible kind.

"When I had finished my discourse, instead of en-" deavouring to answer my arguments, he looked me " stedfastly in the face, and with a smile said, " You " are strangely altered, my good friend, since I remember "you. I question whether any of our bishops could " make a better argument against suicide than you have " entertained me with; but unless you can find fomebody " who will lend me a cool hundred, I must either hang, or drown, or starve; and in my opinion the last death

" is the most terrible of the three."

"I answered him very gravely, that I was indeed " altered fince I had feen him last. That I had found " leifure to look into my follies, and to repent of them. " I then advised him to pursue the same steps; and at " last concluded with an assurance, that I myself would " lend him a hundred pounds, if it would be of any fer-" vice to his affairs, and he would not put it into the

" power of a die to deprive him of it,

" Mr Watson, who seemed almost composed in slum-" ber, by the former part of my discourse, was roused " by the latter. He feized my hand eagerly, gave me a " thousand thanks, and declared I was a friend indeed: " adding, that he hoped I had a better opinion of him, "than to imagine he had profited fo little by experience " as to put any confidence in those damned dice, which " had fo often deceived him. "No, no,' cries he, 'let " me but once handsomely be set up again, and if ever " fortune makes a broken merchant of me afterwards, I " will forgive her.'

" I very well understood the language of fetting up, " and broken merchant. I therefore faid to him with a " very "very grave face, Mr Watson, you must endeavour to find out some business, or employment, by which you may procure a livelihood; and I promise you, could I see any probability of being repaid hereaster, I would advance a much larger sum than what you have mentioned, to equip you in any fair and honourable calling; but as to gaming, besides the baseness and wickedness of making it a profession, you are really, to my knowledge, unsit for it, and it will end in your certain ruin."

"Why now, that's ftrange," answered he, "neither you, nor any of my friends, would ever allow me to know any thing of the matter, and yet, I believe, I am as good a hand at every game as any of you all; and I heartily wish I was to play with you only for your whole fortune: I should defire no better sport, and I would let you name your game into the bargain: but come, my dear boy, have you the hundred in your pocket?"

"I answered, I had only a bill for 50 l. which I de"livered him, and promised to bring him the rest next
"morning; and, after giving him a little more advice,

" took my leave.

"I was indeed better than my word: for I returned to him that very afternoon. When I entered the room, I found him fitting up in his bed at cards with a notorious gamester. This fight, you will imagine, shocked me not a little; to which I may add the mortification of seeing my bill delivered by him to his antagonist, and thirty guineas only given in exchange for it.

"The other gamester presently quitted the room, and then Watson declared he was ashamed to see me; but," says he, "I find luck runs so damnably against me, that I will resolve to leave off play for ever. I have thought of the kind proposal you made me ever since, and I promise you there shall be no fault in me, if I

" do not put it in execution."

"Though I had no great faith in his promises, I produced him the remainder of the hundred in consequence
of my own; for which he gave me a note, which was
all I ever expected to see in return for my money.
We were prevented from any further discourse at
Vol. II.

"present,

present, by the arrival of the apothecary; who, with much joy in his countenance, and without even asking his patient how he did, proclaimed there was great news arrived in a letter to himself, which he said would shortly be public, "That the Duke of Monmouth was landed in the west with a vast army of Dutch; and that another vast sleet hovered over the coast of Norfolk, and was to make a descent there, in order to favour the duke's enterprize with a diversion on that side."

"This apothecary was one of the greatest politicians of his time. He was more delighted with the most paultry packet than with the best patient; and the highest joy he was capable of, he received from having a piece of news in his possession an hour or two sooner than any other person in the town. His advices, however, were seldom authentic; for he would swallow almost any thing as a truth, a humour which many made use of to impose upon him.

"Thus it happened with what he at present commu-"nicated; for it was known within a short time afterwards that the duke was really landed; but that his army confisted only of a few attendants; and as to the diver-

if fion in Norfolk, it was entirely false.

"The apothecary staid no longer in the room than while he acquainted us with his news; and then, without saying a syllable to his patient on any other subject, departed to spread his advices all over the town.

"Events of this nature in the public are generally apt to eclipfe all private concerns. Our discourse, therefore now, became entirely political. For my own part, I had been for some time very seriously affected with the danger to which the protestant religion was so visibly exposed under a popish prince, and thought the apprehension alone sufficient to justify that insurrection: for no real security can ever be found against the persecuting spirit of popery, when armed with power, except the depriving it of that power, as woeful experience presently shewed. You know how King James behaved after getting the better of this attempt; how little he valued either his royal word or coronationoath, or the liberties and rights of his people. But all

The Carte

had not the fense to foresee this at first; and therefore the Duke of Monmouth was weakly supported;
yet all could feel when the evil came upon them; and
therefore all united, at last, to drive out that king, against whose exclusion a great party among us had so
warmly contended, during the reign of his brother,
and for whom they now sought with such zeal and affection."

"What you fay," interrupted Jones, is very true; "and " it has often struck me, as the most wonderful thing I " ever read of in history, that so soon after this convin-" cing experience, which brought our whole nation to " join fo unanimously in expelling King James, for the " preservation of our religion and liberties, there should " be a party among us mad enough to defire the placing " his family again on the throne." "You are not in ear-" nest!" answered the old man; " there can be no such " party. As bad an opinion as I have of mankind, I " cannot believe them infatuated to fuch a degree! there " may be some hot-headed Papists led by their priests to " engage in this desperate cause, and think it a holy war: " but that Protestants, that are members of the Church of " England, should be such apostates, such Felos de se, I " cannot believe it; no, no, young man, unacquainted as " I am with what has past in the world for these last thirty " years, I cannot be so imposed upon as to credit so foolish " a tale: but I see you have a mind to sport with my ig-" norance." " Can it be possible;" replied Jones, "that " you have lived fo much out of the world as not to " know, that during that time there have been two rebel-" lions in favour of the fon of King James, one of which " is now actually raging in the very heart of the king-" dom?" At these words the old gentleman starting up, and in a most solemn tone of voice, conjured Jones by his Maker to tell him if what he faid was really true: which the other as folemnly affirming, he walked feveral turns about the room in a profound filence, then cried, then laughed, and at last fell down on his knees, and bleffed God, in a loud thankfgiving prayer, for having delivered him from all fociety with human nature, which could be capable of fuch monstrous extravagancies. After which,

being reminded by Jones that he had broke off his ftory,

he refumed it again in this manner.

" As mankind, in the days I was fpeaking of, was " not yet arrived to that pitch of madness which I find they are capable of now, and which, to be fure, I " have only escaped by living alone, and at a distance " from the contagion, there was a confiderable rifing in " favour of Monmouth; and, my principles strongly in-" clining me to take the fame part, I determined to join in him; and Mr Watson, from different motives, concur-" ring in the same resolution, (for the spirit of a gameet ster will carry a man as far upon such an occasion as " the spirit of patriotism,) we soon provided ourselves with " all necessaries, and went to the duke at Bridgewater. "The unfortunate event of this enterprize you are, " I conclude, as well acquainted with as myfelf. I ef-" caped, together with Mr Watson, from the battle at " Sedgemore, in which action I received a flight wound. "We rode near forty miles together on the Exeter road, " and then abandoning our horses, scrambled as well as " we could through the fields and bye-roads, till we ar-" rived at a little wild hut on a common, where a poor " old woman took all the care of us she could, and dref-" fed my wound with falve, which quickly healed it."

" Pray, Sir, where was the wound," fays Partridge. "The stranger satisfied him it was in his arm, and then continued his narrative. "Here, Sir," faid he, "Mr "Watson left me the next morning, in order, as he pre-" tended, to get us some provision from the town of "Cullumpton; -but -can I relate it? or can you believe " it ?—This Mr Watson, this friend, this base, barbarous, " treacherous villain, betrayed me to a party of horse be-" longing to King James, and at his return delivered me " into their hands.

"The foldiers, being fix in number, had now feized " me, and were conducting me to Taunton gaol; but " neither my present situation nor the apprehensions of "what might happen to me, were half so irksome to my " mind, as the company of my false friend, who, having " furrendered himfelf, was likewise considered as a pri-" foner, though he was better treated, as being to make " his peace at my expence. He at first endeavoured to "excuse his treachery; but when he received nothing but scorn and upbraiding from me, he soon changed his note, abused me as the most atrocious and malicious rebel, and laid all his own guilt to my charge, who, as he declared, had solicited, and even threatened him, to make him take up arms against his gracious,

" as well as lawful fovereign.

"This false evidence, (for in reality he had been much the forwarder of the two), stung me to the quick, and raised an indignation scarce conceivable by those who have not selt it. However, fortune at length took pity on me; for as we were got a little beyond Wellington, in a narrow lane, my guards received a false alarm, that near fifty of the enemy were at hand, upon which they shifted for themselves, and left me and my betrayer to do the same. That villain immediately ran from me, and I am glad he did, or I should have certainly endeavoured, though I had no arms, to have executed vengeance on his baseness.

"I was now once more at liberty, and immediately withdrawing from the highway into the fields, I tra"velled on, scarce knowing which way I went, and making it my chief care to avoid all public roads, and all towns, nay, even the most homely houses; for I imagined every human creature whom I saw, desirous

" of betraying me.

"At last, after rambling several days about the country, during which the fields afforded me the same bed,
and the same food, which nature bestows on our savage brothers of the creation, I at length arrived at
this place, where the folitude and wildness of the country invited me to fix my abode. The first person with
whom I took up my habitation was the mother of this
old woman, with whom I remained concealed, till the
news of the glorious Revolution put an end to all my
apprehensions of danger, and gave me an opportunity
of once more visiting my own home, and of inquiring
a little into my affairs, which I soon settled as agreeably to my brother as to myself: having resigned every
thing to him, for which he paid me the sum of a thoufand pounds, and settled an annuity on me for life.

"His behaviour in this last instance, as in all others,

Ch

46 .

46

44

66

ot

"

66

44

66

46

" was felfish and ungenerous. I could not look on him
as my friend, nor indeed did he desire that I should;
fo I presently took my leave of him, as well as of my
other acquaintance: and from that day to this, my

" history is little better than a blank."

" And is it possible, Sir," faid Jones, " that you can " have refided here from that day to this?" "O no. "Sir," answered the gentleman, "I have been a great " traveller, and there are few parts of Europe with " which I am not acquainted." "I have not, Sir," cried "Iones, " the affurance to ask it of you now. Indeed " it would be cruel, after so much breath as you have al-" ready fpent. But you will give me leave to wish for " fome farther opportunity of hearing the excellent ob-" fervations, which a man of your fense and knowledge " of the world must have made in so long a course of tra-" vels." " Indeed, young gentleman," answered the ftranger, "I will endeavour to fatisfy your curiofity on "this head likewise, as far as I am able." Jones attempted fresh apologies, but was prevented, and while he and Partridge fat with greedy and impatient ears, the stranger proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. XV.

A brief history of Europe. And a curious discourse between Mr Jones and the Man of the Hill.

In Italy the landlords are very filent. In France they are more talkative, but yet civil. In Germany and Holland they are generally very impertinent. And as for their honefty, I believe it is pretty equal in all those countries. The Laquais a Louange are sure to lose no opportunity of cheating you; and as for the postilions, I think they are pretty much alike all the world over. These, Sir, are the observations on men which I made in my travels; these were the only men I ever conversed with. My design, when I went abroad, was to divert myself by seeing the wordrous variety of prospects, beasts, birds, sisses, and vegetables, with which God has been pleased to enrich the several parts of this globe.—A variety, which as it

"must give great pleasure to a contemplative beholder,
so doth it admirably display the power, and wisdom,
and goodness of the Creator. Indeed, to say the truth,
there is but one work in his whole creation that doth
him any dishonour, and with that I have long since

" avoided holding any conversation."

"You will pardon me," cries Jones, "but I have al-" ways imagined, that there is in this very work you " mention, as greatvariety as in all the rest; for besides the " difference of inclinations, customs and climates have, "I am told, introduced the utmost diversity into hu-" man nature." " Very little indeed," answered the other; "those who travel in order to acquaint themselves " with the different manners of men, might spare them-" felves much pains. by going to a carnival at Venice; for " there they will fee at once all which they can discover " in the feveral courts of Europe;—the fame hypocrify, " the fame fraud; in thort, the fame follies and vices, " dressed in different habits. In Spain these are equip-" ped with much gravity; and in Italy, with vast splen-" dor. In France, a knave is dreffed like a fop; and in " the northern countries, like a floven. But human na-" ture is every where the same, every where the object of " detestation and fcorn.

"As for my own part, I past through all these nations, as you perhaps may have done through a croud
at a shew, jostling to get by them, holding my nose
withone hand, and defending my pockets with the
other, without speaking a word to any of them, while
I was pressing on to see what I wanted to see; which,
however entertaining it might be in itself, scarce made

"me amends for the trouble the company gave me."

"Did not you find fome of the nations among which
"you travelled, less troublesome to you than others?"
faid Jones. "O yes," replied the old man; "the Turks
"were much more tolerable to me than the Christians.

For they are men of profound taciturnity, and never
disturb a stranger with questions. Now and then
indeed they bestow a short curse upon him, or spit in
his face as he walks in the streets, but then they have
done with him; and a man may live an age in their
country without hearing a dozen words from them.

But of all the people I ever faw, heaven defend me from the French. With their damned prate and civilities, and doing the honour of their nation to ftrangers, (as they are pleafed to call it,) but indeed fetting forth their own vanity; they are fo trouble-fome, that I had infinitely rather pass my life with the Hottentots, than set my foot in Paris again. They are a nasty people, but their nastiness is mostly without; whereas in France, and some other nations that I won't name, it is all within, and makes them stink much more to my reason than that of Hottentots does to my nose.

"Thus, Sir, I have ended the history of my life; for " as to all that feries of years, during which I have lived " retired here, it affords no variety to entertain you, and " may be almost considered as one day. The retirement " has been fo compleat, that I could hardly have enjoyed " a more absolute solitude in the deserts of the Thebais, " than here in the midst of this populous kingdom. As "I have no estate, I am plagued with no tenants or " flewards: my annuity is paid me pretty regularly, as " indeed it ought to be; for it is much less than what I " might have expected, in return for what I gave up. " Vifits I admit none; and the old woman who keeps 46 my house knows, that her place entirely depends upon " her faving me all the trouble of buying the things that " I want, keeping off all folicitation or bufiness from me, " and holding her tongue whenever I am within hearing. " As my walks are all by night, I am pretty fecure in this " wild, unfrequented place, from meeting any company. " Some few perfons I have met by chance, and fent " them home heartily frighted, as from the oddness of " my dress and figure they took me for a ghost or a hob-" goblin. But what has happened to-night shews, that " even here I cannot be fafe from the villany of men; " for without your affiftance I had not only been robbed, " but very probably murdered."

Jones thanked the stranger for the trouble he had taken in relating his story, and then expressed some wonder how he could possibly endure a life of such solitude; "in which," says he, "you may well complain of the want of variety. Indeed, I am aftonished how you "have

" have filled up, or rather killed, fo much of your time." "I am not at all furprised," answered the other, that to one whose affections and thoughts are fixed on " the world, my hours should appear to have wanted em-" ployment in this place; but there is one fingle act; " for which the whole life of man is infinitely too short. "What time can suffice for the contemplation and wor " ship of that glorious, immortal, and eternal Being, " among the works of whose stupendous creation, not " only this globe, but even those numberless luminaries, " which we may here behold fpangling all the fky, "though they should many of them be funs lighting " different fystems of worlds, may possibly appear but as a " few atoms, opposed to the whole earth which we inha-" bit? Can a man who, by divine meditations, is admit-" ted as it were, into the conversation of this ineffable, " incomprehensible Majesty, think days, or years, or " ages, too long for the continuance of fo ravishing an " honour? Shall the trifling amusements, the palling " pleasures, the filly business of the world, roll away our " hours too swiftly from us; and shall the pace of time " feem fluggish to a mind exercised in studies so high, so " important, and fo glorious? As no time is fufficient, " fo no place is improper for this great concern. On " what object can we cast our eyes, which may not in-" fpire us with ideas of his power, of his wisdom, and of " his goodness? It is not necessary, that the rising sun " should dart his fiery glories over the eastern horizon; " nor that the boisterous winds should rush from their " caverns, and shake the lofty forest; nor that the open-" ing clouds should pour their deluges on the plains : it " is not necessary, I say, that any of these should proclaim " his Majesty; there is not an insect, not a vegetable " of fo low an order in the creation, as not to be honour-" ed with bearing marks of the attributes of its great " Creator: marks not only of his power, but of his wif-" dom and goodness. Man alone, the king of this globe, " the last and greatest work of the supreme Being, be-" low the fun; man alone hath bafely dishonoured his " own nature, and by dishonesty, cruelty, ingratitude, " and treachery, hath called his Maker's goodness in " question, by puzzling us to account how a benevolent Vol. II.

" Being should form so foolish, and so vile an animal. "Yet this is the Being from whose conversation you

" think, I suppose, that I have been unfortunately re-" ftrained; and without whose bleffed society, life, in

" your opinion, must be tedious and insipid."

" In the former part of what you faid," replied Jones, "I must heartily and readily concur; but I believe, as " well as hope, that the abhorrence which you express " for mankind in the conclusion, is much too general. " Indeed you here fall into an error, which, in my lit-" tle experience, I have observed to be a very common " one, by taking the character of mankind from the " worst and basest among them; whereas indeed, as an " excellent writer observes, nothing should be esteemed " as characteristical of a species, but what is to be found " among the best and most perfect individuals of that " fpecies. This error, I believe, is generally committed " by those who, from want of proper caution in the " choice of their friends and acquaintance, have fuffered " injuries from bad and worthless men; two or three in-" frances of which are very unjustly charged on all hu-" man nature."

" I think I had experience enough of it," answered the other. " My first mistrefs, and my first friend be-" trayed me in the basest manner, and in matters which " threatened to be of the worst consequences, even to

" bring me to a shameful death."

"But you will pardon me," eries Jones, " if I desire " you to reflect who that mistress, and who that friend " were. What better, my good Sir, could be expected " in love derived from the stews, or in friendship first pro-" duced and nonrished at the gaming table? to take the " characters of women from the former instance, or of " men from the latter, would be as unjust as to affert, that " air is a nauseous and unwholesome element, because " we find it so in a jakes. I have lived but a short time " in the world, and yet have known men worthy of the " highest friendship, and women of the highest love." " Alas! young man," answered the stranger, "you 66 have lived, you confess, but a very short time in the

" world; I was fomewhat older than you when I was of

" the fame opinion."

no answer.

"You might have remained fo still," replied Jones, if you had not been unfortunate, I will venture to fay incautious, in the placing your affections. If there was indeed much more wickedness in the world than there is, it would not prove such general affections against human nature, tince much of this arrives by mere accident, and many a man who commits evil, is not totally bad and corrupt in his heart. In truth, none feem to have any title to affert human nature to be necessarily and universally evil, but those whose own minds afford them one instance of this natural depravity; which is not, I am convinced, your case."

"And such," said the stranger, "will be always the most backward to assert any such thing. Knaves will no more endeavour to persuade us of the base-ness of mankind, than a highwayman will inform you that there are thieves on the road. This would indeed be a method to put you on your guard, and to defeat their own purposes. For which reason, though knaves, as I remember, are very apt to abuse particular persons, yet they never cast any restections on human nature in general." The old gentleman spoke this so warmly, that, as Jones despaired of making a convert, and was unwilling to offend, he returned

The day now began to fend forth its first streams of light, when Jones made an apology to the stranger for having staid so long, and perhaps detained him from his rest. The stranger answered, "he never wanted rest less than at present; for that day and night were indifferent seasons to him, and that he commonly made use of the former for the time of his repose, and of the latter for his walks and lucubrations. However," said he, "it is now a most lovely morning, and if you can bear any longer to be without your own rest or food, I will gladly entertain you with the sight of some very fine prospects, which I believe you have not yet seen."

Jones very readily embraced this offer, and they immediately fet forward together from the cottage. As for Partridge, he had fallen into a profound repose, just as

U 2

the Aranger had finished his story; for his curiosity was satisfied, and the subsequent discourse was not forcible enough in its operation to conjure down the charms of sleep. Jones therefore left him to enjoy his nap; and as the reader may perhaps be, at this season, glad of the same favour, we will here put an end to the Eighth book of our history.

spece able to warmly, that as large filling being and warmly a different

In a day now beauth to beat hard hard in the life of the life of the state of the life of

Blows in the state of rix manage selects should

in the improvemental and the life

a Lashiyay a sa a matab aka na ya kasasa.

and Landon and Albert vitors & 1905

THE

read on the tradition rations of a set and ten addition of the Parkers

to commence of the control of the co HISTORY

FOUNDLING.

BOOK IX.

CONTAINING TWELVE HOURS.

CHAP. I.

Of those who lawfully may, and of those, who may not write Juch bistories as this.

MONG other good uses for which I have thought proper to inftitute their feveral introductory chapters, I have confidered them as a kind of mark or ftamp, which may hereafter enable a very indifferent reader to distinguish what is true and genuine in this historic kind of writing, from what is false and counterfeit. Indeed it feems likely that fome fuch mark may shortly become necessary, fince the favourable reception which two or three authors have lately procured for their works of this nature from the public, will probably ferve as an encouragement to many others to undertake the like. Thus a fwarm of foolish novels, and monstrous romances will be produced, either to the great impoverishing of bookfellers, or to the great loss of time, and depravation of morals in the reader; nay, often to the spreading of

Cl

all

hit

th

CE

f

tl

b

fi

scandal and calumny, and to the prejudice of the cha-

racters of many worthy and honest people.

I question not but the ingenious author of the Spectator was principally induced to prefix Greek and Latin mottos to every paper from the same consideration of guarding against the pursuit of those scribblers, who, having no talents of a writer but what is taught by the writing master, are yet no more asraid nor ashamed to assume the same titles with the greatest genius, than their good brother in the sable was of braying in the lion's skin.

By the device therefore of his motto, it became impracticable for any man to prefume to imitate the Spectators, without understanding at least one sentence in the learned languages. In the same manner I have now secured myself from the imitation of those who are utterly incapable of any degree of reslection, and whose learning is

not equal to an effay.

I would not be here understood to infinuate, that the greatest merit of such historical productions can ever lie in these introductory chapters; but, in fact, those parts which contain mere narrative only, afford much more encouragement to the pen of an imitator, than those which are composed of observation and reslection. Here I mean such imitators as Rowe was of Shakespeare, or as Horace hints some of the Romans were of Cato, by bare seet and sour faces.

To invent good stories, and tell them well, are possibly very rare talents, and yet I have observed few persons who have scrupled to aim at both: and if we examine the romances and novels with which the world abounds, I think we may fairly conclude, that most of the authors would not have attempted to shew their teeth (if the expression may be allowed me) in any other way of writing; nor could indeed have strung together a dozen sentences on any other subject whatever. Scribinus indostion dostique passim*, may be more truly said of the historian

Verse is the trade of every living wight.

and biographer, than of any other species of writing: for all the arts and sciences (even criticism itself) require some little degree of learning and knowledge. Poetry indeed may perhaps be thought an exception; but then it demands numbers, or something like numbers; whereas, to the composition of novels and romances, nothing is necessary but paper, pens, and ink, with the manual capacity of using them. This, I conceive, their productions shew to be the opinion of the authors themselves; and this must be the opinion of their readers, if indeed there

be any fuch.

Hence we are to derive that universal contempt, which the world, who always denominate the whole from the majority, have cast on all historical writers who do not draw their materials from records. And it is the apprehension of this contempt that hath made us so cautiously avoid the term romance, a name with which we might otherwise have been well enough contented; though, as we have good authority for all our characters, no less indeed than the vast authentic dooms-day book of nature, as is elsewhere hinted, our labours have sufficient title to the name of history. Certainly they deserve some distinction from those works; which one of the wittiest of men regarded only as proceeding from a pruritus, or indeed rather from a looseness of the brain.

But, besides the dishonour which is thus cast on one of the most useful as well as entertaining of all kinds of writing, there is just reason to apprehend, that, by encouraging such authors, we shall propagate much dishonour of another kind; I mean to the characters of many good and valuable members of society; for the dullest writers, no more than the dullest companions, are always inossensive. They have both enough of language to be indecent and abusive: and surely, if the opinion just above cited be true, we cannot wonder, that works so nastily derived should be nasty themselves, or make others so.

To prevent therefore, for the future, such intemperate abuses of leisure, of letters, and of the liberty of the press, especially as the world seems at present to be more than usually threatened with them, I shall here venture to

mention fome qualifications, every one of which are in a pretty high degree necessary to this order of historians.

The first is genius, without a full vein of which, no study, says Horace, can avail us. By genius I would understand that power, or rather those powers of the mind, which are capable of penetrating into all things within our reach and knowledge, and of distinguishing their effential differences. These are no other than invention and judgment; and they are both called by the collective name of genius, as they are of those gifts of nature which we bring with us into the world: concerning each of which many feem to have fallen into very great errors; for by invention, I believe, is generally understood a creative faculty, which would indeed prove most romance-writers to have the highest pretensions to it; whereas by invention is really meant no more (and fo the word fignifics) than discovery, or finding out, or, to explain it at large, a quick and fagacious penetration into the true effence of all the objects of our contemplation. This, I think, can rarely exist without the concomitancy of judgment: for how we can be faid to have discovered the true effence of two things, without difference, feems to me hard to conceive. Now this last is the undifputed province of judgment; and yet fome few men of wit have agreed, with all the dull fellows in the world, in representing these two to have been seldom or never the property of one and the fame person.

But though they should be so, they are not sufficient for our purpose, without a good share of learning; for which I could again cite the authority of Horace, and of many others, if any was necessary to prove, that tools are of no service to a workman, when they are not sharpened by art, or when he wants rules to direct him in his work, or hath no matter to work upon. All these uses are supplied by learning: for nature can only furnish us with capacity, or, as I have chose to illustrate it, with the tools of our profession; learning must sit them for use, must direct them in it, and, lastly, must contribute part at least of the materials. A competent knowledge of history, and of the Belles Lettres, is here absolutely necessary; and without this share of knowledge at least, to affect the character of an historian, is as vain as to endeavour at build-

ing a house without timber or mortar, or brick, or stone. Homer and Milton, though they added the ornament of numbers to their works, were both historians of our order, and masters of all the learning of their times.

Again, there is another fort of knowledge beyond the power of learning to beftow, and this is to be had by conversation. So necessary is this to the understanding the tharacters of men, that none are more ignorant of them than those learned pedants, whose lives have been entirely confumed in colleges, and among books; for, however exquifitely human nature may have been described by writers, the true practical fystem can be learnt only in the world. Indeed the like happens in every other kind of knowledge. Neither physic nor law are to be practically known from books. Nay, the farmer, the planter, the gardener, must perfect by experience what he hath acquired the rudiments of by reading. How accurately foever the ingenious Mr Miller may have defcribed the plant, he himself would advise his disciple to see it in the As we must perceive, that after the nicest ftrokes of a Shakespeare or a Johnson, of a Wycherly or an Otway, some touches of nature will escape the reader, which the judicious action of a Garrick, of a Cibber, or a Clive*, can convey to him; so, on the real stage, the character shews himself in a stronger and bolder light, than he can be described: and if this be the case in those fine and nervous descriptions, which great authors themselves have taken from life, how much more strongly will it hold when the writer himself takes his lines not from nature but from books! fuch characters are only the faint copy of a copy, and can have neither the justness nor the spirit of an original.

Now, this conversation in our historian must be univerfal, that is, with all ranks and degrees of men: for the

^{*} There is a peculiar propriety in mentioning this great actor, and these two most justly celebrated actresses in this place, as they have all formed themselves on the study of nature only, and not on the imitation of their predecessors. Hence they have been able to excel all who have gone before them; a degree of merit, which the servile herd of imitators can never possibly arrive at.

knowledge of what is called high life will not instruct him in low, nor, e converso, will his being acquainted with the inferior part of mankind teach him the manners of the fuperior: and though it may be thought, that the knowledge of either may fufficiently enable him to describe at least that in which he hath been conversant, yet he will even here fall greatly short of perfection; for the follies of either rank do in reality illustrate each other. For instance, the affectation of high life appears more glaring and ridiculous from the simplicity of the low; and again, the rudeness and barbarity of this latter strikes with much stronger ideas of absurdity, when contrasted with, and opposed to the politeness which controll the former. Befides, to fay the truth, the manners of our historians will be improved by both these conversations: for in the one he will eafily find examples of plainness, honesty, and fincerity; in the other of refinement, elegance, and a liberality of spirit; which last quality I myself have scarce ever feen in men of low birth and education.

Nor will all the qualities I have hitherto given my historian avail him, unless he have what is generally meant by a good heart, and be capable of feeling. The author who will make me weep, says Horace, must first weep himself. In reality, no man can paint a distress well, which he doth not feel while he is painting it; nor do I doubt, but that the most pathetic and affecting scenes have been writ with tears. In the same manner it is with the ridiculous. I am convinced I never make my reader laugh heartily, but where I have laughed before him, unless it should happen at any time, that, instead of laughing with me, he should be inclined to laugh at me, Perhaps this may have been the case at some passages in this chapter, from which apprehension I will here put an

end to it.

CHAP. II.

Containing a very surprising adventure indeed, which Mr Jones met with in his walk with the Man of the Hill.

A URORA now first opened her casements, Anglice, the day began to break, when Jones walked forth in company with the stranger, and mounted Mazzard Hill; of which they had no sooner gained the summit, than one of the most noble prospects in the world presented itself to their view, and which we would likewise present to the reader, but for two reasons: First, we despair of making those who have seen this prospect, admire our description. Secondly, we very much doubt whether those, who have not seen it, would understand it.

Jones stood for some minutes fixed in one posture, and directing his eyes towards the fouth; upon which the old gentleman asked what he was looking at with so much attention? "Alas, Sir," answered he with a figh, " I was endeavouring to trace out my own journey hi-"ther. Good Heavens! what a distance is Gloucester " from us! What a vast track of land must be between " me and my own home." " Ay, ay, young gentleman," cries the other, " and, by your fighing, from what you " love better than your own home, or I am mistaken. I " perceive now the object of your contemplation is not " within your fight, and yet I fancy you have a pleafure " in looking that way." Jones answered with a smile, " I find, old friend, you have not yet forgot the fenfa-" tions of your youth,—I own my thoughts were em-" ployed as you have gueffed."

They now walked to that part of the hill which looks to the north-west, and which hangs over a vast and extensive wood. Here they were no sooner arrived, than they heard at a distance the most violent screams of a woman, proceeding from the wood below them. Jones listened a moment, and then, without saying a word to his companion (for indeed the occasion seemed sufficiently pressing) ran, or rather slid, down the hill, and, without

the least apprehension or concern for his own safety, made directly to the thicket whence the found had issued.

He had not entered far into the wood before he beheld a most shocking sight indeed, a woman stript half naked, under the hands of a russian, who had put his garter round her neck, and was endeavouring to draw her up to a tree. Jones asked no questions at this interval; but fell instantly upon the villain, and made such good use of his trusty oaken stick, that he laid him sprawling on the ground before he could defend himself, indeed almost before he knew he was attacked; nor did he cease the prosecution of his blows, till the woman herself begged him to sorbear, saying, she believed he had sufficiently done his business.

The poor wretch then fell upon her knees to Jones, and gave him a thousand thanks for her deliverance: he presently lifed her up, and told her he was highly pleased with the extraordinary accident which had fent him thither for her relief, where it was so improbable she should find any: adding, that heaven seemed to have designed him as the happy instrument of her protection, "Nay," answered she, "I could almost conceive you to be some good angel, and to say the truth, you look more like an angel than a man, in my eye." Indeed he was a charming sigure, and if a very sine person, and a most comely set of features, adorned with youth, health, strength, freshness, spirit, and good-nature, can make a man resemble an angel, he certainly had that refemblance.

The redeemed captive had not altogether so much of the human angelic species: she seemed to be, at least, of the middle age, nor had her face much appearance of beauty; but her clothes being torn from all the upper part of her body, her breasts, which were well formed and extremely white, attracted the eyes of her deliverer, and for a few moments they stood silent, and gazing at each other; till the russian on the ground beginning to move, Jones took the garter which had been intended for another purpose, and bound both his hands behind him. And now, on contemplating his face, he discovered, greatly to his surprise, and perhaps not a little to his satisfaction, this very person to be no other than Ensign Northerton.

Nor



Ch

Nor had the enfign forgotten his former antagonist, whom he knew the moment he came to himself. His surprise was equal to that of Jones; but I conceive his

pleasure was rather less on this occasion.

Jones helped Northerton upon his legs, and then looking him stedfastly in the face, "I fancy, Sir," faid he, "you did not expect to meet me any "more in this world, and I confess I had as little ex"pectation to find you here. However, fortune, I see,
"hath brought us once more together, and hath given "me satisfaction for the injury I have received, even "without my own knowledge."

"It is very much like a man of honour indeed," anfwered Northerton, "to take fatisfaction by knocking a man down behind his back. Neither am I capable of giving you fatisfaction here, as I have no fword; but if you dare behave like a gentleman, let us go where I can furnish myself with one, and I will do by

" you as a man of honour ought."

"Doth it become fuch a villain as you are," cries Jones, " to contaminate the name of honour by affuming it? But I shall waste no time in discourse with you,—justice requires satisfaction of you now, and fhall have it." Then turning to the woman, he asked her, if she was near her home; or if not, whether she was acquainted with any house in the neighbourhood, where she might procure herself some decent clothes, in order to proceed to a justice of the peace?

She answered, she was an entire stranger in that part of the world. Jones then recollecting himself, said, he had a friend near, who would direct them; indeed he wondered at his not following; but in fact, the good Man of the Hill, when our hero departed, sat himself down on the brow, where, though he had a gun in his hand, he with great patience and unconcern had at-

tended the iffue.

Jones then stepping without the wood, perceived the old man sitting as we have just described him: he prefently exerted his utmost agility, and with surprizing expedition ascended the hill.

The old man advised him to carry the woman to Upton, which he said was the nearest town, and there he

would

C

would be fure of furnishing her with all manner of conveniencies. Jones, having received his direction to the place, took his leave of the Man of the Hill, and, defiring him to direct Partridge the same way, returned hasti-

ly to the wood.

Our hero, at his departure to make this enquiry of his friend, had confidered, that as the ruffian's hands were tied behind him, he was incapable of executing any wicked purposes on the poor woman. Besides, he knew he should not be beyond the reach of her voice, and could return foon enough to prevent any mischief. He had moreover declared to the villain, that, if he attempted the least infult, he would be himself immediately the executioner of vengeance on him. But Jones unluckily forgot, that, though the hands of Northerton were tied, his legs were at liberty; nor did he lay the least injunction on the prisoner, that he should not make what use of these he pleased. Northerton, therefore, having given no parole of that kind, thought he might without any breach of honour depart, not being obliged, as he imagined, by any rules, to wait for a formal discharge. He therefore took up his legs, which were at liberty, and walked off through the wood, which favoured his retreat; nor did the woman, whose eyes were perhaps rather turned towards her deliverer, once think of his escape, or give herfelf any trouble or concern to prevent it.

Jones therefore, at his return, found the woman alone. He would have spent some time in searching for Northerton; but she would not permit him, earnestly entreating that he would accompany her to the town whether they had been directed. "As to the fellow's escape," said she, "it gives me no uneasiness: for philosomphy and religion both preach up forgiveness of injuries. But for you, Sir, I am concerned at the trouble I give you; nay indeed, my nakedness may well make me ashamed to look you in the face: and, if it was not for the sake of your protection, I should wish to

" go alone."

Jones offered her his coat; but I know not for what reason, she absolutely refused the most earnest solicitations to accept it. He then begged her to forget both the causes of her confusion. "With regard to the former,"

fays

ne r-

1-

S

fays he, "I have done no more than my duty in protect"ing you; and, as for the latter, I will entirely remove
"it, by walking before you all the way; for I would not
"have my eyes offend you, and I could not answer for
"my power of resisting the attractive charms of so much

" beauty."

Thus our hero and the redeemed lady walked in the fame manner as Orpheus and Eurydice marched heretofore: but though I cannot believe that Jones was defignedly tempted by his fair one to look behind him, yet as the frequently wanted his affiftance to helpher over styles, and had besides many trips and other accidents, he was often obliged to turn about. However, he had better fortune than what attended poor Orpheus; for he brought his companion, or rather follower, safe into the samous town of Upton.

CHAP. III.

The arrival of Mr Jones, with his lady, at the inn, with a a very full description of the Battle of Upton.

HOUGH the reader, we doubt not, is very eager to know who this lady was, and how she fell into the hands of Mr Northerton, we must beg him to suspend his curiosity for a short time, as we are obliged, for some very good reasons, which hereafter perhaps he may guess,

to delay his fatisfaction a little longer. .

Mr Jones and his fair companion no sooner entered the town, than they went directly to that inn which in their eyes presented the fairest appearance to the street. Here Jones, having ordered a servant to shew him a room above stairs, was ascending, when the dishevelled fair, hastily following, was laid hold on by the master of the house, who cried, "Hey-day, where is that beggar-" wench going? Stay below stairs, I desire you;" but Jones at that instant thundered from above, "Let the "lady come up," in so authoritative a voice, that the good man instantly withdrew his hands, and the lady made the best of her way to the chamber.

Here Jones wished her joy of her safe arrival, and then departed, in order, as he promised, to send the landlady

up with fome clothes. The poor woman thanked him heartily for all his kindness, and said, "She hoped to see him again soon, to thank him a thousand times more. During this short conversation, she covered her white bosom as well as she could possibly with her arms: for Jones could not avoid stealing a sly peep or two, though he took all imaginable care to avoid giving any offence.

Our travellers had happened to take up their residence at a house of exceeding good repute, whither Irish ladies of strict virtue, and many northern lasses of the same predicament, were accustomed to resort in their way to Bath. The landlady therefore would by no means have admitted any conversation of a disreputable kind to pass under her roof. Indeed so foul and contagious are all such proceedings, that they contaminate the very innocent scenes where they are committed, and give the name of a bad house, or of a house of ill repute, to all those where they are suffered to be carried on.

Not that I would intimate, that fuch strict chastity, as was preserved in the temple of Vesta, can possibly be maintained at a public inn. My good landlady did not hope for such a blessing; nor would any of the ladies I have spoken of, or indeed any others of the most rigid note, have expected or insisted on any such thing. But to exclude all vulgar concubinage, and to drive all whores in rags from within the walls, is within the power of every one. This my landlady very strictly adhered to; and this her virtuous guests, who did not travel in rags, would

very reasonably have expected of her.

Now, it required no very blameable degree of suspicion to imagine, that Mr Jones and his ragged companion had certain purposes in their intention, which, tho tolerated in some christian countries, connived at in others, and practised in all, are however as expressly forbidden as murder, or any other horrid vice, by that religion which is universally believed in those countries. The landlady, therefore, had no sooner received an intimation of the entrance of the above-said persons, than she began to meditate the most expeditious means for their expulsion. In order to this, she had provided herself with a long and deadly instrument, with which, in time of peace,

X.

im

fee

re.

ite

for

gh

of-

cę

a.

ne

to

ve

Ís

1

)-

of

S

e

t

the chambermaid was wont to demolish the labours of the industrious spider. In vulgar phrase, she had taken up the broom stick, and was just about to fally from the kitchen, when Jones accosted her with the demand of a gown and other vestments to cover the half-naked woman above stairs.

Nothing can be more provoking to the human temper, nor more dangerous to that cardinal virtue, patience, than folicitations of extraordinary offices of kindness in behalf of those very persons with whom we are highly incensed. For this reason Shakespeare hath artfully introduced his Desdemonda soliciting favours for Cassio of her husband, as the means of inflaming not only his jealousy, but his rage, to the highest pitch of madness; and we find the unfortunate Moor less able to command his passion on this occasion, than even when he beheld his valued present to his wife in the hands of his supposed rival. In fact, we regard those efforts as insults on our understanding; and to such the pride of man is very difficultly brought to submit.

My landlady, though a very good-tempered woman, had, I suppose, some of this pride in her composition; for Jones had scale ended his request, when she fell upon him with a certain weapon, which, though it be neither long, nor sharp, nor hard, nor indeed threatens from its appearance with either death or wound, hath been however held in great dread and abhorrence by many wise men, nay by many brave ones; insomuch that some, who have dared to look into the mouth of a loaded cannon, have not dared to look into a mouth where this weapon was brandished, and, rather than run the hazard of its execution, have contented themselves with making a most pitiful and sneaking sigure in the eyes of all their acquaint-

ance.

To confess the truth, I am afraid Mr Jones was one of these; for, though he was attacked and violently belaboured with the aforesaid weapon, he could not be provoked to make any resistance, but in a most cowardly manner applied, with many entreaties, to his antagonist to desist from pursuing her blows: in plain English, he only begged her, with the utmost earnestness, to hear him; but, before he could obtain his request, my land-Vel. II.

already

lord himself entered into the fray, and embraced that fide of the cause which seemed to stand very little in need of assistance.

There are a'fort of heroes who are supposed to be determined in their chusing or avoiding a conflict, by the character and behaviour of the person whom they are to engage. These are said to know their men; and Jones, I believe, knew his woman; for, though he had been so submissive to her, he was no sooner attacked by her husband, than he demonstrated an immediate spirit of resentment, and injoined him silence under a very severe penalty; no less than that, I think, of being converted into such some such such as the submission of the submission of

The husband, with great indignation, but with a mixture of pity, answered, "You must pray first to be made "able; I believe I am a better man than yourself; ay, "every way, that I am;" and presently proceeded to discharge half a dozen whores at the lady above stairs; the last of which had scarce issued from his lips, when a swinging blow from the cudgel that Jones carried in his hand

affaulted him over the shoulders.

It is a question, whether the landlord or the landlady was the most expeditious in returning this blow. My landlord, whose hands were empty, fell to with his sist; and the good wise, uplisting her broom, and aiming at the head of Jones, had probably put an immediate end to the fray, and to Jones likewise, had not the descent of this broom been prevented,—not by the miraculous intervention of any heathen deity, but by a very natural, though unfortunate accident; viz. by the arrival of Partridge, who entered the house at that instant, (for fear had caused him to run every step from the hill,) and who, seeing the danger which threatened his master, or companion, (which you please to call him) prevented so fad a catastrophe, by catching hold of the landlady's arm as it was brandished aloft in the air.

The landlady foon perceived the impediment which prevented her blow; and being unable to rescue her arm from the hands of Partridge, she let fall the broom; and, then leaving Jones to the discipline of her husband, she fell with the utmost sury on that poor fellow, who had

already given some intimation of himself, by crying,

" Zounds! do you intend to kill my friend?"

Partridge, though not much addicted to battle, would not however stand still when his friend was attacked; nor was he much displeased with that part of the combat which sell to his share; he therefore returned my landlady's blows as soon as he received them; and now the sight was obstinately maintained on all parts, and it seemed doubtful to which side fortune would incline, when the naked lady, who had listened at the top of the stairs to the dialogue which preceded the engagement, descended suddenly from above, and without weighing the unfair inequality of two to one, fell upon the poor woman who was boxing with Partridge; nor did that great champion dessist, but rather redoubled his sury, when he found fresh succours were arrived to his assistance.

Victory must now have fallen to the side of the travellers, (for the bravest troops must yield to numbers,) had not Susan the chambermaid come luckily to support her mistress. This Susan was as two-handed a wench (according to the phrase,) as any in the country, and would, I believe, have beat the famous Thalestris herself, or any of her subject Amazons; for her form was robust and manlike, and every way made for fuch encounters. As her hands and arms were formed to give blows with great mischief to an enemy, so was her face as well contrived to receive blows without any great injury to herfelf: her nose being already flat to her face; her lips were so large, that no swelling could be perceived in them, and moreover they were fo hard, that a fift could hardly make any impression on them. Lastly her cheek-bones stood out, as if nature, had intended them for two bastions to defend her eyes in those encounters for which she seemed so well calculated, and to which she was most wonderfully well inclined.

This fair creature, entering the field of battle, immediately filed to that wing where her mistress maintained fo unequal a fight with one of either sex. Here she presently challenged Partriege to single combat. He accepted the challenge, and a most desperate sight began between them.

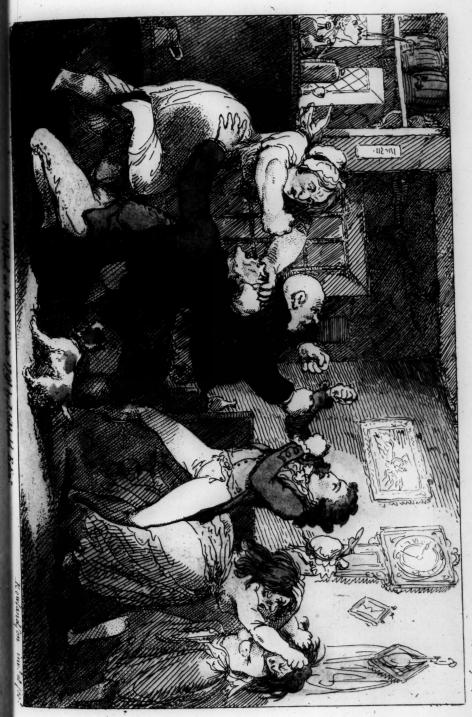
Now the dogs of war being let loofe, began to lick their Y 2 bloody

bloody lips; now victory with golden wings hung hovering in the air. Now fortune, taking her scales from her shelf, began to weigh the fates of Tom Jones, his female companion, and Partridge, against the landlord, his wife, and the maid; all which hung in exact balance before her; when a good-natured accident put fuddenly an end to the bloody fray, with which half of the combatants had already fufficiently feasted. This accident was the arrival of a coach and four; upon which my landlord and landlady immediately defifted from fighting, and at their entreaty obtained the same favour of their antagonists; but Susan was not so kind to Partridge; for that Amazonian fair having overthrown and bestrid her enemy, was now cuffing him luftily with both her hands without any regard to his request of a cessation of arms, or to those loud exclamations of murder which he roared forth.

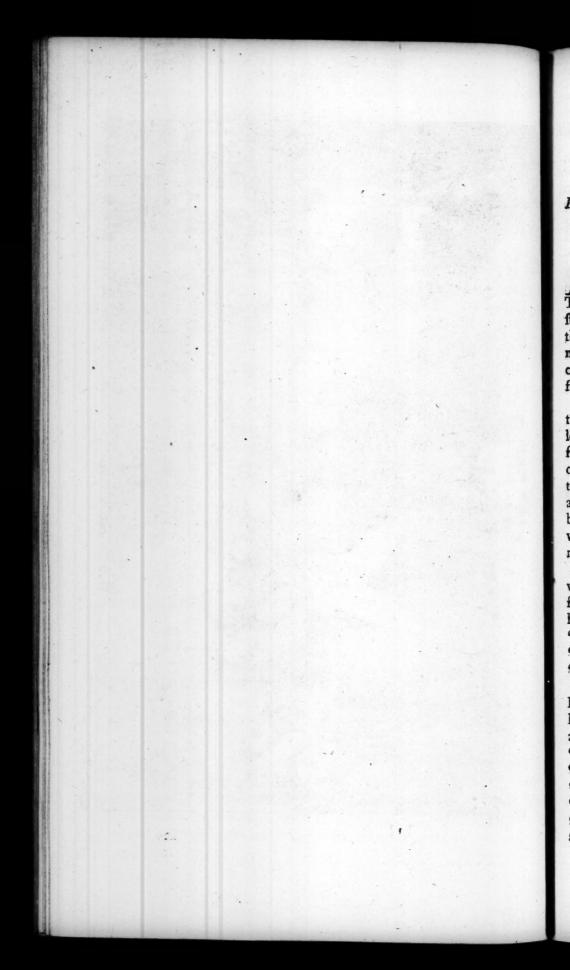
No fooner, however, had Jones quitted the landlord, than he flew to the rescue of his defeated companion, from whom he with much difficulty drew off the enraged chambermaid; but Partridge was not immediately sensible of his deliverance; for he still lay slat on the sloor, guarding his face with his hands, nor did he cease roaring; till Jones had forced him to look up, and to per-

ceive that the battle was at an end.

The landlord, who had no visible hurt, and the landlady hiding her well-scratched face with her handkerchief, ran both hastily to the door to attend the coach, from which a young lady and her maid now alighted. These the landlady presently ushered into the room where Jones had at first deposited his fair prize, as it was the best apartment in the house. Hither they were obliged to pass through the field of battle, which they did with the utmost haste, covering their faces with their handkerchiefs, as defirous to avoid the notice of any one. Indeed their caution was quite unnecessary: for the poor unfortunate Helen, the fatal cause of all the bloodshed, was entirely taken up in endeavouring to conceal her own face, and Jones was no less occupied in rescuing Partridge from the fury of Susan; which being happily effected, the poor fellow immediately departed to the pump to wash his face, and to stop that bloody torrent which Susan had plentifully fet a flowing from his noftrils. CHAP



r. 2 p. 172.



CHAP. IV.

In which the arrival of a man of war puts a final end to hoftilities, and causes the conclusion of a firm and lusting peace between all parties.

SERJEANT and a file of musqueteers, with a deferter in their custody, arrived about this time. The serjeant presently inquired for the principal magisfirate of the town, and was informed by my landlord, that he himself was vested in that office. He then demanded his billets, together with a mug of beer, and, complaining it was cold, spread himself before the kitchen fire.

Mr Jones was at that time comforting the poor diftreffed lady, who fat down at a table in the kitchen, and, leaning her head upon her arm, was bemoaning her misfortunes; but, least my fair readers should be in pain concerning a particular circumstance, I think proper here to acquaint them, that, before she had quitted the room above stairs, she had so well covered herself with a pillowber which she there found, that her regard to decency was not in the least violated by the presence of so many men as were now in the room.

One of the foldiers now went up to the ferjeant, and whispered something in his ear; upon which he sted-fastly fixed his eyes on the lady, and, having looked at her for near a minute, he came up to her, saying, "I "ask pardon, Madam, but I am certain I am not de"ceived, you can be no other person than Captain Wa-

" ters's lady !"

The poor woman, who in her present distress had very little regarded the face of any person present, no sooner looked at the serjeant, than she presently recollected him, and, calling him by his name, answered, "that she was "indeed the unhappy person he imagined her to be; but "added, I wonder any one should know me in this dissuife." To which the serjeant replied, "he was "very much surprised to see her ladyship in such a dress, and was afraid some accident had happened to her." An accident hath happened to me, indeed," says she,

66

4

46

66

..

66

"and I am highly obliged to this gentleman, (pointing to Jones), that it was not a fatal one, or that I am now living to mention it." "Whatever the gentleman hath done," cries the ferjeant, "I am fure the captain will make him amends for it; and if I can be of any fervice, your ladyship may command me, and I "shall think myself very happy to have it in my power to serve your landyship; and so indeed may any one, for I know the captain will well reward them for it."

The landlady, who heard from the stairs all that past between the serjeant and Mrs Waters, came hastily down, and, running directly up to her, began to ask pardon for the offences she had committed, begging that all might be imputed to ignorance of her quality: for "Lud!" Madam," says she, "how should I have imagined that a lady of your fashion would appear in such a dress? I am sure, Madam, if I had once suspected that your ladyship was your ladyship, I would sooner have burnt

my tongue out, than have faid what I have faid: and I hope your ladyship will accept of a gown, till you

" can get your own clothes."

"Prithee woman," fays Mrs Waters, "cease your impertinence; how can you imagine I should concern myself about any thing which comes from the lips of such low creatures as yourself? But I am surprised at your assurance in thinking, after what is past, that I will condescend to put on any of your dirty things. I would have you know, creature, I have a

" fpirit above that."

Here Jones interfered, and begged Mrs Waters to forgive the landlady, and to accept her gown: "For I "must confess," cries he, "our appearance was a little "suspicious when we first came in; and I am well assured ed, all this good woman did was, as she professed, out

" of regard to the reputation of her house."

"Yes, upon my truly was it," fays she; "the gentleman speaks very much like a gentleman, and I see
very plainly is so; and to be certain the house is well
known to be a house of as good reputation as any on
the road, and, though I say it, is frequented by gentry
of the best quality, both Irish and English. I defy
any

any body to fay black is my eye, for that matter. " And, as I was faying, if I had known your ladyship to " be your ladyship, I would as soon have burnt my fina gers as have affronted your ladyship, but truly, where " gentry come and spend their money, I am not willing " that they should be scandalized by a fet of poor shabby " vermin, that, wherever they go, leave more lice than " money behind them; fuch folks never raise my com-" passion: for, to be certain, it is foolish to have any from "them; and, if our justices did as they ought, they " would be all whipt out of the kingdom; for, to be " certain, it is what is most fitting for them. But, as for " your ladyship, I am heartily forry your ladyship hath " had a misfortune, and, if your ladyship will do me the "honour to wear my clothes till you can get some of " your ladyship's own, to be certain the best I have is at " your ladyship's service."

Whether cold, shame, or the persuasions of Mr Jones prevailed most on Mrs Waters, I will not determine; but she suffered herself to be pacified by this speech of my landlady, and retired with that good woman in order to

apparel herfelf in a decent manner.

My landlord was likewise beginning his oration to Jones, but was presently interrupted by that generous youth, who shook him heartily by the hand; and assured him of entire forgivenness, saying, " if you are satisfied, " my worthy friend, I promise you I am;" and indeed in one sense the landlord had the better reason to be satisfied; for he had received a belly-full of drubbing, where-

as Jones had scarce felt a single blow.

Partridge, who had been all this time washing his bloody note at the pump, returned into the kitchen at the instant when his master and the landlord were shaking hands with each other. As he was of a peaceable disposition, he was pleased with those symptoms of reconciliation; and, though this face bore some marks of Susan's sist, and many more of her nails, he rather chose to be contented with his fortune in the last battle, than to endeavour at bettering it in another.

The heroic Susan was likewise well contented with her victory, though it had cost her a black eye, which Partridge had given her at the first onset. Between these two,

therefore.

therefore, a league was struck, and those hands, which had been the instruments of war, became now the media-

tors of peace.

Matters were thus restored to a perfect calm, at which the serie can, though it may seem so contrary to the principles of his profession, testified his approbation. "Why now, that is friendly," said he; "d—n me, I hate to see two people bear ill-will to one another after they have had a tussel. The only way when friends quarrel, is to see it out fairly in a friendly manner, as a man may call it, either with fist, or sword, or pistol, according as they like, and then let it be all over: for my own part, d—n me if ever I love my friend better than when I am sighting with him. To bear malice is more like a Frenchman than an Englishman."

He then proposed a libation as a necessary part of the ceremony at all treaties of this kind. Perhaps the reader may here conclude, that he was well versed in ancient history; but this, though highly probable, as he cited no authority to support the custom, I will not affirm with any confidence. Most likely indeed it is, that he founded his opinion on very good authority, since he confirm-

ed it with many violent oaths.

Jones no sooner heard the proposal, than, immediately agreeing with the learned ferjeant, he ordered a bowl, or rather a large mug, filled with the liquor used on these occasions, to be brought in, and then began the ceremony himself. He placed his right hand in that of the landlord, and feizing the bowl with his left, uttered the usual words, and then made his libation. After which the fame was observed by all present. Indeed there is very little need of being particular in describing the whole form, as it differed fo little from those libations of which fo much is recorded in ancient authors, and their modern transcribers. The principal difference lay in two instances: for first, the present company poured the liquor only down their throats; and, adly, the ferjeant, who officiated as prieft, drank the laft; but he preferved, I believe, the ancient form in swallowing much the largest draught of the whole company, and in being the only person present who contributed nothing towards the libation,

libation, besides his good offices in assisting at the performance.

The good people now ranged themselves round the kitchen fire, where good humour seemed to maintain an absolute dominion, and Partridge not only forgot his shameful defeat, but converted hunger into thirst, and soon became extremely facetious. We must, however, quit this agreeable assembly for a while, and attend Mr Jones to Mrs Waters's apartment, where the dinner which he had bespoke was now upon the table. Indeed it took no long time in preparing, having been all dress three days before, and required nothing more from the cook than to warm it over again.

CHAP. V.

An apology for all herses who have good stomachs, with a description of a battle of the amorous kind.

TEROES, notwithstanding the high ideas which, by the means of flatterers, they may entertain of themselves, or the world may conceive of them, have certainly more of mortal than divine about them. However elevated their minds may be, their bodies at least (which is much the major part of most) are liable to the worst infirmities, and subject to the vilest offices of human nature. Among these latter, the act of eating, which hath by feveral wife men been confidered as extremely mean and derogatory from the philosophic dignity, must be in some measure performed by the greatest prince, hero, or philosopher upon earth; nay sometimes nature hath been fo frolicksome as to exact of these dignished characters a much more exorbitant share of this office than the hath obliged those of the lowest order to perform.

To fay the truth, as no known inhabitant of this globe is really more than man, so none need be ashamed of submitting to what the necessities of man demand; but when those great personages I have just mentioned condescend to aim at confining such low offices to themselves; as when by hoarding or destroying they seem desirous to

Vol. II.

prevent any others from eating, they then furely become

very low and despicable.

Now, after this short preface, we think it no disparagement to our hero to mention the immoderate ardour with which he laid about him at this season. Indeed it may be doubted, whether Ulysses, who by the way seems to have had the best stomach of all the heroes in that eating poem of the Odyssey, ever made a better meal. Three pounds at least of that sless which formerly had contributed to the composition of an ox, was now hon ured with becoming part of the individual Mr Jones.

This particular we thought ourselves obliged to mention, as it may account for our hero's temporary neglect of his fair companion, who eat but very little, and was indeed employed in considerations of a very different nature, which passed unobserved by Jones, till he had entirely satisfied that appetite which a fast of twenty-four hours had procured him; but his dinner was no sooner ended, than his attention to other matters revived; with these matters, therefore, we shall now proceed to acquaint

the reader.

Mr Jones, of whose personal accomplishments we have hitherto said very little, was in reality one of the hand-somest young fellows in the world. His sace, besides being the picture of health, had in it the most apparent marks of sweetness and good-nature. These qualities were indeed so characteristical in his countenance, that while the spirit and sensibility in his eyes, though they must have been perceived by an accurate observer, might have escaped the notice of the less discerning, so strongly was this good nature painted in his look, that it was remarked by almost every one who saw him.

It was, perhaps, owing to this, as to a very fine complexion, that his face, had a delicacy in it almost inexpressible, and which might have given him an air rather too effeminate, had it not been joined to a most masculine person and mien; which latter had as much in them of the Hercules, as the former had of the Adonis. He was besides active, genteel, gay, and good humoured, and had a flow of animal spirits, which enlivened every conversa-

tion where he was present.

When the reader hath duly reflected on these many

creation,

charms which all centered in our hero, and confiders at the fame time the fresh obligations which Mrs Waters had to him, it will be a mark more of prudery than candour to entertain a bad opinion of her, because she concei-

ved a very good opinion of him.

But whatever censures may be passed upon her, it is my business to relate matters of fact with veracity. Mrs Waters had, in truth, not only a good opinion of our hero, but a very great affection for him. To speak out boldly at once, she was in love, according to the present universally-received sense of that phrase, by which love is applied indiscriminately to the desirable objects of all our passions, appetites, and senses, and is understood to be that presence which we give to one kind of sood rather than to another.

But though the love to these several objects may possibly be one and the same in all cases, its operations however must be allowed to be different; for how much soever we may be in love with an excellent sirloin of beef, or bottle of Burgundy; with a damask rose, or Cremona siddle; yet we do never smile, nor ogle, nor dress, nor slatter, nor endeavour by any other arts or tricks to gain the affection of the said beef, &c. Sigh indeed we sometimes may; but it is generally in the absence, not in the presence of the beloved object. For otherwise we might possibly complain of their ingratitude and deafness, with the same reason as Pasiphae doth of her buil, whom she endeavoured to engage by all the coquetry practised with good success in the drawing room, on the much more sensible as well as tender hearts of the sine gentlemen there.

The contrary happens in that love, which operates between persons of the same species, but of different sexes. Here we are no sooner in love, than it becomes our principal care to engage the affection of the object beloved. For what other purpose indeed are our youth instructed in all the arts of rendering themselves agreeable? If it was not with a view to this love, I question whether any of those trades, which deal in setting off and adorning the human person, would procure a livelihood. Nay, those great polishers of our manners, who are by some thought to teach what principally distinguishes us from the brute

" ments.

creation, even dancing masters themselves might possibly find no place in society. In short, all the graces which young ladies and young gentlemen too learn from others; and the many improvements which, by the help of a looking-glass, they add of their own, are in reality those very spicula faces amoris, so often mentioned by Ovid; or, as they are sometimes called in our own language, The whole artillery of love.

Now Mrs Waters and our hero had no fooner fat down together, than the former began to play this artillery upon the latter. But here, as we are about to attempt a description hitherto unessayed either in profe or verse, we think proper to invoke the affistance of certain aerial beings, who will, we doubt not, come kindly to

our aid on this occasion.

"Say, then, ye graces, you that inhabit the heavenly mansions of Seraphina's countenance; for you are truly divine, are always in her presence, and well know all the arts of charming; say, what were the weapons most used to captivate the heart of Mr Jones?

" First, from two lovely blue eyes, whose bright orbs " flashed lightning at their discharge, flew forth two of pointed ogles; but, happily for our hero, hit only a " vast piece of beef which he was then conveying into " his plate, and harmless spent their force. " warrior perceived their miscarriage, and immediately " from her fair bosom drew forth a deadly figh. " figh, which none could have heard unmoved, and " which was fufficient at once to have fwept off a dozen " beaus; fo foft, fo fweet, fo tender, that the infinuating " air must have found its subtle way to the heart of our " hero, had it not luckily been driven from his ears by " the coarse bubbling of some bottled ale, which at that " time he was pouring forth. Many other weapons did " she essay; but the god of eating (if there be any such " deity, for I do not confidently affert it) preserved his votary; orperhaps it may not be dignus vindice nodus, and " the prefent security of Jones may be accounted for by " natural means; for as love frequently preferves from " the attacks of hunger, fo may hunger possibly, in some " cases, defend us against love.

"The fair one, enraged at her frequent disappoint-

"ments, determined on a fhort ceffation of arms; which interval the employed in making ready every engine of amorous warfare for the renewing of the attack when dinner should be over.

" No fooner then was the cloth removed, than she " again began her operations. First, having planted her " right eye fide-ways against Mr Jones, she shot from "its corner a most penetrating glance; which though " great part of its force was spent before it reached our "hero, did not vent itself absolutely without effect. "This the fair one perceiving, hastily withdrew her eyes, " and levelled them downwards, as if the was concerned " for what she had done: though by this means she de-" figned only to draw him from his guard, and in-" deed to open his eyes, through which she intended " to furprise his heart. And now, gently lifting up "those bright orbs which had already begun to make an " impression on poor Jones, she discharged a volley of " fmall charms at once from her whole countenance in a " fmile. Not a fmile of mirth, nor of joy; but a " fmile of affection, which most ladies have always ready " at their command, and which ferves them to show at " once their good-humour, their pretty dimples, and their " white teeth.

"This fmile our hero received full in his eyes, and " was immediately staggered with its force. He then " began to see the defigns of the enemy, and indeed to " feel their fuccess. A parley was now set on foot be-" tween the parties; during which the artful fair to flily " and imperceptibly carried on her attack, that she had " almost subdued the heart of our hero, before the again " repaired to acts of hostility. To confess the truth, I " am afraid Mr Jones maintained a kind of Dutch de-" fence, and treacherously delivered up the garrison, " without duly weighing his allegiance to the fair Sophia. " In fhort, no fooner had the amorous parley ended, and " the lady had unmasked the royal battery, by carlessly " letting her handkerchief drop from her neck, than the " heart of Mr Jones was entirely taken, and the fair " conqueror enjoyed the usual fruits of her victory."

Here the graces think proper to end their description, and here we think proper to end the chapter.

CHAP.

66

66

66

46

66

66

"

44

66

CHAP. VI.

A friendly conversation in the kitchen, which had a very common, though not very friendly conclusion.

THILE our lovers were entertaining themselves in the manner which is partly described in the foregoing chapter; they were likewise furnishing out an entertainment for their good friends in the kitchen. And this in a double sense, by affording them matter for their conversation, and at the same time drink, to enliven their spirits.

There were now affembled round the kitchen fire, befides my landlord and landlady, who occasionally went backward and forward, Mr Partridge, the serjeant, and the coachman who drove the young lady and her maid.

Partridge having acquainted the company with what he had learnt from the Man of the Hill, concerning the fituation in which Mrs Waters had been found by Jones, the ferjeant proceeded to that part of her history which was known to him. He faid, she was the wife of Mr Waters, who was a captain in their regiment, and had often been with him at quarters. "Some folks," fays he, "ufed " indeed to doubt whether they were lawfully married in " a church or no. But, for my part, that's no business " of mine; I must own, if I was put to my corporal oath, " I believe she is little better than one of us; and I fan-"cy the captain may go to heaven when the fun shines " upon a rainy day. But if he does, that is neither here " nor there; for he won't want company. And the " lady, to give the devil his due, is a very good fort of " lady, and loves the cloth, and is always defirous to " do strict justice to it; for the hath begged off many a so poor foldier, and, by her good-will, would never have any of them punished. But yet, to be fure Enfign "Northerton and she were very well acquainted toge-* ther at our last quarters, that is the very right and truth of the matter. But the captain he knows nothing about it; and as long as there is enough for " him too, what does it fignify? he loves her not a " bit the worse, and I am certain would run any man " through the body that was to abuse her, therefore I " won't abuse her, for my part. I only repeat what " other folks fay; and to be certain, what every body " fays there must be some truth in." " Ay, ay, a great " deal of truth, I warrant you," cries Partridge; " Ve-" ritas odium parit." " All a parcel of scandelous " stuff," answered the mistress of the house. " I am " fure, now the is dreft, the looks like a very good " fort of a lady, and the behaves herfelf like one; for " fhe gave me a guinea for the use of my clothes." " A very good lady indeed," cries the landlord; " and " if you had not been a little too hafty, you would not " have quarrelled with her as you did at first." " You " need not mention that, with my truly," answered she; " if it had not been for your nonfense, nothing had hap-" pened. You must be meddling with what did not " belong to you, and throw in your fool's discourse." "Well, well," answered he, "what's past cannot be " mended, fo there's an end of the matter." " Yes," cries she, " for this once; but will it be mended ever "the more hereafter? This is not the first time I have " fuffered for your numfcull's prate. I wish you would " always hold your tongue in the house, and meddle " only in matters without doors which concern you. "Don't you remember what happened about feven " years ago ?"-" Nay, my dear," returned he, "don't " rip up old stories. Come, come, all's well, and I " am forry for what I have done." The landlady was going to reply, but was prevented by the peace-making ferjeant, forely to the displeasure of Partridge, who was a great lover of what is called fun, and a great promoter of those harmless quarrels which tend rather to the production of comical than tragical incidents.

The serjeant asked Partridge whither he and his master were travelling? "None of your magisters," answered Partridge; "I am no man's servant, I as"sure you; for though I have had misfortunes in the world, I write gentleman after my name; and as poor and simple as I may appear now, I have "taught"

January 1

" taught grammar-school in my time, Sed hei mihi! " non fum quod fui." " No offence I hope, Sir," faid the serjeant: "Where then, if I may venture to be " fo bold, may you and your friend be travelling?" -" You have now denominated us right," fays Partridge, " Amici sumus: and I promise you my friend " is one of the greatest gentlemen in the kingdom;" (at which words both landlord and landlady pricked up their ears.) "He is the heir of 'fquire Allworthy." "What! the fquire who doth fo much " good all over the country?" cries my landlady. "Even he," answered Partridge. "Then I warrant," fays the, " he'll have a fwinging great estate here-" after." " Most certainly," answered Partridge. " Well," replied the landlady, "I thought the first moment I " faw him he looked like a good fort of gentleman: " but my husband here, to be fure, is wifer than any body." "I own, my dear," cries he, "it was a " mistake." " A mistake indeed!" answered she; but when did you ever know me to make fuch " mistakes?"-" But how comes it, Sir, cries the landlord, " that fuch a great gentleman walks about "the country afoot?" "I don't know," returned Partridge; "great gentlemen have humours fometimes. "He hath now a dozen of horses and servants at Glou-" cefter: and nothing would ferve him, but last night, " it being very hot weather, he must cool himself with " a walk to you high hill, whither I likewise walked " with him to bear him company; but if ever you " catch me there again, for I was never fo frightened " in all my life: We met with the strangest man "there." "I'll be hanged," cries the landlord, "if it was not the Man of the Hill, as they call him, if " indeed he be a man; but I know feveral people " who believe it is the Devil that lives there." " Nay, " nay, like enough," fays Partridge; " and now you " put it in my head of it, I verily and fincerely be-"lieve it is the Devil, though I could not perceive -" his cloven foot; but perhaps he might have the of power given him to hide that, fince evil spirits can appear in what shapes they please." " And pray, lagent bas reog esir "Sir," fays the ferjeant, "no offence I hope; but pray " what fort of a gentleman is the Devil? for I have " heard fome of our officers fay there is no fuch per-" fon, and that it is only a trick of the parsons to pre-" vent their being broke; for, if it was publicly known " that there was no Devil, the parsons would be of no " more use than we are in time of peace." " Those of-" ficers," fays Partridge, " are very great scholars, I " fuppose." " Not much of schollards neither," anfwered the ferjeant; " they have not half your learn-" ing, Sir, I believe: and to be fure, I thought there " must be a Devil, notwithstanding what they said, "though one of them was a captain; for methought, "thinks I to myfelf, if there be no Devil, how can " wicked people be fent to him, and I have read all " that upon a book." " Some of your officers," quoth the landlord, " will find there is a devil to their shame, " I believe. I don't question but he'll pay off some old " fcores upon my account. Here was one quartered up-" on me half a year, who had the conscience to take up " one of my best beds, though he hardly spent a shilling a-" day in the house, and suffered his men to roast cabba-" ges at the kitchen-fire, because I would not give them " a dinner on a Sunday. Every good Christian must de-" fire there should be a Devil for the punishment of such " wretches. " Harkee, landlord," faid the ferjeant, "don't abuse the cloth, for I won't take it." "D-n " the cloth," answered the landlord, " I have suffered " enough by them." " Bear witness, gentlemen," says the ferjeant, " he curfes the king, and that's high trea-" fon. "I curse the king! you villain," said the landlord. "Yes, you did," cries the serjeant; "you " curfed the cloth, and that's curfing the king. It's " all one and the fame; for every man who curfes the " cloth would curse the king if he durst; so for matter o'that, it's all one and the same thing." " Excuse me " there, Mr serjeant," quoth Partridge; " that's a non " fequitur." " Non of your outlandish linguo," anfwered the ferjeant, leaping from his feat; " I will not " fit still, and hear the cloth abused."-" You mistake " me, friend," cries Partridge; " I did not mean to abuse the cloth; I only said your conclusion was a non Vol. II.

" fequitur "." You are another," cries the ferjeant, " an " you come to that. No more a fequitur than yourself. You are a pack of rascals, and I'll prove it; for I will " fight the best man among you for twenty pounds." This challenge effectually filenced Partridge, whose stomach for drubbing did not fo foon return after the hearty meal lately which he had been treated with; but the coachman, whose bones were less fore, and whose appetite for fighting was fomewhat sharper, did not so easily brook the affront, of which he conceived some part at least fell to his share. He started therefore from his feat, and, advancing to the ferjeant, fwore he looked on himfelf to be as good a man as any in the army, and offered to box for a guinea. The military man accepted the combat, but refused the wager; upon which both immediately stript and engaged, till the driver of horses was so well mauled by the leader of men, that he was obliged to exhauft his small remainder of breath in begging for quarte

The young lady was now desirous to depart, and had given orders for her coach to be prepared: but all in vain, for the coachman was disabled from performing his office for that evening. An ancient heathen would perhaps have imputed this disability to the god of drink no less than to the god of war; for, in reality, both the combatants had facrificed as well to the former deity as to the latter. To speak plainly, they were both dead-drunk, nor was Partridge in a much better situation. As for my landlord, drinking was his trade, and the liquor had no more effect on him, than it had on any other vessel in his house.

The mistress of the inn, being summoned to attend Mr Jones and his companion at their tea, gave a full relation of the latter part of the foregoing scene, and at the same time expressed great concern for the young lady, "who," the said, "was under the utmost uneasiness at being prevented from pursuing her journey. She is a sweet

^{*} This word, which the serjeant unhappily mistook for an affront, is a term in logic, and means, that the conclusion doth not follow from the premises.

" pretty creature," added she, " and I am certain I have feen her face before. I fancy she is in love, and is running away from her friends. Who knows but some

" young gentleman or other may be expecting her with

" a heart as heavy as her own."

Jones fetched a hearty figh at those words; of which, though Mrs Waters observed it, she took no notice while the landlady continued in the room; but after the departure of that good woman, she could not forbear giving our hero certain hints of her fuspecting some very dangerous rival in his affections. The aukward behaviour of Mr Jones on this occasion convinced her of the truth, without his giving her a direct answer to any of her questions; but she was not nice enough in her amours to be greatly concerned at the discovery. The beauty of Jones highly charmed her eye; but, as she could not see his heart, she gave herself no concern about it. She could feast heartily at the table of love, without reflecting that some other had already been, or hereafter might be, feasted with the same repast. A sentiment which, if it deals but little in refinement, deals however much in substance; and is less capricious, and perhaps less ill-natured and selfish than the defires of those females who can be contented enough to abstain from the possession of their lovers, provided they are fufficiently fatisfied that no one elfe possesses them.

CHAP. VII.

Containing a fuller account of Mrs Waters, and by what means she came into that distressful situation, from which she was rescued by Jones.

HOUGH nature hath by no means mixed up an equal share either of curiosity or vanity in every human composition, there is perhaps no individual to whom she hath not allotted such a proportion of both, as requires much art and pains too, to subdue and keep under. A conquest, however, absolutely necessary to every one who would in any degree deserve the characters of wisdom or good-breeding.

As Jones therefore might very justly be called a well-A a 2 bred

With

bred man, he had stifled all that curiosity which the extraordinary manner in which he had found Mrs Waters must be supposed to have occasioned. He had indeed at first thrown out some few hints to the lady; but when he perceived her industriously avoiding any explanation, he was contented to remain in ignorance, the rather as he was not without suspicion that there were some circumstances which must have raised her blushes, had she related the whole truth.

Now, fince it is possible that some of our readers may not so easily acquiesce under the same ignorance, and as we are very desirous to satisfy them all, we have taken uncommon pains to inform ourselves of the real fact, with the relation of which we shall conclude this book.

This lady then had lived fome years with one captain Waters, who was a captain in the fame regiment to which Mr Northerton belonged. She past for that gentleman's wife, and went by his name: and yet, as the ferjeant said, there were some doubts concerning the reality of their marriage, which we shall not at present take upon us to resolve.

Mrs Waters, I am forry to fay it, had for some time contracted an intimacy with the above-mentioned ensign, which did no great credit to her reputation. That she had a remarkable fondness for that young fellow is most certain; but whether she indulged this to any very criminal lengths, is not so extremely clear, unless we will suppose that women never grant every favour to a man but one, without granting him that one also.

The division of the regiment to which captain Waters belonged, had two days preceded the march of that company to which Mr Northerton was the ensign; so that the former had reached Worcester, the very day after the unfortunate rencounter between Jones and Northerton, which we have before recorded.

Now it had been agreed between Mrs Waters and the captain, that she would accompany him in his march as far as Worcester, where they were to take their leave of each other, and she was thence to return to Bath, where she was to stay till the end of the winter's campaign against the rebels.

With this agreement Mr Northerton was made acquainted. To fay the truth, the lady had made him an affignation at this very place, and promifed to ftay at Worcester till his division came thither; with what view, and for what purpose, must be left to the reader's divination: for though we are obliged to relate facts, we are not obliged to do a violence to our nature by any comments to the disadvantage of the loveliest part of the creation.

Northerton no fooner obtained a release from his captivity, as we have feen, than he hasted away to overtake Mrs Waters; which, as he was a very active, nimble fellow, he did at the last-mentioned city, some few hours after captain Waters had left her: at his first arrival he made no scruple of acquainting her with the unfortunate accident, which he made appear very unfortunate indeed; for he totally extracted every particle of what could be called fault, at least in a court of honour, though he left some circumstances which might be questionable in a court of law.

Women, to their glory be it spoken, are more generally capable of that violent and apparently disinterested passion of love, which seeks only the good of its object, than men. Mrs Waters, therefore, was no sooner apprized of the danger to which her lover was exposed, than she lost every consideration besides that of his safety; and this being a matter equally agreeable to the gentleman, it became the immediate subject of debate between them.

After much confultation on this matter, it was at length agreed, that the enfign should go across the country to Hereford, whence he might find some conveyance to one of the sea-ports in Wales, and thence might make his escape abroad: in all which expedition Mrs Waters declared she would bear him company, and for which she was able to surnish him with money; a very material article to Mr Northerton, she having then in her pocket three bank notes to the amount of 901. besides some cash, and a diamond ring of pretty considerable value on her singer: all which she with the utmost considerable value on her singer: all which she with the utmost considerable by these means sinspire him with a design of robbing her. Now, as they

th

de

fte

W

th

fe

to

fa

he

th

of

ei

VE

of

01

fe

h

01

ai

01

tl

h

W

0

21

must, by taking horses from Worcester, have furnished any pursuers with the means of hereafter discovering their rout, the ensign proposed, and the lady presently agreed, to make their first stage on foot, for which purpose the

hardness of the frost was very seasonable.

The main part of the lady's baggage was already at Bath, and she had nothing with her at present besides a very small quantity of linen, which the gallant undertook to carry in his own pockets. All things, therefore, being settled in the evening, they arose early the next morning, and at five o'clock departed from Worcester, it being then above two hours before day; but the moon, which was then at the full, gave them all the light she was capable of affording.

Mrs Waters was not of that delicate race of women, who are obliged to the invention of vehicles for the capacity of removing themselves from one place to another, and with whom consequently a coach is reckoned among the necessaries of life. Her limbs were indeed full of strength and agility; and, as her mind was no less animated with spirit, she was persectly able to keep

pace with her nimble lover.

Having travelled on for fome miles in a high road, which Northerton faid he was informed led to Hereford, they came at the break of day to the fide of a large wood, where he suddenly stopped, and, affecting to meditate a moment with himself, expressed some apprehensions from travelling any longer in so public a way: upon which he easily persuaded his fair companion to strike with him into a path, which seemed to lead directly through the wood, and which at length brought them both to the bottom of Mazzard-hill.

Whether the execrable scheme, which he now attempted to execute, was the effect of previous deliberation, or whether it now first came into his head, I cannot determine. But being arrived at this lonely place, where it was very improbable he should meet with any interruption, he suddenly slipped his garter from his leg, and, laying violent hands on the poer woman, endeavoured to perpetrate that dreadful and detestable fact, which we have before commemorated, and which

which the providential appearance of Jones did fo fortu-

nately prevent.

Happy was it for Mrs Waters that she was not of the weakest order of females; for no sooner did she perceive, by his tying a knot on his garter, and by his declarations, what his hellish intentions were, than she stood stoutly to her defence, and so strongly struggled with her enemy, screaming all the while for affistance, that she delayed the execution of the villain's purpose several minutes; by which means Mr Jones came to her relief at that very instant, when her strength failed, and she was totally overpowered, and delivered her from the russian's hands, with no other loss than that of her clothes, which were torn from her back, and of the diamond ring, which, during the contention, either dropped from her singer, or was wrenched from it by Northerton.

Thus, reader, we have given thee the fruits of a very painful inquiry, which, for thy fatisfaction, we have made into this matter! and here we have opened to thee a scene of folly, as well as villainy, which we could scarce have believed a human creature capable of being guilty of, had we not remembered, that this fellow was at that time firmly persuaded that he had already committed a murder, and had forfeited his life to the law. As he concluded, therefore, that his only safety lay in slight, he thought the possessing himself of this poor woman's money and ring, would make him amends for the additional burden he was to lay on

his conscience.

And here, reader, we must strictly caution thee, that thou dost not take any occasion, from the misbehaviour of such a wretch as this, to reslect on so worthy and honourable a body of men as are the officers of our army in general. Thou wilt be pleased to consider, that this fellow, as we have already informed thee, had neither the birth nor education of a gentieman, nor was a proper person to be enrolled among the number of such. If therefore his baseness can justly reslect on any besides himself, it must be only on those who gave him his commission.

HISTORY

OF A

FOUNDLING.

BOOK X.

IN WHICH THE HISTORY GOES FORWARD ABOUT TWELVE HOURS.

CHAP. I.

Containing instructions very necessary to be perused by modern Critics.

READER, it is impossible we should know what fort of person thou wilt be: for perhaps thou may'st be as learned in human nature as Shakespeare himself was, and perhaps thou may'st be no wiser than some of his editors. Now lest this latter should be the case, we think proper, before we go any farther together, to give thee a few wholesome admonitions, that thou may'st not as grossly misunderstand and misrepresent us, as some of the said editors have misunderstood and misrepresented their author.

First then, we warn thee not too hastily to condemn any of the incidents in this our history, as impertinent and foreign to our main design, because thou dost not immediately conceive in what manner such incident may conduce conduce to that defign. This work may indeed be confidered as a great creation of our own; and for a little reptile of a critic to prefume to find fault with any of its parts, without knowing the manner in which the whole is connected, and before he comes to the final cataftrophe, is a most prefumptuous absurdity. The allusion and metaphor we have here made use of, we must acknowledge to be infinitely too great for our occasion; but there is, indeed, no other, which is at all adequate to express the difference between an author of the first rate, and a critic of the lowest.

Another caution we would give thee, my good reptile, is, that thou dost not find out too near a resemblance between certain characters here introduced; as forinstance, between the landlady who appears in the seventh book, and her in the ninth. Thou art to know, friend, that there are certain characteristics, in which most individuals of every profession and occupation agree. able to preserve these characteristics, and at the same time to diversify their operations, is one talent of a good writer. Again, to mark the nice distinction between two persons actuated by the same vice or folly, is another; and as this last talent is found in very few writers, so is the true discernment of it found in as few readers; though, I believe, the observation of this forms a very principal pleasure in those who are capable of the discovery: every person, for instance, can distinguish between Sir Epicure Mammon and Sir Fopling Flutter: but to note the difference between Sir Fopling Flutter and Sir Courtly Nice, requires more exquisite judgment: for want of which, vulgar spectators of plays very often do great injustice in the theatre; where I have fometimes known a poet in danger of being convicted as a thief, upon much worfe evidence than the refemblance of hands hath been held to be in the law. In reality, I apprehend every amorous widow on the stage would run the hazard of being condemned as a servile imitation of Dido, but that happily very few of our play-house critics understand enough of Latin to read Virgil.

In the next place, we must admonish thee, my worthy friend, (for, perhaps, thy heart may be better than thy head,) not to condemn a character as a bad one, be-Vol. II.

Bb ± cause

CI

bu

cause it is not perfectly a good one. If thou dost delight in these models of perfection, there are books enow written to gratify thy taste; but as we have not, in the course of our conversation, ever happened to meet with any such person, we have not chosen to introduce any such here. To say the truth, I a little question whether mere man ever arrived at this consummate degree of excellence, as well as whether there hath ever existed a monster bad enough to verify that

---Nulla virtute redemptum

A vitiis----*

in Juvenal: nor do I, indeed, conceive the good purposes ferved by inserting characters of such angelic perfection, or such diabolical depravity, in any work of invention: since, from contemplating either, the mind of a man is more likely to be overwhelmed with forrow and shame, than to draw any good uses from such patterns; for in the former instance, he may be both concerned and ashamed to see a pattern of excellence, in his nature, which he may reasonably despair of ever arriving at; and, in contemplating the latter, he may be no less affected with those uneasy sensations, at seeing the nature, of which he is a partaker, degraded into so odious and detestable a creature.

In fact, if there be enough of goodness in a character to engage the admiration and affection of a well-disposed mind, though there should appear some of those little blemishes, quas bumana parum cavit natura, they will raise our compassion rather than our abhorrence. Indeed, nothing can be of more moral use, than the impersections which are seen in examples of this kind; since such form a kind of surprise, more apt to affect and dwell upon our minds, than the faults of very vicious and wicked persons. The soibles and vices of men, in whom there is great mixture of good, become more glaring objects from the virtues which contrast them, and shew their deformity: and, when we find such vices attended

^{*} Whose vices are not allayed with a fingle virtue.

with their evil consequence to our favourite characters, we are not only taught to shun them for our own sake, but to hate them for the mischiefs they have already brought on those we love.

And now, my friend, having given you these few admonitions, we will, if you please, once more set forward

with our history.

CHAP. II.

Containing the arrival of an Irish gentleman, with very extraordinary adventures which ensued at the inn.

TOW the little trembling hare, which the dread of all her numerous enemies, and chiefly of that cunning, cruel, carnivorous animal, man, had confined all the day to her lurking-place, sports wantonly o'er the lawns: now on fome hollow tree the owl, shrill chorister of the night, hoots forth notes that might charm the ears of fome modern connoisseurs in music: now, in the imagination of the half-drunk clown, as he staggers thro' the churchyard, or rather charnel-yard to his home, fear paints the bloody hobgoblin: now thieves and ruffians are awake, and honest watchmen fast asleep: in plain English, it was now midnight; and the company at the inn, as well those who have been already mentioned in this history, as some others who arrived in the evening, were all in bed. Only Susan the chambermaid was now stirring, she being obliged to wash the kitchen, before she retired to the arms of the fond, expecting hoftler.

In this posture were affairs at the inn, when a gentleman arrived there post. He immediately alighted from his horse, and, coming up to Susan, inquired of her, in a very abrupt and confused manner, being almost out of breath with eagerness, whether there was any lady in the house. The hour of the night, and the behaviour o the man, who stared very wildly all the time, a little surfprised usan, so that she hesitated before she made anyanswer: upon which the gentleman, with redoubled eagerness, begged her to give him a true information, saying, he had lost his wife, and was come in pursuit of her. "Upon my shoul," cries he, "I have been near

Bb 2 " catching

Ch

loc

fel

the

fel

tle

bu

ta

catching her already in two or three places, if I had

of not found her gone just as I came up to her. If she be in the house, do carry me up in the dark, and shew

" her to me; and, if she be gone away before me, do

tell me which way I shall go after her to meet her, and, " upon my shoul, I will make you the richest poor wo-

"man in the nation." He then pulled out a handful of guineas, a fight which would have bribed persons of much greater consequence than this poor wench, to much

worse purposes.

Susan, from the account she had received of Mrs Waters, made not the least doubt, but that she was the very identical stray whom the right owner pursued. As she concluded, therefore, with great appearance of reason, that she never could get money in an honester way than by restoring a wife to her husband, she made no scruple of affuring the gentleman, that the lady he wanted was then in the house; and was prefently afterwards prevailed upon (by very liberal promifes, and fome earnest paid into her hands,) to conduct him into the bed-chamber of Mrs Waters.

It hath been a custom long established in the polite world, and that upon very folid and fubstantial reasons, that a husband shall never enter his wife's apartment without first knocking at the door. The many excellent uses of this custom need scarce be hinted to a reader who hath any knowledge of the world; for by this means the lady hath time to adjust herself, or to remove any difagreeable object out of the way, for there are some fituations, in which nice and delicate women would not

be discovered by their husbands.

To fay the truth, there are feveral ceremonies infituted among the polished part of mankind, which, though they may, to coarfer judgments, appear as matters of mere form, are found to have much substance in them, by the more discerning; and lucky would it have been, had the custom above-mentioned been observed by our gentleman in the prefent instance. Knock, indeed, he did at the door, but not with one of those gentle raps usual on fuch occasions. On the contrary, when he found the door locked, he flew at it with fuch violence, that the

lock

lock immediately gave way, the door burst open, and he

fell headlong into the room.

He had no fooner recovered his legs, than forth from the bed, upon his legs likewife, appeared—our hero himfelf, who, with a menacing voice, demanded of the gentleman who he was, and what he meant by daring to burst open his chamber in that outrageous manner?

The gentleman at first thought he had committed a mistake, and was going to ask pardon and retreat, when, on a sudden, as the moon shone very bright, he cast his eyes on stays, gowns, petticoats, caps, ribbons, stockings, garters, shoes, clogs, &c. all which lay in a disordered manner on the floor. All these operating on the natural jealousy of his temper, so enraged him, that he lost all power of speech; and, without returning any answer to Jones,

he endeavoured to approach the bed.

Jones immediately interpoling, a herce contention arose, which soon proceeded to blows on both sides. And
now Mrs Waters (for we must confess she was in the
same bed,) being, I suppose, awakened from her sleep,
began to scream in a most violent manner, crying out
Murder! Robbery! and more frequently Rape! which last,
some, perhaps, may wonder she should mention, who do
not consider that these words of exclamation are used by
ladies in a fright, as fa, la, la, ra, da &c. are in music, only
as the vehicles of sound, and without any fixed ideas.

Next to the lady's chamber was deposited the body of an Irish gentleman, who arrived too late at the inn to have been mentioned before. This gentleman was one of those whom the Irish call a calabalaro, or cavalier. He was a younger brother of a good family, and, having no fortune at home, was obliged to look abroad in order to get one; for which purpose he was proceeding to Bath

to try his luck with cards and the women.

This young fellow lay in bed reading one of Mrs Behn's novels; for he had been instructed by a friend, that he would find no more effectual method of recommending himself to the ladies than the improving his understanding, and filling his mind with good literature. He no sooner, therefore, heard the violent uproar in the next room, than he leapt from his bolster, and taking his sword in one hand, and the candle, which burnt by him,

Ch

len "

66

46

46

WC

66

44

44

66

tr

th

66

66

66

in the other, he went directly to Mrs Waters's chamber.

If the fight of another man in his shirt at first added some shock to the decency of the lady, it made her prefently amends by considerably abating her fears; for no sooner had the calabalaro entered the room, than he cried out, "Mr Fitzpatrick, what the devil is the meaning of this?" Upon which the other immediately answered. "O, "Mr Macklachlan, I am rejoiced you are here.—This villain hath debauched my wife, and is got into bed with her."—"What wife?" cries Macklachlan, "do not

"I know Mrs Fitzpatrick very well, and don't I fee that the lady, whom the gentleman who stands here in his

" fhirt is lying in bed with, is none of her?"

Fitzpatrick new perceiving, as well by the glimpse he had of the lady, as by her voice, which might have been distinguished at a much greater distance than he now stood from her, that he had made a very unfortunate mistake, began to ask many pardons of the lady; and then, turning to Jones, he said, "I would have you take no"tice, I do not ask your pardon, for you have beat me;
"for which I am resolved to have your blood in the
"morning."

Jones treated this menace with much contempt, and Mr Macklachlan answered, "Indeed, Mr Fitzpatrick, "you may be ashamed of your ownself, to disturb people at this time of night: if all the people in the inn were not asleep, you would have awakened them as you have me. The gentleman has served you very rightly. Upon my conscience, though I have no wife, if you had treated her so, I would have cut your throat."

Jones was fo confounded with his fears for his lady's reputation, that he knew neither what to fay or do; but the invention of women is, as hath been observed, much readier than that of men. She recollected that there was a communication between her chamber and that of Mr Jones; relying therefore on his honour, and her own affurance, she answered, "I know not what you mean, villains! I am wife to none of you. Help! Rape! Mur"der! Rape!"—And now the landlady coming into the room, Mrs Waters fell upon her with the utmost viru-

lence, faying, "She thought herfelf in a fober inn, and "not in a bawdy-house; but that a set of villains had broke into her room, with an intent upon her honour, if not upon her life; and both, she said, were equally dear to her."

The landlady now began to roar as loudly as the poor woman in bed had done before. She cried, " She was " undone, and that the reputation of her house, which " was never blown up before, was utterly destroyed." Then turning to the men, she cried, " What, in the de-" vil's name, is the reason of all the disturbance in the " lady's room?" Fitzpatrick, hanging down his head, "re-" peated, that he committed a mistake, for which he " heartily asked pardon," and then retired with his countryman. Jones, who was too ingenious to have missed the hint given him by his fair one, boldly afferted, "That " he had run to her affiftance upon hearing the door " broke open; with what defign he could not conceive, " unless of robbing the lady; which, if they intended, he " faid he had the good fortune to prevent." " I never " had a robbery committed in my house fince I have kept " it," cries the landlady: " I would have you to know, " Sir, I harbour no highwaymen here; I fcorn the word, "thof I fay it. None but honest, good gentlefolks, are " welcome to my house; and I thank good luck, I have " always had enow of fuch customers; indeed, as many " as I could entertain. Here hath been my Lordand then she repeated over a catalogue of names and titles, many of which we might perhaps be guilty of a breach of privilege by inferting.

Jones, after much patience, at length interrupted her, by making an apology to Mrs Waters for having appeared before her in his shirt, assuring her, "That nothing but a concern for her safety could have prevailed on him to do it." The reader may inform himself of her answer, and indeed of her whole behaviour to the end of the scene, by considering the situation which she affected, it being that of a modest lady, who was awakened out of her sleep by three strange men in her chamber. This was the part which she undertook to perform: and indeed she executed it so well, that none of our theatrical actresses.

actresses could exceed her, in any of their performances,

either on or off the stage.

And hence, I think, we may very fairly draw an argument, to prove how extremely natural virtue is to the fair fex: for though there is not perhaps one in ten thousand who is capable of making a good actress, and even among these we rarely see two who are equally able to personate the same character, yet this of virtue they can all admirably well put on, and as well those individuals who have it not, as those who possess it, can

all act it to the utmost degree of perfection.

When the men were all departed, Mrs Waters, recovering from her fear, recovered likewise from her anger, and spoke in much gentler accents to the landlady, who did not so readily quit her concern for the reputation of the house, in favour of which she began again to number the many great persons who had slept under her roof: but the lady stopt her short, and, having absolutely acquitted her of having had any share in the past disturbance, begged to be left to her repose, which, she said, she hoped to enjoy unmolested during the remainder of the night: upon which the landlady, after much civility and many court sies, took her leave.

CHAP. III.

A dialogue between the landlady and Susan the chambermaid, proper to be read by all innkeepers and their servants; with the arrival, and affable behaviour of a beautiful young lady, which may teach persons of condition how they may acquire the whole world.

HE landlady, remembering that Susan had been the only person out of bed when the door was burst open, resorted presently to her, to inquire into the first occasion of the disturbance, as well as who the strange

gentleman was, and when and how he arrived.

Susan related the whole story, which the reader knows already, varying the truth only in some circumstances, as she saw convenient, and totally concealing the money which she had received. But whereas her mistress had, in the preface to her inquiry, spoken much in compassion

for

for the fright which the lady had been in, concerning any intended depredations on her virtue, Susan could not help endeavouring to quiet the concern which her miftrefs feemed to be under on that account, by fwearing

heartily she saw Jones leap out from her bed.

The landlady fell into a violent rage at these words: " A likely flory truly," cried she, "that a woman should " cry out, and endeavour to expose herself, if that was " the case! I desire to know what better proof any lady " can give of her virtue, than her crying out, which I " believe twenty people can witness for her she did? I " beg, Madam, you would spread no such scandal of any " of my guests; for it will not only reflect on them, but " upon the house; and I am fure no vagabonds, nor

" wicked beggarly people come here."

"Well," fays Sufan, "then I must not believe my " own eyes." "No, indeed, you must not always," anfwered her mistress; "I would not have believed my " own eyes against fuch good gentlefolks. I have not " had a better fupper ordered this half-year than they " ordered last night; and so easy and good-humoured " were they, that they found no fault with my Worces-" tershire perry, which I sold them for Champaigne; and " to be fure it is as well tasted, and as wholesome as the " best Champaigne in the kingdom, otherwise I would " fcorn to give it 'em, and they drank me two bottles. " No, no, I will never believe any harm of fuch fober " good fort of people."

Sufan being thus filenced, her miftrefs proceeded to other matters: " And fo you tell me," continued she, " that " the strange gentleman came post, and there is a foot-" man without with the horses; why then, he is certain-" ly fome of your great gentlefolks too. Why did not " you ask him whether he'd have any supper? I think " he is in the other gentleman's room; go up, and ask " whether he called. Perhaps he'll order fomething " when he finds any body stirring in the house to dress " it. Now don't commit any of your usual blunders, by " telling him the fire's out, and the fowls alive: and, if " he should order mutton, don't blab out, that we have " none. The butcher, I know, killed a sheep just be-Vol. II.

" fore I went to bed, and he never refuses to cut it up " warm " warm when I defire it. Go, remember there's all forts of mutton and fowls: go, open the door with,

"Gentlemen, d'ye call? and if they fay nothing, ask what his honour will be pleased to have for sup-

" per. Don't forget his honour: Go. If you don't mind all these matters better, you'll never come to any

" thing."

Sufan departed, and foon returned with an account, that the two gentlemen were got both into the fame bed. "Two gentlemen," fays the landlady, "in the fame bed! that's impossible: they are two arrant forubs, "I warrant them; and I believe young 'squire All-" worthy guessed right, that the fellow intended to rob her ladyship; for, if he had broke open the lady's door with any of the wicked designs of a gentleman, he would never have sneaked away to another room, to fave the expence of a supper and a bed to himself.

"They are certainly thieves, and their fearching after a wife is nothing but a pretence."

In these censures, my landlady did Mr Fitzpatrick great injustice; for he was really born a gentleman, though not worth a groat; and though perhaps he had some few blemishes in his heart, as well as in his head, yet being a sneaking, or a niggardly fellow, was not one of them. In reality, he was so generous a man, that, whereas he had received a very handsome fortune with his wife, he had now spent every penny of it, except some little pittance which was settled upon her; and, in order to possess himself of this, he had used her with such cruelty, that, together with his jealousy, which was of the bitterest kind, it had forced the poor woman to run away from him.

This gentleman then being well tired with his long journey from Chefter in one day, with which, and some good dry blows he had received in the scuffle, his bones were so fore, that, added to the soreness of his mind, it had quite deprived him of any appetite for eating: and being now so violently disappointed in the woman, whom, at the maid's instance, he had mistaken for his wife, it never once entered into his head, that she might nevertheless be in the house, though he had erred in the first person he had attacked. He therefore yielded to the

diffuations of his friend from fearthing any farther after her that night, and accepted the kind offer of part of his bed.

The footman and post-boy were in a different disposition. They were more ready to order than the landlady was to provide; however, after being pretty well satisfied by them of the real truth of the case, and that Mr Fitzpatrick was no thief, she was at length prevailed on to set some cold meat before them, which they were devouring with great greediness, when Partridge came into the kitchen. He had been sirst awaked by the hurry which we have before seen; and, while he was endeavouring to compose himself again on his pillow, a screech-owl had given him such a serenade at his window, that he leapt in a most horrible affright from his bed, and, huddling on his clothes with great expedition, ran down to the protection of the company, whom he heard talking below in the kitchen.

His arrival detained my landlady from returning to her rest: for the was just about to leave the other two guests to the care of Susan; but the friend of young 'squire Allworthy was not to be so neglected, especially as he called for a pint of wine to be mulled. She immediately obeyed, by putting the same quantity of perry to the fire; for this readily answered to the name of every kind of wine.

The Irish footman was retired to bed, and the postboy was going to follow: but Partridge invited him to stay, and partake of his wine, which the lad very thankfully accepted. The schoolmaster was indeed asraid to return to bed by himself: and, as he did not know how soon he might lose the company of my landlady, he was resolved to secure that of the boy, in whose presence he apprehended no danger from the Devil, or any of his adherents.

And now arrived another post-boy at the gate; upon which Susan, being ordered out, returned, introducing two young women in riding habits, one of which was so very richly laced, that Partridge and the postboy instantly started from their chairs, and my landlady fell to her court'sies, and her ladyships, with great cagerness.

Cc2

Ch

66

The lady in the rich habit faid with a fmile of great condescention, "If you will give me leave, Madam, I will "warm myself a few minutes at your kitchen-fire; for it is really very cold, but I must insist on disturbing no "one from his seat." This was spoken on account of Partridge, who had retreated to the other end of the room, struck with the utmost awe and astonishment at the splendor of the lady's dress. Indeed, she had a much better title to respect than this, for she was one of the most beautiful creatures in the world.

The lady earnestly desired Partridge to return to his seat, but could not prevail. She then pulled off her gloves, and displayed to the fire two hands, which had every property of snow in them, except that of melting. Her companion, who was indeed her maid, likewise pulled off her gloves, and discovered what bore an exact resemblance, in cold and colour, to a piece of frozen beef.

"I wish, Madam," quoth the latter, "your ladyship would not think of going any farther to-night.
I am terribly afraid your ladyship would not be able to

"bear the fatigue."

"Why fure," cries the landlady, "her ladyship's honour can never intend it. O bless me, farther to-night indeed! let me beseech your ladyship not to think on't

- But to be fure, your ladyship can't. What will your honour be pleased to have for supper? I have mutton

" of all kinds, and some nice chicken."

"I think, Madam," faid the lady, "it would be rather breakfast than supper; but I can't eat any thing; and if I stay, shall only lie down for an hour or two. However, if you please, Madam, you may get me a little sack-whey made very small and thin."

"Yes, Madam," cries the mistress of the house, "I have some excellent white-wine." "You have no fack then," says the lady. "Yes, an't please your honour, I have; I may challenge the country for that, but let me beg your ladyship to eat some-

" thing,"

"Upon my word, I can't eat a morfel," answered the lady; " and I shall be much obliged to you, if you will please to get my apartment ready as soon as possi-

" ble, for I am refolved to be on horseback again in three hours."

"Why, Susan," cries the landlady, " is there a fire "lit yet in the Wild-Goose?—I am forry, Madam, all my best rooms are full. Several people of the first quality are now in bed. Here's a great young 'squire, and many other great gentlefolks of quality."

Sufan answered, "That the Irith gentlemen were

" got into the Wild-Goofe."

"Was ever any thing like it!" faysthe mistress; "why the devil would you not keep some of the best rooms for the quality, when you know scarce a day passes without some calling here?—If they be gentlemen, I am certain, when they know it is for her ladyship, they

" will get up again."

" Not upon my account," fays the lady; "I will have " no person disturbed for me. If you have a room that " is commonly decent, it will ferve me very well, though "it be ever fo plain. I beg, Madam, you will not give " yourfelf fo much trouble on my account." " O, Ma-" dam," cries the other, " I have feveral very good rooms " for that matter, but none good enough for your ho-" nour's ladyship. However, as you are so condescend-" ing to take up with the best I have, do, Susan, get a fire " in the Rose this minute. Will your ladyship be plea-" fed to go up now, or fray till the fire is lighted?" " I think I have fufficiently warmed myfelf," answered the lady; " fo if you please I will go now: I am afraid I " have kept people, and particularly that gentleman, " (meaning Partridge,) too long, in the cold already. In-" deed I cannot bear to think of keeping any person from " the fire this dreadful weather." She then departed with her maid, the landlady marching with two lighted candles before her.

When that good woman returned, the conversation in the kitchen was all upon the charms of the young lady. There is indeed in perfect beauty a power which none alalmost can withstand; for my landlady, though she was not pleased with the negative given to the supper, declared she never had seen so lovely a creature. Partridge ran out into the most extravagant encomiums on her sace, though he could not refrain from paying some compliments to the

gold

Cha

kill

iro

do ly

the

to

66

WO

66

66

44

66

fir

the

fay

la

W

66

gold lace on her habit: the post-boy sung forth the praises of her goodness, which were likewise echoed by the other post-boy, who was now come in. "She's a true good lady, I warrant her," says he; "she hath mercy upon dumb creatures; for she asked me every now and then upon the journey, if I did not think she should hurt the horses by riding too fast? and, when she came in, she charged me to give them as much corn as ever they would eat."

Such charms are there in affability, and so sure is it to attract the praises of all kinds of people. It may indeed be compared to the celebrated Mrs Hussey*. It is equally sure to set off every semale perfection to the highest advantage, and to palliate and conceal every defect. A short reslection, which we could not forbear making in this place, where my reader hath seen the loveliness of an affable deportment; and truth will now oblige us to contrast it, by shewing the reverse.

CHAP. IV.

Containing infallible nostrums for procuring universal difefteem and hatred.

HE lady had no fooner laid herfelf on her pillow, than the waiting-woman returned to the kitchen, to regale with fome of those dainties which her mistress refused.

The company, at her entrance, shewed her the same respect which they had before paid to her mistress, by rising, but she forgot to imitate her, by desiring them to sit down again. Indeed it was scarce possible they should have done so: for she placed her chair in such a posture, as to occupy almost the whole sire. She then ordered a chicken to be broiled that instant, declaring, if it was not ready in a quarter of an hour she would not stay for it. Now, though the said chicken was then at rooft in the stable, and required the several ceremonies of catching,

^{*} A celebrated mantua-maker in the Strand, famous for fetting off the shapes of women.

killing, and picking, before it was brought to the gridiron, my landlady would nevertheless have undertaken to do all within the time; but the guest, being unfortunately admitted behind the scenes, must have been witness to the Fourberie; the poor woman was therefore obliged to confess that she had none in the house; "but, Ma-"dam," said she, "I can get any kind of mutton in an "instant from the Butcher's."

" Do you think then," answered the waiting gentlewoman, "that I have the stomach of a horse, to eat mut-" ton at this time of night? Sure you people that keep " inns imagine your betters are like yourselves. Indeed "I expected to get nothing at this wretched place. " wonder my lady would ftop at it. I suppose none but " tradefinen and grafiers ever call here." The landlady fired at this indignity offered to her house; however, the suppressed her temper, and contented herself with faying, "Very good quality frequented it, she thanked " heaven!" " Don't tell me," cries theother, "of quality! " I believe I know more of people of quality than fuch " as you.—But, prithee, without troubling me with any " of your impertinence, do tell me what I can have for fup-" per; for though I cannot eat horse-slesh, I am really " hungry." " Why, truly Madam," answered the landlady, " you could not take me again at fuch a difadvan-" tage; for I must confess I have nothing in the house, " unless a cold piece of beef, which indeed a gentleman's " footman and the post-boy have almost cleared to the " bone." Woman," faid Mrs Abigail, (fo for shortness we will call her,) I intreat you not to make me fick. If I " had fasted a month, I could not cat what had been " touched by the fingers of fuch fellows: is there no-"thing neat or decent to be had in this horrid place?" "What think you of some eggs and bacon, Madam?" " faid the landlady.-" Are your eggs new laid? are " you certain they were laid to-day? and let me have " the bacon cut very nice and thin; for I can't endure " any thing that's grofs.—Prithee try if you can do a " little tolerably for once, and don't think you have a " farmer's wife, or some of those creatures, in the house." -The landlady then began to handle her knife; but the other stopt her, faying, "Good woman, I must in-" fift " fift upon your first washing your hands: for I am " extremely nice, and have been always used from my

" cradle, to have every thing in the most elegant man-

" ner."

The landlady, who governed herfelf with much difficulty, began now the necessary preparations; for as to Sufan, the was utterly rejected, and with fuch difdain, that the poor wench was as hard put to it, to reftrain her hands from violence, as her mistress had been to hold her This indeed Sufan did not entirely: for though the literally kept it within her teeth, yet there it mut tered many " marry-come-ups, as good flesh and blood

as yourfelf," with other fuch indignant phrases.

While the fupper was preparing, Mrs Abigail began to lament the had not ordered a fire in the parlour; but she faid, that was now too late. "However," faid the, "I have novelty to recommend a kitchen; for I do " not believe I ever eat in one before." Then, turning to the post-doys, she asked them, "why they were not in "the stable with their horses? If I must eat my hard " fare here, Madam," cries she to the landlady, "I beg " the kitchen may be kept clear, that I may not be fur-" rounded with all the black-guards in town: as for . you, Sir," fays she to Partridge, " you look somewhat " like a gentleman, and may fit still if you please; I don't " defire to diffurb any body but mob."

"Yes, yes, Madam," cries Partridge, "I am a gentle-" man, I do affure you, and I am not eafily to be diffurb-Non semper vox casualis est verbo nominativus." This Latin the took to be fome affront, and answered, "You may be a gentleman, Sir; but you don't shew "yourfelf as one, to talk Latin to a woman." Partridge made a gentle reply, and concluded with more Latin; upon which she tossed up her nose, and contented herfelf by abufing him with the name of a great fcholar.

The fupper being now on the table, Mrs Abigail eat very heartily, for fo delicate a perfon: and while a fecond course of the same was by her order preparing, she said, " And fo, Madam, you tell me your house is frequented

" by people of great quality?"

The landlady answered in the affirmative, faying, " There m

ly

n-

1-

1-

it

19

r

h

:

d

1

1

)

"There were a great many very good quality and gentlefolks in it now. There's young 'Squire Allworthy, as
that gentleman there knows."

" And pray who is this young gentleman of quality,

" this young 'Squire Allworthy?" faid Abigail.

"Who should he be," answered Partridge, "but the fon and heir of the great 'Squire Allworthy of Somer-fetshire."

"Upon my word," faid she, "you tell me strange news; for I know Mr Allworthy of Somersethire very

" well, and I know he hath no fon alive."

The landlady pricked up her ears at this, and Partridge looked a little confounded. However, after a short hesitation, he answered, "Indeed, Madam, it is true every body doth not know him to be 'Squire Allworthy's son, for he was never married to his mother; but his son he certainly is, and will be his heir too, as certainly as his name is *fones." At that word Abigail let drop the bacon, which she was conveying to her mouth, and cried out, "You surprise me, Sir. Is it possible Mr Jones should be now in the house?" "Quare non?" answered Partridge; "it is possible, and it is "certain."

Abigail now made haste to finish the remainder of her meal, and then repaired back to her mistress, when the conversation passed, which may be read in the next chapter.

CHAP. V.

Shewing who the amiable lady and her unamiable maid were.

S in the month of June the damask rose, which chance hath planted among the lilies with their candid hue, mixes his vermilion: or as some playsome heifer, in the pleasant month of May, diffuses her odoriferous breath over the flowery meadows: or as in the blooming month of April, the gentle, constant dove, perched on some fair bough, sits meditating on her mate; so looking a hundred charms, and breathing as many sweets, her thoughts being fixed on her Tommy, with a heart as good and as innocent, as her face was beautiful, Vol. II,

Sophia (for it was she herself) lay reclining her lovely head on her hand, when her maid entered the room, and, running directly to her bed, cried, "Madam—Ma-"dam—who doth your Ladyship think is in the house?" Sophia, starting up, cried, "I hope my father hath not overtaken us." "No, Madam, it is one worth a hundred fathers; Mr Jones himself is here at this very instant." "Mr Jones," says Sophia, "it is impossible; I cannot be so fortunate." Her maid averred the sact, and was presently detached by her mistress to order him to be called, for she said she was resolved to see him im-

mediately.

Mrs Honour had no fooner left the kitchen in the manner we have before feen, than the landlady fell feverely upon her. The poor woman had indeed been loading her heart with foul language for fome time, and now it fcoured out of her mouth, as filth doth from a mud-cart, when the board which confines it is removed. Partridge likewife shovelled in his share of calumny; and (what may furprise the reader,) not only bespattered the maid, but attempted to fully the lily-white character of Sophia her-" Never a barrel the better herring," cries he. " Noscitur a socio is a true saying. It must be confessed " indeed, that the lady in the fine garments is the civiller " of the two; but I warrant neither of them are a bit better than they should be. A couple of Bath trulls, " I'll answer for them; your quality don't ride about at " this time o' night without fervants." " Sbodlikins, " and that's true," cries the landlady, " you have cer-" tainly hit upon the very matter; for quality don't " come into a house without bespeaking a supper, whether " they eat or no."

While they were thus discoursing, Mrs Honour returned, and discharged her commission, by bidding the land-lady immediately wake Mr Jones, and tell him a lady wanted to speak with him. The landlady referred her to Partridge, saying, "he was the 'squire's friend; but "for her part she never called men-folks, especially gentlemen," and then walked sullenly out of the kitchen. Honour applied herself to Partridge: but he resusted: "for my friend," cries he, "went to bed very late, and he would be very angry to be disturbed so soon."

Mrs Honour infifted still to have him called, faying, " fhe was fure, instead of being angry, that he would be " to the highest degree delighted when he knew the " occasion." " Another time perhaps he might," cries Partridge; "but non omnia possumus omnes. One wo-" man is enough at once for a reasonable man." "What do you mean by one woman, fellow?" cries Honour. "None of your fellow!" answered Partridge. He then proceeded to inform her plainly, that Jones was in bed with a wench, and made use of an expression too indelicate to be here inferted; which fo enraged Mrs Honour, that she called him jackanapes, and returned in a violent hurry to her mistress, whom she acquainted with the success of her errand, and with the account she had received: which, if possible, she exaggerated, being as angry with Jones as if he had pronounced all the words that came from the mouth of Partridge. She discharged a torrent of abuse on the master, and advised her mistress to quit all thoughts of a man who had never shewn himself deserving of her. She then ripped up the story of Molly Seagrim, and gave the most malicious turn to his formerly quitting Sophia herfelf; which, I must confess, the present incident not a little countenanced.

The spirits of Sophia were too much distipated by concern to enable her to stop the torrent of her maid. At last, however, she interrupted her, saying, "I never can believe this; some villain hath belied him. You fay you had it from his friend; but surely it is not the office of a friend to betray such secrets." "I suppose," cries Honour, "the fellow is his pimp; for I never saw so ill-looked a villain. Besides, such profligate rakes as Mr Jones are never ashamed of these matters."

To fay the truth, this behaviour of Partridge was a little inexcusable; but he had not slept off the effect of the dose which he swallowed the evening before; which had, in the morning, received the addition of above a pint of wine, or indeed rather of malt spirits; for the perry was by no means pure. Now that part of his head, which nature designed for the reservoir of drink, being very shallow, a very small quantity of liquor overslowed it, and opened the sluices of his heart: so that all the secrets

Dd 2

here

Cl

of

66

there deposited run out. These sluices were indeed naturally very ill secured. To give the best-natured turn we can to his disposition, he was a very honest man: for, as he was the most inquisitive of mortals, and eternally prying into the secrets of others, so he very faithfully paid them by communicating, in return, every thing with-

in his knowledge.

While Sophia, tormented with anxiety, knew not what to believe, nor what resolution to take, Susan arrived with the fack-whey. Mrs Honour immediately advised her mistress, in a whisper, to pump this wench, who probably could inform her of the truth. Sophia approved it, and began as follows: " Come hither, child, now " answer me truly what I am going to ask you, and I " promise you I will very well reward you. Is there a " young gentleman in this house, a handsome young gen-" tleman that - " Here Sophia blushed, and was confounded—— 'A young gentleman," cries Honour, "that " came hither in company with that faucy rafcal who is " now in the kitchen?" Sufan answered, "there was." -" Do you know any thing of any lady?" continues Sophia; " any lady? I don't ask you whether she is " handsome or no; perhaps she is not, that's nothing " to the purpose; but do you know of any lady?" "La, Madam," cries Honour, "you will make a very " bad examiner. Harkee, child," fays she, " is not " that very young gentleman now in bed with fome " nafty trull or other?" Here Susan smiled, and was filent. "Answer the question, child," fays Sophia, " and " here's a guinea for you." "A guinea! Madam," cries Susan; "la, what's a guinea? if my mistress should " know it, I shall certainly lose my place that very in-" ftant." " Here's another for you," fays Sophia: " and I promife you faithfully your mistress shall never "know it." Sufan, after a very short hesitation, took the money, and told the whole ftory, concluding with faying, "If you have any great curiofity, Madam, I can " fleal foftly into his room, and fee whether he be in " his own bed or no." She accordingly did this by Sophia's defire, and returned with an answer in the negative.

Sophia

Sophia now trembled and turned pale. Mrs Honour begged her to be comforted, and not to think any more of so worthless a fellow. " Why there," fays Susan, " I " hope, Madam your ladyship won't be offended; but " pray, Madam, is not your ladyship's name Madam Sophia " Western?" How is it possible you should know me?" answered Sophia. " Why that man that the gentlewo-" man spoke of, who is in the kitchen, told about you " last night. But I hope your ladyship is not an-"gry with me." "Indeed, child," faid she, "I am " not; pray tell me all, and I promise you I'll reward "you." "Why, Madam," continued Susan, "that " man told us in the kitchen, that Madam Sophia West-" ern-Indeed I don't know how to bring it out."-Here the stopped, till having received encouragement from Sophia, and being vehemently preffed by Mrs Honour, the proceeded thus: - " He told us, Madam, tho" " to be fure it is all a lie, that your ladyship was dying " for love of the young 'fquire, and that he was going " to the wars to get rid of you. I thought to myself then " he was a false-hearted wretch; but now to see such a " fine, rich, beautiful lady as you, be forfaken for fuch " an ordinary woman; for to be fure so she is, and another " man's wife into the bargain. It is fuch a strange un-" natural thing in a manner."

Sophia gave her a third guinea, and telling her she would certainly be her friend, if she mentioned nothing of what had passed, nor informed any one who she was, dissimissed the girl with orders to the post-boy to get the

horses ready immediately.

Being now left alone with her maid, she told her trusty waiting-woman, "That she never was more easy than "at present. I am now convinced," said she, "he is not "only a villain, but a low despicable wretch. I can for- give all rather than his exposing my name in so barbar- ous a manner. That renders him the object of my "contempt. Yes, Honour, I am now easy. I am, indeed. "I am very easy;" and then she burst into a violent flood of tears.

After a short interval, spent by Sophia chiefly in crying, and assuring her maid that she was perfectly easy, Susan arrived

Ch

fro

ab

ob

arrived with an account that the horses were ready, when a very extraordinary thought fuggested itself to our young heroine, by which Mr Jones would be acquainted with her having been at the inn in a way, which, if any fparks of affection for her remained in him, would be at least

fome punishment for his faults.

The reader will be pleased to remember a little must. which hath had the honour of being more than once remembered already in this history. This must, ever fince the departure of Mr Jones, had been the constant companion of Sophia by day, and her bed-fellow by night; and this muff the had at this very instant upon her arm; whence the took it off with great indignation, and, having writ her name with her pencil upon a piece of paper which she pinned to it, she bribed the maid to convey it into the empty bed of Mr Jones, in which, if he did not find it, she charged her to take some method of conveying it before his eyes in the morning.

Then having paid for what Mrs Honour had eaten, in whi i bill was included an account for what the herfelf ir at have eaten, the mounted her horfe, and, once more affuring her companion that the was pefectly eafy,

continued her journey.

CHAP. VI.

Containing, among other things, the ingenuity of Partridge, the madness of Jones, and the folly of Fitzpatrick.

IT was now past five in the morning, and other company began to rife and come to the kitchen, among whom were the ferjeant and the coachman, who, being thoroughly reconciled, made a libation, or, in the English

phrase, drank a hearty cup together.

In this drinking, nothing more remarkable happened than the behaviour of Partridge, who, when the ferjeant drank a health to King George, repeated only the word King; nor could he be brought to utter more; for tho' he was going to fight against his own cause, yet he could not be prevailed upon to drink against it.

Mr Jones, being now returned to his own bed, (but

trom

from whence he returned we must beg to be excused from relating, summoned Partridge from his agreeable company, who, after a ceremonious presace, having obtained leave to offer his advice, delivered himself as follows:

"It is, Sir, an old faying, and a true one, that a wife man may fometimes learn counsel from a fool; I wish therefore I might be so bold as to offer you my advice, which is, to return back again, and leave these borrida bella, these bloody wars, to fellows who are contented to swallow gunpowder, because they have nothing else to eat. Now, every body knows your honour wants for nothing at home; when that's the case, why should any man travel abroad?"

"Partridge," cries Jones, "thou art certainly a coward; I with therefore thou would'st return home thy-

" felf, and trouble me no more."

Chap. 6.

ien

ng

ith

ks

aft

ff;

e-

cė

1-

1;

1-

1

" I ask your Honour's pardon," cries Partridge, " I " fpoke on your account more than my own; for, as to " me, Heaven knows my circumstances are bad enough; " and I am fo far from being afraid, that I value a pittol, " or a blunderbufs, or any fuch thing, no more than a " pop-gun. Every man must die once, and what signi-" fies the manner how; befides, perhaps, I may come off " with the lofs only of an arm or a leg. I affure you, Sir, " I was never less afraid in my life; and so, if your Ho-" nour is refolved to go on, I am refolved to follow you. " But, in that case, I wish I might give my opinion. To " befure it is a fcandalous way of travelling, for a great " gentleman like you to walk a-foot. Now here are two " or three good horses in the stable, which the landlord " will certainly make no fcruple of trusting you with: " but, if he should, I can easily contrive to take them; " and let the worst come to the worst, the King would " certainly pardon you, as you are going to fight in his

Now, as the honesty of Partridge was equal to his understanding, and both dealt only in small matters, he would never have attempted a roguery of this kind, had he not imagined it altogether safe; for he was one of those who have more consideration of the gallows than of the sitness of things; but, in reality, he thought he might

might have committed this felony without any danger; for, besides that he doubted not but the name of Mr Allworthy would sufficiently quiet the landlord, he conceived they should be altogether safe, whatever turn affairs might take; as Jones, he imagined, would have friends enough on one side, and as his friends would as well secure him on the other.

When Mr Jones found that Partridge was in earnest in this proposal, he very severely rebuked him, and that in fuch bitter terms, that the other attempted to laugh it off, and prefently turned the discourse to other matters, faying, he believed, they were then in a bawdy-house, and that he had with much ado prevented two wenches from diffurbing his honour in the middle of the night. " Hey-" day!" fays he, " I believe they got into your cham-" ber whether I would or no; for here lies the muff of " one of them on the ground." Indeed, as Jones returned to his bed in the dark, he had never perceived the muff on the quilt, and, in leaping into his bed, he had tumbled it on the floor. This Partridge now took up, and was going to put it into his pocket, when Jones defired to fee it. The muff was fo very remarkable, that our hero might possibly have recollected it without the information annexed. But his memory was not put to that hard office; for at the fame instant he faw and read the words Sophia Western upon the paper that was pinned to it. His looks now grew frantic in a moment, and he eagerly cried out, " Oh Heavens, how came this must " here!" " I know no more than your Honour," cried Partridge, " but I faw it on the arm of one of the " women who would have diffurbed you, if I would " have fuffered them." "Where are they?" cries Jones, jumping out of bed, and laying hold of his clothes. " Many miles off, I believe, by this time," faid Partridge. And now Jones, upon farther inquiry, was fufficiently affured that the bearer of this must was no other than the levely Sophia herfelf.

The behaviour of Jones on this occasion, his thoughts, his looks, his words, his actions, were such as beggar all description. After many bitter execrations on Partridge, and not fewer on himself, he ordered the poor fellow, who was frightened out of his wits, to run down and

hire

hire him horses at any rate; and, a very sew minutes afterwards, having shuffled on his clothes, he hastened down stairs to execute the orders himself, which he had just before given.

But, before we proceed to what passed on his arrival in the kitchen, it will be necessary to recur to what had there happened since Partridge had sirst left it on his master's

fummons.

The ferjeant was just marched off with his party, when the two Irish gentlemen arose, and came down stairs; both complaining, that they had been so often waked by the noises in the inn, that they had never once

been able to close their eyes all night.

The coach, which had brought the young lady and her maid, and which, perhaps, the reader may have hitherto concluded was her own, was indeed a returned coach belonging to Mr King of Bath, one of the worthieft and honestest men that ever dealt in horse-fiesh, and whose coaches we heartily recommend to all our readers who travel that road. By which means they may, perhaps, have the pleasure of riding in the very coach, and being driven by the very coachman, that is recorded in this history.

The coachman, having but two passengers, and hearing Mr Maclachlan was going to Bath, offered to carry him thither at a very moderate price. He was induced to this by the report of the hostler, who said, that the horse which Mr Maclachlan had hired from Worcester, would be much more pleased with returning to his friends there, than to prosecute a long journey; for that the said horse was rather a two-legged than a four-legged ani-

mal.

Mr Maclachlan immediately closed with the proposal of the coachman, and, at the same time, persuaded his friend Fitzpatrick to accept of the fourth place in the coach. This conveyance the foreness of his bones made more agreeable to him than a horse; and, being well affured of meeting with his wife at Bath, he thought a little delay would be of no consequence.

Maclachlan, who was much the sharper man of the two, no sooner heard that this lady came from Chester, with the other circumstances which he learned from the host-

Vol. II. E e ‡ ler,

ler, than it came into his head that she might possibly be his friend's wife; and presently acquainted him with this suspicion, which had never once occurred to Fitzpatrick himself. To say the truth, he was one of those compositions which nature makes up in too great a hurry, and

forgets to put any brains into their head.

Now it happens to this fort of men, as to bad hounds. who never hit off a fault themselves: but no sooner doth a dog of fagacity open his mouth, than they immediately do the fame, and, without the guidance of any fcent, run directly forwards as fast as they are able. In the same manner, the very moment Mr Maclachlan had mentioned his apprehension, Mr Fitzpatrick instantly concurred, and flew directly up stairs to surprise his wife, before he knew where she was: and unluckily (as fortune loves to play tricks with those gentlemen who put themselves entirely under her conduct) ran his head against several doors and posts to no purpose. Much kinder was she to me, when she suggested that simile of the hounds, just before inferted: fince the poor wife may, on these occafions, be so justly compared to a hunted hare. Like that little wretched animal, she pricks up her ears to listen after the voice of her purfuer: like her, flies away trembling when she hears it: and, like her, is generally overtaken and destroyed in the end.

This was not however the case at present: for, after a long fruitless search, Mr Fitzpatrick returned to the kitchen, where, as if this had been a real chace, entered a gentleman hallowing as hunters do when the hounds are at a fault. He was just alighted from his horse, and

had many attendants at his heels.

Here, reader, it may be necessary to acquaint thee with fome matters, which, if thou dost know already, thou art wifer than I take thee to be; and this information thou shalt receive in the next chapter.

nutes.

CHAP. VII.

In which are concluded the adventures that I appened at the inn at Upton.

In the first place then, this gentleman just arrived was no other person than 'Squire Western himself, who was come hither in pursuit of his daughter; and, had he fortunately been two hours earlier, he had not only found her, but his niece into the bargain; for such was the wife of Mr Fitzpatrick, who had run away with her sive years before out of the custody of that sage lady Madam Western.

Now this lady had departed from the inn much about the same time with Sophia: for, having been waked by the voice of her husband, she had sent up for the landlady, and, being by her apprised of the matter, had bribed the good woman, at an extravagant price, to surnish her with horses for her escape. Such prevalence had money in this samily; and though the mistress would have turned away her maid for a corrupt hussy, if she had known as much as the reader, yet she was no more proof against corruption herself than poor Susan had been.

Mr Western and his nephew were not known to one another; nor indeed would the former have taken any notice of the latter, if he had known him; for this being a stolen match, and consequently an unnatural one in the opinion of the good 'squire, he had, from the time of the committing it, abandoned the poor young creature, who was then no more than eighteen, as a monster, and had never since suffered her to be named in his presence.

The kitchen was now a fcene of universal confusion: Western inquiring after his daughter, and Fitzpatrick as eagerly after his wife, when Jones entered the room, unfortunately having Sophia's must in his hand.

As foon as Western saw Jones, he set up the same holda, as is used by sportsmen when their game is in view. He then immediately run up, and laid hold of Jones, crying, "We have got the dog-fox, I warrant the bitch is not far off." The jargon which followed for some mi-

nutes, where many fpoke different things at the fame time, as it would be very difficult to describe, so would

it be no less unpleasant to read.

Jones having at length shaken Mr Western off, and some of the company having interfered between them, our hero protested his innocence as to knowing any thing of the lady, when parfon Supple stepped up and faid, "It is folly to deny it: for why, the marks of guilt " are in thy hands. I will myfelf affeverate and bind " it by an oath, that the muss thou bearest in thy hand " belongeth unto Madam Sophia; for I have frequent-" ly observed her, of later days, to bear it about her." " My daughter's must !" cries the 'fquire in a very great rage: "Hath he got my daughter's muff! Bear witness the " goods are found upon him, I'll have him before a juf-" tice of the peace this inflant. Where is my daughter, " villain?" " Sir," faid Jones, "I beg you would be " pacified. The muff, I acknowledge, is the young " lady's: but, upon my honour, I have never feen her." At these words Western lost all patience, and grew inarticulate with rage.

Some of the servants had acquainted Fitzpatrick who Mr Western was. The good Irishman, therefore, thinking he had now an opportunity to do an act of service to his uncle, and by that means might possibly obtain his favour, stept up to Jones, and cried out, "Upon my conscience, Sir, you may be ashamed of denying your having seen the gentleman's daughter before my face, when you know I found you there upon the bed together." Then, turning to Western, he offered to conduct him immediately to the room where his daughter was; which offer being accepted, he, the 'squire, the parson, and some others, ascended directly to Mrs Waters's chamber, which they entered with no less violence than Mr Fitzpatrick had done before.

The peor lady started from her sleep with as much amazement as terror, and beheld at her bed-side a sigure, which might very well be supposed to have escaped out of Bedlam; such wildness and confusion were in the looks of Mr Western, who no sooner saw the lady, than he started back, shewing sufficiently by his

man-

manner, before he fpoke, that this was not the person

fought after.

So much more tenderly do women value their reputation than their persons, that though the latter seemed now in more danger than before, yet, as the former was secure, the lady screamed not with such violence as she had done on the other occasion. However, she no sooner found herself alone, than she abandoned all thoughts of further repose; and, as she had sufficient reason to be diffatissied with her present lodging, she dressed herself with all possible expedition.

Mr Western now proceeded to search the whole house, but to as little purpose as he had disturbed poor Mrs Waters. He then returned disconsolate into the kitchen, where he found Jones in the custody of his servants.

This violent uproar had raifed all the people in the house, though it was yet scarcely day-light. Among these was a grave gentleman, who had the honour to be in the commission of the peace for the county of Worcester; of which Mr Western was no sooner informed, than he offered to lay his complaint before him. The justice declined executing his office, as he said he had no clerk present, nor no book about justice-business, and that he could not carry all the law in his head about stealing away daughters, and such fort of things.

Here Mr Fitzpatrick offered to lend him his affiftance, informing the company that he had been himfelf bred to the law: (And indeed he had ferved three years as clerk to an attorney in the north of Ireland, when, chufing a genteeler walk in life, he quitted his mafter, came over to England, and fet up that bufinefs which requires no apprenticeship, namely, that of a gentleman, in which he had succeeded as hath been already partly mentioned.)

Mr Fitzpatrick declared, that the law concerning daughters was out of the prefent case, that stealing a must was undoubtedly selony, and the goods, being sound upon the

person, were sufficient evidence of the fact.

The magistrate, upon the encouragement of so learned a coadjutor, and upon the violent intercession of the squire, was at length prevailed upon to seat himself in the chair of justice, where being placed, upon viewing the must, which Jones still held in his hand, and upon the

parfon's

parson's swearing it to be the property of Mr Western, he desired Mr Fitzpatrick to draw up a commitment, which

he faid he would fign.

Jones now defired to be heard, which was at last with difficulty granted him. He then produced the evidence of Mr Partridge as to the sinding it; but, what was still more, Susan deposed, that Sophia herself had delivered the must to her, and ordered her to convey it into the

chamber where Mr Jones had found it.

Whether a natural love of justice, or the extraordinary comeliness of Jones, had wrought on Susan to make the discovery, I will not determine; but such were the effects of her evidence, that the magistrate, throwing himself back in his chair, declared that the matter was now altogether as clear on the side of the prisoner, as it had been before against him; with which the parson concurred, saying, "The Lord forbid he should be instrumental in committing an innocent person to durance." The justice then arose, acquitted the prisoner, and broke up the court.

Mr Western now gave every one present a hearty curse, and, immediately ordering his horses, departed in pursuit of his daughter, without taking the least notice of his nephew Fitzpatrick, or returning any answer to his claim of kindred, notwithstanding all the obligations he had just received from that gentleman. In the violence, moreover, of his hurry, and of his passion, he luckily forgot to demand the must of Jones: I say luckily; for he would have died on the spot rather than have parted with it.

Jones likewise, with his friend Partridge, set forward, the moment he had paid his reckoning, in quest of his lovely Sophia, whom he now resolved never more to abandon the pursuit of: nor could he bring himself even to take leave of Mrs Waters; of whom he detested the very thoughts, as she had been, though not designedly, the occasion of his missing the happiest interview with Sophia, to whom he now vowed eternal constancy.

As for Mrs Waters, she took the opportunity of the coach which was going to Bath; for which place she set out in company with the two Irish gentlemen, the land-ady kindly lending her her clothes; in return for which she

was contented only to receive about double their value, as a recompence for the loan. Upon the road she was perfectly reconciled to Mr Fitzpatrick, who was a very handsome fellow, and indeed did all she could to console him in the absence of his wife.

Thus ended the many odd adventures which Mr Jones encountered at this inn at Upton, where they talk to this day, of the beauty and lovely behaviour of the charming Sophia, by the name of the Somerfetsbire an-

gel.

CHAP. VIII.

In which the history goes back.

BEFORE we proceed any farther in our history, it may be proper to look a little back, in order to account for the extraordinary appearance of Sophia and her father at the inn at Upton.

The reader may be pleased to remember, that, in the ninth chapter of the seventh book of our history, we lest Sophia, after a long debate between love and duty, deciding the cause, as it usually, I believe, happens, in favour of

the former.

This debate had arisen, as we have there shewn, from a visit which her father had just before made her, in order to force her consent to a marriage with Blissl, and which he understood to be fully implied in her acknowledgment, "that she neither must, nor could refuse any "absolute command of his."

Now, from this vifit the 'squire retired to his evening potation, overjoyed at the success he had gained with his daughter; and as he was of a social disposition, and willing to have partakers in his happiness, the beer was ordered to slow very liberally into the kitchen; so that, before eleven in the evening, there was not a sober man in the house, except only Mrs Western herself, and the charming Sophia.

Early in the morning, a messenger was dispatched to fummon Mr Blisil; for though the 'squire imagined that young gentleman had been much less acquainted than he really was, with the former aversion of his daughter,

as he had not, however, yet received her confent, he longed impatiently to communicate it to him, not doubting but the intended bride herself would confirm it with her lips. As to the wedding, it had the evening before been fixed, by the male parties, to be celebrated on the next morning save one.

Breakfast was now set forth in the parlour, where Mr Blissl attended, and where the 'fquire and his sister likewise were assembled; and now Sophia was ordered to be

called.

O, Shakespeare, had I thy pen! O, Hogarth, had I thy pencil! then would I draw the picture of the poor ferving-man, who, with pale countenance, staring eyes, chattering teeth, faultering tongue, and trembling limbs,

(E'en fuch a man, fo faint, fo fpiritlefs, So dull, fo dead in look, fo woe-be-gone, Drew Priam's curtain, in the dead of night, And would have told him, half his Troy was burn'd,)

entered the room, and declared,-" That Madam So-

" phia was not to be found."

"Not to be found!" cries the 'fquire, ftarting from his chair: "Zounds and damnation! Blood and fu"ry! Where, how, when, what:—Not to be found!
"Where?"

"La! brother," faid Mrs Western with true political coldness, "you are always throwing yourself into such "violent passions for nothing. My niece, I suppose, is only walked out into the garden. I protest you are grown so unreasonable, that it is impossible to live in

" the house with you."

"Nay, nay," answered the 'squire, returning as suddenly to himself, as he had gone from himself; " if that be all the matter, it signifies not much; but, upon my foul, my mind misgave me, when the fellow said she was not to be found." He then gave orders for the bell to be rung in the garden, and sat himself contentedly down.

No two things could be more the reverse of each other, than were the brother and fifter, in most instances, particularly t

e

I

r

particularly in this, that as the brother never forefaw any thing at a diffance, but was most sagacious in immediately feeing every thing the moment it happened, fo the fifter eternally forefaw at a distance, but was not fo quickfighted to objects before her eyes. Of both these the reader may have observed examples; and indeed both their several talents were excessive; for as the fifter often forefaw what never came to pass, so the brother often faw much more than was actually the truth.

This was not however the case at present. The same report was brought from the garden, as before had been brought from the chamber, that Madam Sophia was not

to be found.

The 'fquire himself now fallied forth, and began to roar forth the name of Sophia as loudly, and in as hoarfe a voice as whilome did Hercules that of Hylas; and as the poet tells us, that the whole shore echoed back the name of that beautiful youth, fo did the house, the garden, and all the neighbouring fields, refound nothing but the name of Sophia, in the hoarse voices of the men, and in the shrill pipes of the women; while echo feemed fo pleased to repeat the beloved found, that, if there is really fuch a person, I believe Ovid hath belied her sex.

Nothing reigned for a long time but confusion; till at last the 'Iquire, having sufficiently spent his breath, returned to the parlour, where he found Mrs Western and Mr Blifil, and threw himfelf, with the utmost dejection in

his countenance, into a great chair.

Here Mrs Western began to apply the following confolation:

" Brother, I am forry for what hath happened; and " that my niece should have behaved herself in a manner " fo unbecoming her family: but it is all your own do-" ings, and you have nobody to thank but yourfelf. "You know the hath been educated always in a manner " directly contrary to my advice, and now you fee the " consequence. Have I not a thousand times argued " with you about giving my niece her own will? But " you know I never could prevail upon you; and when " I had taken fo much pains to eradicate her headstrong " opinions, and to rectify your errors in policy, you " know she was taken out of my hands, so that I have

VOL. II. Ff " nothing " nothing to answer for. Had I been trusted entirely with the care of her education, no fuch accident as " this had ever befallen you: fo that you must comfort " yourfelf by thinking it was all your own doing; and in-"deed what elfe could be expected from fuch indulgence?" " Zounds! fifter," answered he, " you are enough to " make one mad. Have I indulged her? Have I given " her her will?——It was no longer ago than last night " that I threatened, if the disobeyed me, to confine " her to her chamber upon bread and water as long " as the lived.—You would provoke the patience of Job." " Did ever mortal hear the like?" replied she. " Bro-" ther, if I had not the patience of fifty Jobs, you would " make me forget all decency and decorum. Why " would you interfere? Did I not beg you, did I not " intreat you, to leave the whole conduct to me? You " have defeated all the operations of the campaign by " one false step. Would any man in his senses have " provoked a daughter by fuch threats as these? How " often have I told you, that English women are not to be " treated like Ciracassian * slaves. We have the protection of the world: we are to be won by gentle means " only, and not to be hectored, and bullied, and beat into " compliance, I thank Heaven, no Salique law governs " here: Brother, you have a roughness in your man-" ner which no woman but myfelf would bear. I do not " wonder that my niece was frightened and terrified into " taking this measure; and, to speak honestly, I think my " niece will be justified to the world for what she hath done. I repeat it to you again, brother, you must " comfort yourself, by remembering that it is all your own " fault. How often have I advised-" Here Western rose hastily from his chair, and venting two or three horrid imprecations, ran out of the room. When he was departed, his fifter expressed more bitter-

When he was departed, his fifter expressed more bitterness (if possible) against him, than she had done while he was present; for the truth of which she appealed to Mr Blisil, who, with great complacence, acquiesced entirely in all she said; but excused all the faults of Mr Western, as they must be considered," he said, "to have proceeded from the too inordinate fondness of a father, which

" must

^{*} Possibly Circassian!

"must be allowed the name of an amiable weakness."
"So much the more inexcusable;" answered the lady;

" for whom doth he ruin by his fondness, but his own

" child?" To which Blifil immediately agreed.

Mrs Western then began to express great consustion on the account of Mr Bliss, and of the usage which he had received from a family to which he intended so much honour. On this subject she treated the folly of her niece with great severity: but concluded with throwing the whole on her brother, who, she said, was inexcusable, to have proceeded so far without better assurances of his daughter's consent: "But he was," says she, "always of a violent, headstrong temper; and I can scarce forgive myself for all the advice I have thrown away upon him."

After much of this kind of conversation, which, perhaps, would not greatly entertain the reader, was it here particularly related, Mr Blifil took his leave, and returned home, not highly pleased with his disappointment; which however the philosophy which he had acquired from Square, and the religion infused into him by Thwackum, together with somewhat else, taught him to bear rather better than more passionate lovers bear these kind of evils.

CHAP. IX.

The Escape of Sophia.

IT is now time to look after Sophia; whom the reader, if he loves her half so well as I do, will rejoice to find her escaped from the clutches of her passionate father, and

from those of her dispassionate lover.

Twelve times did the iron register of time beat on the fonorous bell-metal, summoning the ghosts to rise, and walk their nightly round.—In plainer language, it was twelve o'clock, and all the family, as we have said, lay buried in drink and sleep, except only Mrs Western, who was deeply engaged in reading a political pamphlet, and except our heroine, who now softly stole down stairs, and, having unbarred and unlocked one of the house-doors, sallied forth, and hastened to the place of appointment.

F f .2 Notwithstanding

Notwithstanding the many pretty arts, which ladies sometimes practise to display their sears on every little occasion, (almost as many as the other sex use to conceal theirs) certainly there is a degree of courage, which not only becomes a woman, but is often necessary, to enable her to discharge her duty. It is indeed, the idea of serceness, and not of bravery, which destroys the semale character: for who can read the story of the justly-celebrated Arria, without conceiving as high an opinion of her gentleness and tenderness, as of her fortitude! at the same time, perhaps many a woman, who shrieks at a mouse or a rat, may be capable of poisoning a husband; or, what is worse, of driving him to poison himself.

Sophia, with all the gentleness which a woman can have, had all the spirit which she ought to have. When therefore she came to the place of appointment, and, instead of meeting her maid, as was agreed, saw a man ride directly up to her, she neither screamed out nor fainted away: not that her pulse then beat with its usual regularity, for she was at first under some surprise and apprehension: but these were relieved almost as soon as raised, when the man, pulling off his hat, asked her, in a very submissive manner, "If her ladyship did not expect to meet another lady?" and then proceeded to inform her, that he was sent to conduct her to that lady.

Sophia could have no possible suspicion of any falsehood in this account; she therefore mounted resolutely behind the fellow, who conveyed her safe to a town about five miles distant, where she had the satisfaction of finding the good Mrs Honour: for as the soul of the waiting-woman was wrapt up in those very habiliments which used to enwrap her body, she could by no means bring herself to trust them out of her sight. Upon these, therefore, she kept guard in person, while she detached the aforesaid fellow after her mistress, having given him all proper instructions.

They now debated what course to take, in order to avoid the pursuit of Mr Western, who, they knew, would fend after them in a few hours. The London road had such charms for Honour, that she was desirous of going on directly; alledging, that as Sophia could not be missed till eight or nine the next morning, her pursuers would

C-

al

ot

le

of

le

of

e

a

;

n

n

1-

e

d

1-

1,

y

0

n

d

e

-

e

1

not be able to overtake her, even though they knew which way she had gone. But Sophia had too much at stake to venture any thing to chance; nor did she dare trust too much to her tender limbs, in a contest which was to be decided only by swiftness. She resolved, therefore, to travel across the country, for at least twenty or thirty miles, and then to take the direct road to London. So, having hired horses to go twenty miles one way, when the intended to go twenty miles the other, the fet forward with the fame guide behind whom she had ridden from her father's house; the guide having now taken up behind him, in the room of Sophia, a much heavier, as well as much less lovely burden; being, indeed, a huge portmanteau, well stuffed with those outfide ornaments, by means of which the fair Honour hoped to gain many conquests, and finally to make her fortune in London city.

When they had gone about two hundred paces from the inn, on the London road, Sophia rode up to the guide, and with a voice much fuller of honey than was ever that of Plato, though his mouth is supposed to have been a bee-hive, begged him to take the first turning

which led towards Briftol.

Reader, I am not fupersitious, nor any great believer of modern miracles. I do not, therefore, deliver the following as a certain truth; for indeed I can scarce credit it myself: but the sidelity of an historian obliges me to relate what has been considently afferted. The horse then, on which the guide rode, is reported to have been so charmed by Sophia's voice, that he made a full stop, and exprest an unwillingness to proceed any farther.

Perhaps, however, the fact may be true, and less miraculous than it hath been represented; since the natural cause seems adequate to the effect; for as the guide at that moment desisted from a constant application of his armed right heel, (for, like Hudibras, he wore but one spur,) it is more than possible that this omission alone might occasion the beast to stop, especially as this was very frequent with him at other times.

But, if the voice of Sophia had really an effect on the horse, it had very little on the rider. He answered

fome.

fomewhat furlily, "That measter had ordered him to go
"a different way, and that he should lose his place, if he
"went any other way than that he was ordered."

Sophia, finding all her persuasions had no effect, began now to add irresistible charms to her voice; charms, which, according to the proverb, make the old mare trot, instead of standing still; charms, to which modern ages have attributed all that irresistible force, which the ancients imputed to perfect oratory. In a word, she promised she would reward him to his utmost

expectation.

The lad was not totally deaf to these promises, but he disliked their being indefinite: for though, perhaps, he had never heard that word, yet that in fact was his objection. He said, "Gentlevolks did not confider the case of poor volks; that he had like to have been turned away the other day, for riding about the country with a gentleman from 'Squire 'Allworthy's, who did not reward him as he should have done."

"With whom?" fays Sophia eagerly.—"With a gentleman from 'Squire Allworthy's," repeated the lad;
the 'fquire's fon, I think they call 'un."—"Whither,
which way did he go?" fays Sophia. "Why, a little
o' one fide o' Briftol, about twenty miles off," answered
the lad.—"Guide me," fays Sophia, "to the fame place,
and I'll give thee a guinea, or two, if one is not fufficient." "To be certain;" faid the boy, "it is honeftly worth two, when your ladyship considers what a
rifk I run; but however, if your ladyship will promife
me the two guineas, I'll e'en venture: to be certain it
is a finful thing to ride about my master's horses;
but one comfort is, I can only be turned away, and

" two guineas will partly make me amends."

The bargain being thus struck, the lad turned aside into the Bristol road, and Sophia set forward in pursuit of Jones, highly contrary to the remonstrances of Mrs Honour, who had much more desire to see London, than to see Mr Jones: for indeed she was not his friend with her mistress, as he had been guilty of some neglect in tertain pecuniary civilities, which are by custom due to the waiting-gentlewoman in all love affairs, and more especially

d

n

1

especially in those of a clandestine kind. This we impute rather to the carelessness of his temper, than to any want of generosity; but perhaps she derived it from the latter motive: certain it is, that she hated him very bitterly on that account, and resolved to take every opportunity of injuring him with her mistress. It was therefore highly unlucky for her, that she had gone to the very same town and inn whence Jones had started, and still more unlucky was she in having stumbled on the same guide, and on this accidental discovery which Sophia had made.

Our travellers arrived at Hambrook * at the break of day, where Honour was, against her will, charged to inquire the rout Mr Jones had taken. Of this, indeed, the guide himself could have informed them; but Sophia, I know not for what reason, never asked him the

question.

When Mrs Honour had made her report from the landlord, Sophia, with much difficulty procured fome indifferent horses, which brought her to the inn, where Jones had been confined rather by the misfortune of meeting with a surgeon, than by having met with a broken head.

Here Honour, being again charged with a commission of enquiry, had no fooner applied herfelf to the landlady, and had described the person of Mr Jones, than that sagacious woman began, in the vulgar phrase, to smell a rat. When Sophia therefore entered the room, instead of anfwering the maid, the landlady addressing herself to themistrefs, began the following speech, "Good-lack-a-day! why " there now, who would have thought it? I protest the " loveliest couple that ever eye beheld. I-fackens, Ma-" dam, it is no wonder the 'fquire run on fo about your " Ladyship. He told me indeed you was the finest lady " in the world, and to be fure fo you be. Mercy on him, " poor heart, I bepitied him, fo I did, when he used to " hug his pillow, and call it his dear Madam Sophia.-" I did all I could to diffuade him from going to the " wars: I told him there were men enow that were good · for

^{*} This was the village where Jones met the quaker.

" for nothing else but to be killed, that had not the love " of fuch fine ladies." " Sure," fays Sophia, " the " good woman is distracted." "No, no," cries the landlady, " I am not distracted." What, doth your " ladyship think I don't know then? I affure you he " told me all." " What faucy fellow," cries Honour, " told you any thing of my lady?" "No faucy fellow," " answered the landlady, " but the young gentleman you " inquired, after and a very pretty gentleman he " is, and he loves Madam Sophia Western to the bot-"tom of his foul." "He love my lady! I'd have you " to know, woman, she is meat for his master."-" Nay " Honour," faid Sophia, interrupting her, "don't be " angry with the good woman, fhe intends no harm." "No, marry, don't I," answered the landlady, emboldened by the foft accents of Sophia, and then launched into a long narrative too tedious to be here fet down, in which some passages dropt, that gave a little offence to Sophia, and much more to her waiting-woman, who hence took occasion to abuse poor Jones to her mistress the moment they were alone together, faying, " that " he must be a very pitiful fellow, and could have no " love for a lady whose name he would thus prostitute " in an alehouse."

Sophia did not fee his behaviour in fo very disadvantageous a light, and was perhaps more pleased with the violent raptures of his love, (which the landlady exaggerated as much as she had done every other circumstance,) than she was offended with the rest; and indeed she imputed the whole to the extravagance, or rather ebullience of his passion, and to the openness of his heart.

This incident, however, being afterwards revived in her mind, and placed in the most odious colours by Honour, served to heighten and give credit to those unlucky occurrences at Upton, and assisted the waiting-woman in her endeavours to make her mistress depart from that inn without seeing Jones.

The landlady, finding Sophia intended to ftay no long than till her horses were ready, and that without either eating or drinking, soon withdrew; when Honour began to take her mistress to task, (for indeed

ve

he

he

ur

ne

r,

ou

ne

t-

u

y

e

1-

n

0

0

S

t

O

e

the used great freedom,) and after a long harangue, in which the reminded her of her intention to go to London, and gave frequent hints of the impropriety of pursuing a young fellow, the at last concluded with this serious exhortation: "For heaven's sake, Madam, "consider what you are about, and whither you are go-

" ing."

This advice to a lady, who had already rode near forty miles, and in no very agreeable feason, may seem foolish enough. It may be supposed she had well considered and resolved this already; nay, Mrs Honour, by the hints she threw out, seemed to think so; and this, I doubt not, is the opinion of many readers, who have, I make no doubt, been long since well convinced of the purpose of our heroine, and have heartily condemned her

for it as a wanton baggage.

But in reality this was not the case. Sophia had been lately so distracted between hope and sear, her duty and love to her father, her hatred to Bliss, her compassion, and (why should we not confess the truth?) her love for Jones; which last the behaviour of her father, of her aunt, of every one else, and more particularly of Jones himself, had blown into a slame, that her mind was in that confused state, which may be truly said to make us ignorant of what we do, or whither we go, or rather indeed indifferent as to the consequence of either.

The prudent and fage advice of her maid produced, however, fome cool reflection; and she at length determined to go to Gloucester, and thence to proceed direct-

ly to London.

Vol. II.

But unluckily, a few miles before she entered that town, she met the hack-attorney, who, as is before mentioned, had dined there with Mr Jones. This fellow, being well known to Mrs Honour, stopt and spoke to her: of which Sophia at that time took little notice, more than to inquire who he was.

But having had a more particular account from Honour of this man afterwards at Gloucester, and hearing of the great expedition he generally made in travelling, for which (as hath been before observed,) he was particucularly famous; recollecting likewise, that she had over-

Gg

heard Mrs Honour inform him, that they were going to Gloucester, she began to fear lest her father might, by this fellow's means, be able to trace her to that city; wherefore, if she should there strike into the London road, she apprehended he would certainly be able to overtake her. She therefore altered her resolution; and having hired horses to go a week's journey, a way which she did not intend to travel, she again set forward after a light refreshment, contrary to the desires and earnest entreaties of her maid, and to the no less vehement remonstrances of Mrs Whitesield, who from good-breeding, or perhaps from good-nature, (for the poor young lady appeared much fatigued,) pressed her very heartily to stay that evening at Gloucester.

Having refreshed herself only with some tea, and with lying about two hours in bed, while her horses were getting ready, she resolutely left Mrs Whitesield's about eleven at night, and striking directly into the Worcester road, within less than four hours arrived at that very inn

where we last faw her.

Having thus traced our heroine very particularly back from her departure till her arrival at Upton, we shall in a very sew words bring her father to the same place; who having received the first scent from the post-boy, who conducted his daughter to Hambrook, very easily traced her afterwards to Gloucester; whence he pursued her to Upton, as he had learned Mr Jones had taken that route, (for Partridge, to use the 'squire's expression, left every where a strong scent behind him,) and he doubted not in the least but Sophia travelled, or, as he phrased it, ran the same way. He used indeed a very coarse expression, which need not be here inserted; as fox-hunters, who alone would understand it, will easily suggest it to themselves.

X.

by ty;

er-1a-

he a nn-

)y

h

t

HISTORY

OF A

FOUNDLING.

BOOK XI.

CONTAINING ABOUT THREE DAYS.

CHAP. I.

A Crust for the Critics.

IN our last initial chapter, we may be supposed to have treated that formidable set of men, who are called critics, with more freedom than becomes us; since they exact, and indeed generally receive, great condescension from authors. We shall in this, therefore, give the reasons of our conduct to this august body; and here we shall perhaps place them in a light, in which they have not hitherto been seen.

This word critic is of Greek derivation, and fignifies judgment. Hence I prefume fome perfons who have not understood the original, and have seen the English translation of the primitive, have concluded, that it meant judgment in the legal sense, in which it is frequently used as equivalent to condemnation.

I am the rather inclined to be of that opinion, as the geatest number of critics hath of late years been found G g 2 amongst

Befides

amongst the lawyers. Many of these gentlemen, from despair, perhaps, of ever rising to the bench in Westminster-hall, have placed themselves on the benches at the play-house, where they have exerted their judicial capacity, and have given judgment, i. e. condemned without

mercy.

The gentlemen would perhaps be well enough pleafed, if we were to leave them thus compared to one of the most important and honourable offices in the commonwealth, and, if we intended to apply to their favour, we would do so; but, as we design to deal very sincerely and plainly too with them, we must remind them of another officer of justice of a much lower rank; to whom, as they not only pronounce, but execute their own judgment, they bear likewise some remote resemblance.

But in reality there is another light, in which these modern critics may with great justice and propriety be seen; and this is that of a common slanderer. If a perfon who pries into the characters of others, with no other design but to discover their faults, and to publish them to the world, deserves the title of a slanderer of the reputation of men; should not a critic, who reads with the same malevolent view, be as properly stiled the slanderer of the

reputation of books?

Vice hath not, I believe, a more abject flave; fociety produces not a more odious vermin; nor can the devil receive a guest more worthy of him, nor possibly more welcome to him, than a flanderer. The world, I am afraid, regards not this monster with half the abhorrence which he deferves; and I am more afraid to affign the reason of this criminal lenity shewn towards him; yet it is certain, that the thief looks innocent in the comparison; nay, the murderer himself can seldom stand in competition with his guilt: for flander is a more cruel weapon than a fword, as the wounds which the former gives are always incurable. One method, indeed, there is of killing, and that the most base and execrable of all, which bears an exact analogy to the vice here disclaimed against, and that is poison: A means of revenge so base, and yet fo horrible, that it was once wifely diftinguished by our laws from all other murders, in the peculiar feverity of the punishment.

m

1-

ie

it

e

Besides the dreadful mischiefs done by slander, and the baseness of the means by which they are effected, there are other circumstances that highly aggravate its atrocious quality; for it often proceeds from no provocation, and seldom promises itself any reward, unless some black and infernal mind may propose a reward in the thoughts of having procured the ruin and misery of another.

Shakespeare hath nobly touched this vice, when he

fays,

Who steals my purse steals trash; 'tis something, no-

Twas mine, 'tis his, and hath been flave to thoufands:

But he, that filches from me my good name, Robs me of that which not enriches him,

But makes me poor indeed.

With all this my good reader will doubtless agree; but much of it will probably seem too severe, when applied to the slanderer of books. But let it here be considered, that both proceed from the same wicked disposition of mind, and are alike void of the excuse of temptation: nor shall we conclude the injury done this way to be very slight, when we consider a book as the author's offspring, and indeed as the child of his brain.

The reader, who hath fuffered his muse to continue hitherto in a virgin-state, can have but a very inadequate idea of this kind of paternal fondness. To such we may parody the tender exclamation of Macdust, "Alas! thou hast written no book." But the author, whose muse hath brought forth, will feel the pathetic strain, perhaps will accompany me with tears, (especially if his darling be already no more,) while I mention the uncasiness with which the big muse bears about her burden, the painful labour with which she produces it, and lastly, the care, the fondness, that the tender father nourishes his favourite with, till it be brought to maturity and produced to the world.

Nor is there any paternal fondness, which seems less to savour of absolute instinct, and which may so well

be reconciled to worldly wisdom, as this. These children may most truly be called the riches of their father; and many of them have with true silial piety sed their parent in his old age; so that not only the affection, but the interest of the author, may be highly injured by these slanderers, whose poisonous breath brings his book to an untimely end.

Lastly, the slander of a book is in truth the slander of the author; for as no one can call another bastard, without calling the mother a whore, so neither can any one give the name of sad stuff, horrid nonsense, &c. to

a book, without calling the author a blockhead, which, though in a moral fense it is a preferable appellation to that of villain, is perhaps rather more injurious to his

worldly interest.

Now, however ludicrous all this may appear to fome, others, I doubt not, will feel and acknowledge the truth of it; nay, may perhaps think I have not treated; the tubject with decent folemnity; but furely a man may speak truth with a smiling countenance. In reality, to depreciate a book maliciously, or even wantonly, is at least a very ill-natured office; and a morose snarling critic may, I believe, be suspected to be a bad man.

I will therefore endeavour, in the remaining part of this chapter, to explain the marks of this character; and to shew what criticism I here intend to obviate: for I can never be understood, unless by the very persons here meant, to infinuate, that there are no proper judges of writing, or to endeavour to exclude from the commonwealth of literature any of those noble critics, to whose labours the learned world are so greatly indebted. Such were Aristotle, Horace, and Longinus, among the ancients, Dacier and Bossu among the French, and some perhaps among us, who have certainly been duly authorised to execute at least a judicial authority in foro literario.

But, without afcertaining all the proper qualifications of a critic, which I have touched on elsewhere, I think I may very boldly object to the censures of any one, past upon works which he hath not himself read. Such censures as these, whether they speak from their own guess or suspicion, or from the report and opinion of d

it

n

others, may properly be faid to flander the reputation of

the book they condemn.

Such may likewise be suspected of deserving this character, who, without assigning any particular faults, condemn the whole in general desamatory terms, such as vile, dull, da—d stuff, &c, and particularly by the use of the monosyllable LOW, a word which becomes the mouth of no critic who is not RIGHT HONOURABLE.

Again, though there may be some faults justly affigned in the work, yet, if those are not in the most efsential parts, or if they are compensated by greater beauties, it will savour rather of the malice of a slanderer, than of the judgment of a true critic, to pass a severe sentence upon the whole, merely on account of some vicious part. This is directly contrary to the sentiments of Horace.

But where the beauties, more in number, shine, I am not angry, when a casual line, (That with some trivial faults unequal flows,) A careless hand, or human frailty shows.

Mr FRANCIS.

For, as Martial fays, Aliter non fit, avite, liber. No book can be otherwise composed. All beauty of character, as well as of countenance, and indeed of every thing human, is to be tried in this manner. Cruel indeed would it be, if such a work as this history, which has employed some thousands of hours in the composing, should be liable to be condemned, because some particular chapter, or perhaps chapters, may be obnoxious to very just and sensible objections: and yet nothing is more common than the most rigorous sentence upon books, supported by such objections, which, if they were rightly taken, (and that they are not always), do by no means go to the merit of the whole. In the theatre especially, a single expression, which doth not coincide with the taste of the audience, or with any individual critic of that audience,

is fure to be hissed; and one scene, which should be disapproved, would hazard the whole piece. To write within such severe rules as these, is as impossible as to live up to some splenetic opinions; and if we judge according to the sentiments of some critics, and of some Christians, no author will be saved in this world and no man in the next.

CHAP. II.

The Adventures which Sophia met with after her leaving Upton.

Our history, just before it was obliged to turn about, and travel backwards, had mentioned the departure of Sophia and her maid from the inn: we shall now therefore pursue the steps of that lovely creature, and leave her unworthy lover a little longer to bemoan his ill luck, or rather his ill conduct.

Sophia having directed her guide to travel through byroads across the country, they now passed the Severn, and had scarce got a mile from the inn, when the young lady, looking behind her, saw several horses coming after on full speed. This greatly alarmed her sears, and she called

to the guide to put on as fast as possible.

He immediately obeyed her, and away they rode at full gallop. But the faster they went, the faster were they followed; and as the horses behind were somewhat swifter than those before, so the former were at length overtaken; a happy circumstance for poor Sophia, whose fears, joined to her fatigue, had almost overpowered her spirits; but she was now instantly relieved by a female voice, that greeted her in the softest manner, and with the utmost civility. This greeting, Sophia, as soon as she could recover her breath, with like civility, and with the highest satisfaction to herself, returned.

The travellers who joined Sophia, and who had given her fuch terror, confifted, like her own company, of two females and a guide. The two parties proceeded three full miles together, before any one offered again to open their mouths, when our heroine, having pretty well got the better of her fear, (but yet being somewhat sur-

2 prife

Ì

1-

1

1

l

prised that the other still continued to attend her, as she purfued no great road, and had already paffed through feveral turnings,) accosted the strange lady in a most obliging tone, and faid, "She was very happy to find they were both travelling the fame way." The other, who, like a ghost, only wanted to be spoke to, readily answered, "That the happiness was entirely hers; that she was " a perfect stranger in that country, and was so overjoyed " at meeting a companion of her own fex, that she had " perhaps been guilty of an impertinence, which requi-" red great apology, in keeping pace with her." More civilities passed between these two ladies; for Mrs Honour had now given place to the fine habit of the stranger, and had fallen into the rear. But though Sophia had great curiofity to know why the other lady continued to travel on through the fame by-roads with herfelf, nay, though this gave her some uneafiness; yet fear, or modesty, or some other consideration, restrained her from asking the question.

The strange lady now laboured under a difficulty, which appears almost below the dignity of history to mention. Her bonnet had been blown from her head not less than five times within the last mile; nor could the come at any ribbon or handkerchief to tie it under her When Sophia was informed of this, she immediately supplied her with a handkerchief for this purpose; which, while she was pulling from her pocket, she perhaps too much neglected the management of her horse; for the beast, now unluckily making a false step, fell upon his fore-legs, and threw his fair rider from his

back.

Though Sophia came head foremost to the ground, she happily received not the least damage; and the same circumitances, which had perhaps contributed to her fall, now preferved her from confusion; for the lane, which they were then paffing, was narrow and very much overgrown with trees, so that the moon could here afford very little light, and was moreover at prefent fo obscured in a cloud, that it was almost perfectly dark. By these means the young lady's modesty, which was extremely delicate, elcaped as free from injury as her limbs, and the was once

VOL. II. Hh more more re-instated in her saddle, having received no other

harm than a little fright by her fall.

Day-light at length appeared in its full lustre: and now the two ladies, who were riding over a common, side by side, looking stedfastly at each other, at the same moment both their eyes became sixed, both their horses stopt, and both, speaking together, with equal joy pronounced, the one the name of Sopkia, the other that of Harriet.

This unexpected encounter furprised the ladies much more than I believe it will the fagacious reader, who must have imagined that the strange lady could be no other than Mrs Fitzpatrick the cousin of Miss Western, whom we before mentioned to have fallied from the inn a few mi-

nutes after her.

So great was the furprize and joy, which these two cousins conceived at this meeting, (for they had formerly been most intimate acquaintance and friends, and had long lived together with their aunt Western,) that it is impossible to recount half the congratulations that passed between them, before either of them asked a very natural question of the other, namely, whither she was going?

This at last, however, came first from Mrs Fitzpatrick; but, easy and natural as the question may seem, Sophia found it difficult to give it a very ready and certain answer. She begged her cousin, therefore, to suspend all curiosity till they arrived at some inn, "which I sup-"pose," says she, "can hardly be far distant: and be-"lieve me, Harriet, I suspend as much curiosity on my fide, for indeed I believe our astonishment is pretty e-"qual."

The conversation which passed between these ladies on the road was, I apprehend, little worth relating; and less certainly was that between the two waiting-women; for they likewise began to pay their compliments to each other. As for the guides, they were debarred from the pleasure of discourse, the one being placed in the van, and

the other obliged to bring up the rear.

In this posture they travelled many hours, till they came into a wide and well-beaten road, which, turning to the right, soon brought them to a very fair and promising inn, where they all alighted; but so fatigued was Sophia, that, as she had fat her horse during the

laft

I. er

ow oy nt ne

ch ift an e-ni-

ly ng li-ne-ral

k;
nia
nall
pneny
e-

ies
nd
n;
ch
he
nd

ey nnd
ed
he

last five or fix miles with great difficulty, fo was she now incapable of difmounting from him without affiftance. This the landlord, who had hold of her horse, presently perceiving, offered to lift her in his arms from her faddle, and she too readily accepted the tender of his fervice. Indeed, fortune feems to have refolved to put Sophia to the blush that day, and the second malicious attempt fucceeded better than the first; for my landlord had no fooner received the young lady in his arms, than his feet, which the gout had lately very feverely handled, gave way, and down he tumbled; but at the fame time, with no less dexterity than gallantry, contrived to throw himself under his charming burden, so that he alone received any bruife from the fall; for the great injury which happened to Sophia, was a violent shock given to her modesty by an immoderate grin, which, at her rifing from the ground, she observed in the countenances of most of the by-standers. This made her sufpect what had really happened, and what we shall not here relate for the indulgence of those readers, who are capable of laughing at the offence given to a young lady's delicacy. Accidents of this kind we have never regarded in a comical light; nor will we feruple to fay, that he must have a very inadequate idea of the modesty of a beautiful young woman, who would wish to facrifice it to fo paultry a fatisfaction as can arife from laughter.

This fright and shock, joined to the violent satigue which both her mind and body had undergone, almost overcame the excellent constitution of Sophia, and she had scarce strength sufficient to totter into the inn, leaning on the arm of her maid. Here she was no sooner seated than she called for a glass of water; but Mrs Honour, very judiciously in my opinion, changed it into a

glass of wine.

Mrs Fitzpatrick, hearing from Mrs Honour that Sophia had not been in bed during the two last nights, and observing her to look very pale and wan with satigue, earnestly entreated her to refresh herself with some sleep. She was yet a stranger to her history, or her apprehensions; but, had she known both, she would have given the same advice; for rest was visibly necessary for her; and their long journey through by-roads so entirely remo-

· Hh 2

de

ved all danger of pursuit, that she was herself perfectly

eafy on that account.

Sophia was eafily prevailed on to follow the counfel of her friend, which was heartily feconded by her maid. Mrs Fitzpatrick likewise offered to bear her coufin company, which Sophia with much complaisance ac-

cepted.

The mistress was no sooner in bed, than the maid prepared to follow her example. She began to make many apologies to her sister Abigail for leaving her alone in so horrid a place as an inn; but the other stopped her short, being as well inclined to a nap as herself, and desired the honour of being her bed-fellow. Sophia's maid agreed to give her a share of her bed, but put in her claim to all the honour. So, after many court'sies and compliments, to bed together went the waiting-women, as their mistresses had done before them.

It was usual with my landlord (as it is indeed with the wholefraternity) to inquire particularly of all the coachmen, footmen, postboys, and others, into the names of all his guests, what their estate was, and where it lay. It cannot therefore be wondered at, that the many particular circumstances which attended our travellers, and especially their retiring all to sleep at so extraordinary and unusual an hour as ten in the morning, should excite his curiosity. As soon, therefore, as the guides entered the kitchen, he began to examine who the ladies were, and whence they came; but the guides, though they faithfully related all they knew, gave him very little satisfaction. On the contrary, they rather inflamed his curiosity than extinguished it.

This landlord had the character, among all his neighhours, of being a very fagacious fellow. He was thought to fee farther and deeper into things than any man in the parish, the parson himself not excepted. Perhaps his look had contributed not a little to procure him that reputation; for there was in this something wonderfully wise and significant, especially when he had a pipe in his mouth, which indeed he seldom was without. His behaviour likewise greatly assisted in promoting the opinion of his wisdom. In his deportment he was solemn, if not sullen; and when he spoke, which was seldom, he always delivered y

e

delivered himself in a slow voice; and though his sentences were short, they were still interrupted with many hum's and ha's, ay ay's, and other expletives; so that, tho' he accompanied his words with certain explanatory gestures, such as shaking or nodding the head, or pointing with his fore-singer, he generally left his hearers to understand more than he expressed; nay, he commonly gave them a hint, that he knew much more than he thought proper to disclose. This last circumstance alone may indeed very well account for his character of wisdom, since men are strangely inclined to worship what they do not understand; a grand secret, upon which several imposers on mankind have totally relied for the success of their frauds.

This polite person, now taking his wife aside, asked her, " what she thought of the ladies lately arrived?" "Think of them?" faid the wife: "why, what should "I think of them?" "I know," answered he, " what "I think. The guides tell strange stories. One pre-" tends to be come from Gloucester, and the other from " Upton; and neither of them, for what I can find, can " tell whither they are going. But what people ever tra-" vel across the country from Upton hither, especially " to London? And one of the maid-fervants, before the " alighted from her horse, asked if this was not the Lon-" don road? Now, I have put all these circumstances " together, and whom do you think I have found them " out to be?" " Nay," antwered fhe, " you know I ne-" ver pretend to guess at your discoveries."-" It is a " good girl," replied he, chucking her under the chin; "I must own you have always submitted to my know-" ledge of these matters. Why, then, depend upon it; " mind what I fay; - depend upon it, they are certainly " fome of the rebel ladies, who, they fay, travel with the " young chevalier, and have taken a round-about way to " escape the duke's army."

"Husband," quoth the wife, "you have certainly hit it; for one of them is drest as fine as any princess; and, to be sure, she looks for all the world like one.—But yet, when I consider one thing."—"When you consider," cries the landlord contemptuously——"Come, pray let's hear what you consider."——"Why, it is,"

answered

"

uī

ne

hi

W

th

fo

66

answered the wife, "that she is too humble to be any "very great lady; for, while our Betty was warming the bed, she called her nothing but child, and my dear, and sweetheart; and when Betty offered to pull off her shoes and stockings, she would not suffer her, saying,

" fhe would not give her the trouble." "Pugh!" answered the husband, "that is nothing. " Dost think, because you have seen some great ladies " rude and uncivil to perfons below them, that none of " them know how to behave themselves when they come " before their inferiors? I think I know people of fa-" shion when I see them. I think I do. Did not she " call for a glass of water when she came in? Another " fort of woman would have called for a dram: you " know they would. If she be not a woman of very " great quality, fell me for a fool; and I believe, those " who buy me will have a bad bargain. Now, would " a woman of her quality travel without a footman, un-" less upon some such extraordinary occasion?" " Nay, "to be fure, husband," cries she, "you know these matters better than I, or most folk." "I think I do "know fomething," faid he. "To be fure," answered the wife, "the poor little heart looked so piteous, when she " fat down in the chair, I protest I could not help ha-" ving a compassion for her, almost as much as if she " had been a poor body. But what's to be done, huf-" band? If the be a rebel, I suppose you intend to betray " her up to the court. Well, she's a sweet-tempered, " good humoured lady, be the what the will; and I shall " hardly refrain from crying, when I hear she is hanged " or beheaded." " Pooh!" answered the husband:-"But, as to what's to be done, it is not so easy a matter " to determine. I hope, before the goes away, we " shall have the news of a battle: for, if the Chevalier ' should get the better, the may gain us interest at court, " and make our fortunes without betraying her." "Why, " that's true," replied the wife; "and I heartily hope she " will have it in her power. Certainly she's a sweet good " lady; it would go horribly against me to have her " come to any harm." " Pooh," cries the landlord, women are always fo tender-hearted. Why you would " not harbour rebels, would you?" " No certainly," an**iwered**

ny

he

ar,

er

ıg.

les

of

ne a-

he

er

ry

ld

n-

y, fe

lo d

ne

2-

f-

y

d,

11

d

r

re

T

t,

e

d

r

١,

d

fwered the wife; " and as for betraying her, come what " will on't, nobody can blame us. It is what any body " would do in our case."

While our politic landlord, who had not, we fee, undefervedly the reputation of great wisdom among his neighbours, was engaged in debating this matter with himself, (for he paid little attention to the opinion of his wise,) news arrived that the rebels had given the duke the slip, and had got a day's march towards London; and soon after arrived a famous Jacobite squire, who, with great joy in his countenance, shook the landlord by the hand, saying, "All's our own, boy; ten thousand honest "Frenchmen are landed in Suffolk. Old England for ever! ten thousand French, my brave lad! I am going to tap away directly."

This news determined the opinion of the wife man, and he resolved to make his court to the young lady when she arose; for "he had now," he said, "discover-" ed, that she was no other than Madam Jenny Cameron

" herfelf."

CHAP. III.

A very short chapter, in which, however, is a sun, a moon, a star, and an angel.

HE fun (for he keeps very good hours at this time of the year) had been fome time retired to rest, when Sophia arose greatly refreshed by her sleep, which short as it was, nothing but her extreme fatigue could have occasioned; for though she had told her maid, and perhaps herself too, that she was persectly easy when she left Upton, yet it is certain her mind was a little affected with that malady, which is attended with all the restless symptoms of a fever and is perhaps the very distemper which physicians mean (if they mean any thing) by the fever on the spirits.

Mrs Fitzpatrick likewise left her bed at the same time; and having summoned her maid, immediately dressed herfels. She was really a very pretty woman, and, had she been in any other company but that of Sophia, might have been thought beautiful; but when Mrs Honour, of

her

thoughts

her own accord, attended, (for her mistress would not suffer her to be waked,) and had equipped our heroine, the charms of Mrs Fitzpatrick, who had performed the office of the morning-star, and had preceded greater glories, shared the fate of that star, and were totally eclipsed the moment those glories shone forth.

Perhaps Sophia never looked more beautiful than she did at this instant. We ought not therefore to condemn the maid of the inn for her hyperbole, who, when she descended, after having lighted the fire, declared, and ratified it with an oath, that, if ever there was an angel upon

earth, she was now above stairs.

Sophia had acquainted her cousin with her defign to go to London, and Mrs Fitzpatrick had agreed to accompany her; for the arrival of her husband at Upton had put an end to her defign of going to Bath, or to her aunt They had therefore no fooner finished their Western. tea, than Sophia proposed to set out, the moon then shining extremely bright, and, as for the frost, she defied it; nor had the any of those apprehensions, which many young ladies would have felt at travelling by night; for fhe had, as we have before observed, some little degree of natural courage; and this her prefent fenfations, which bordered fomewhat on despair, greatly increased. Befides, as the had already travelled twice with fafety, by the light of the moon, the was the better emboldened to trust to it a third time.

The disposition of Mrs Fitzpatrick was more timorous, for though the greatest terrors had conquered the less, and the presence of her husband had driven her away at so unseasonable an hour from Upton; yet, being now arrived at a place where she thought herself safe from his pursuit, these lesser terrors, of I know not what, operated so strongly, that she earnestly entreated her cousin to stay till the next morning, and not expose herself to the danger of travelling by night.

Sophia, who was yielding to an excess, when she could neither laugh nor reason her cousin out of these apprehensions, at last gave way to them. Perhaps, indeed, had she known of her father's arrival at Upton, it might have been more difficult to have persuaded her; for, as to Jones, she had, I am asraid, no great horror at the

XI.

fuf.

, the

e of.

ries,

the

The

emn

fhe

ati-

pon

1 to

m-

nad

unt

leir

in-

it;

ny

for

of

ch

ie-

by

to

,

at

is d

y

-

thoughts of being overtaken by him; nay, to confess the truth, I believe she rather wished than feared it; though I might honestly enough have concealed this wish from the reader, as it was one of those secret spontaneous emotions of the soul, to which the reason is often a stran-

ger.

When our young ladies had determined to remain all that evening in their inn, they were attended by the landlady, who defired to know what their ladyships would be pleased to eat. Such charms were there in the voice, in the manner, and in the affable deportment of Sophia, that she ravished the landlady to the highest degree; and that good woman, concluding that she had attended Jenny Cameron, became in a moment a staunch Jacobite, and wished heartily well to the young Pretender's cause, from the great sweetness and affability with which she had been treated by his supposed mistress.

The two cousins began now to impart to each other their reciprocal curiofity, to know what extraordinary accidents on both sides occasioned this so strange and unexpected meeting. At last Mrs Fitzpatrick, having obtained of Sophia a promise of communicating likewise in her turn, began to relate what the reader, if he is desirous to know her history, may read in the ensuing

chapter.

CHAP. IV.

The History of Mrs Fitzpatrick.

MRS Fitzpatrick, after a filence of a few moments, fetching a deep figh, thus began:

"It is natural to the unhappy to feel a fecret con-

- " cern in recollecting those periods of their lives which have been most delightful to them. The remembrance of past pleasures affects us with a kind of ten-
- " der grief, like what we suffer for departed friends,

" and the ideas of both may be faid to haunt our imaginations.

"For this reason, I never reflect without forrow on those days, (the happiest far of my life,) which we fpent together, when both were under the care of my Vol. II.

"aunt

" aunt Western. Alas! why are Miss Graveairs, and " Miss Giddy no more? you remember, I am fure, when

we knew each other by no other names. Indeed you

" gave the latter appellation with too much cause. I " have fince experienced how much I deferved it.

" my Sophia, was always my fuperior in every thing, and "I heartily hope you will be fo in your fortune. I shall

" never forget the wife and matronly advice you once " gave me, when I lamented being disappointed of a ball,

" tho' you could not be then fourteen years old-O my

" Sophy, how bleft must have been my situation, when I " could think fuch a disappointment a misfortune, and

" when indeed it was the greatest I had ever known!" " And yet, my dear Harriet," answered Sophia, "it

" was then a ferious matter with you. Comfort yourfelf " therefore with thinking, that whatever you now lament,

" may hereafter appear as trifling and contemptible as a

" ball would at this time."

" Alas, my Sophia," replied the other lady, " you " yourself will think otherwise of my present situation;

" for greatly must that tender heart be altered, if my " misfortunes do not draw many a figh, nay, many a

" tear, from you. The knowledge of this should per-

" haps deter me from relating what I am convinced will " fo much affect you." ——Here Mrs Fitzpatrick ftopt, till at the repeated entreaties of Sophia, she thus proceed-

ed:

" Though you must have heard much of my marriage, " yet as matters may probably have been mifreprefented,

" I will fet out from the very commencement of my un-" fortunate acquaintance with my prefent husband;

" which was at Bath, foon after you left my aunt, and re-

" turned home to your father.

" Among the gay young fellows, who were at this " feafon at Bath, Mr Fitzpatrick was one. He was hand-

" fome, degagee, extremely gallant, and in his drefs ex-" ceeded most others. In short, my dear, if you was

" unluckily to fee him now, I could describe him no bet-

"ter than by telling you he was the very reverse of evc-" ry thing which he is: for he hath rusticated himself

" fo long, that he is become an absolute wild Irishman.

"But to proceed in my flory; the qualifications which

.IZ

nd

en

ou

I

u,

rd

all

ce

11,

ly

I

d

it

lf

t,

a

u

1

the then poffessed, so well recommended him, that tho' "the people of quality at that time lived separate from " the rest of the company, and excluded them from all "their parties, Mr Fitzpatrick found means to gain ad-" mittance. It was perhaps no eafy matter to avoid him; " for he required little or no invitation; and as being " handsome and genteel, he found it no very difficult mat-" ter to ingratiate himself with the ladies; so, he having " frequently drawn his fword, the men did not care public-" ly to affront him. Had it not been for some such reasons, "I believe he would have been foon expelled by his own " fex: for furely he had no strict title to be preferred to " the English gentry; nor did they seem inclined to shew " him any extraordinary favour. They all abused him " behind his back, which might probably proceed from "envy; for by the women he was well received, and " very particularly diffinguished by them.

"My aunt, though no person of quality herself, as
she had always lived about the court, was enrolled
in that party: for by whatever means you get into
the polite circle, when you are once there, it is sufficient merit for you that you are there. This observation, young as you was, you could scarce avoid making from my aunt, who was free, or reserved,
with all people, just as they had more or less of this

" merit.

"And this merit, I believe, it was, which principally recommended Mr Fitzpatrick to her favour. In which he fo well succeeded, that he was always one of her private parties. Nor was he backward in returning fuch distinction; for he soon grew so very particular in his behaviour to her, that the scandal club first began to take notice of it, and the better disposed persons made a match between them. For my own part, I confess, I made no doubt but that his designs were strictly honourable, as the phrase is; that is, to rob a lady of her fortune, by way of marriage. My aunt was, I conceived, neither young enough nor handsome enough, to attract much wicked inclination; but she had matrimonial charms in great abundance.

"I was the more confirmed in this opinion, from the extraordinary respect which he shewed to myself, from

Ch

66

"the first moment of our acquaintance. This I underflood as an attempt to lessen, if possible, that disinclination which my interest might be supposed to give
me towards the match; and I know not but in some
measure it had that essect: for as I was well contented
with my own fortune, and of all people the least a
slave to interested views; so I could not be violently
the enemy of a man with whose behaviour to me I was
greatly pleased; and the more so, as I was the only
object of such respect; for he behaved at the same
time to many women of quality without any respect at
all.

"Agreeable as this was to me, he foon changed it into " another kind of behaviour, which was perhaps more " fo. He now put on much foftness and tenderness, and " languished and fighed abundantly. At times, indeed, " whether from art or nature I will not determine, he " gave his usual loose to gaiety and mirth; but this was " always in general company, and with other women; " for even in a country-dance, when he was not my " partner, he became grave; and put on the foftest look " imaginable, the moment he approached me. Indeed " he was in all things fo very particular towards me, that "I must have been blind not to have discovered it. " And, and, and-" " And you was more pleased " still, my dear Harriet, cries Sophia: "you need not be " ashamed," added she sighing; " for sure there are irof refistable charms in tenderness, which too many men " are able to affect." " True," answered her cousin, " men, who in all other instances want common sense, " are very Machiavals in the art of loving. I wish I " began to be as bufy with me as it had before been with " my aunt; and fome good ladies did not fcruple to af-" firm, that Mr Fitzpatrick had an intrigue with us 66 both.

"But what may feem aftonishing; my aunt never faw, nor in the least feemed to suspect that which was visible enough, I believe, from both our behaviours. One would indeed think, that love puts out the eyes of an old woman. In fact, they so greedily swallow the addresses which are made to them, that, like an outra-

" geous glutton, they are not at leifure to observe what pas-" fes amongst others at the same table. This I have obser-" ved in more cases than my own; and this was so strongly veri-" fied by my aunt, that, tho' she often found us together " at her return from the pump, the least canting word " of his, pretending impatience at her absence, effectual-" ly fmothered all fuspicion. One artifice succeeded with " her to admiration. This was his treating me like a lit-"tle child, and never calling me by any other name in " her presence, but that of pretty Miss. This indeed did " him fome differvice with your humble fervant; but I foon " faw thro' it, especially as in her absence he behaved to " me, as I have faid, in a different manner. However, " if I was not greatly disobliged by a conduct of which I " had discovered the design, I smarted very severely for " it: for my aunt really conceived me to be what her " lover, (as she thought him,) called me, and treated "me in all respects as a perfect infant. To say the truth, " I wonder she had not insisted on my again wearing lead-" ing-strings.

"At last my lover (for so he was) thought proper, in a most solemn manner, to disclose a secret which I had known long before. He now placed all the love which he had pretended to my aunt to my account. He lamented, in very pathetic terms, the encouragement she had given him, and made a high merit of the tedious hours, in which he had undergone her conversation.—What shall I tell you, my dear Sophia?—Then I will confess the truth, I was pleased with my man, I was pleased with my conquest. To rival my aunt delighted me; to rival so many other women charmed me. In short, I am afraid I did not behave as I should do, even upon the very first declaration.——I wish I did not almost give him positive encouragement be-

" fore we parted.

"The Bath now talked loudly, I might almost say, roared against me; several young women affected to shun my acquaintance, not so much perhaps from any real suspicion, as from a desire of banishing me from a company, in which I too much engrossed their savourite man. And here I cannot omit expressing my gratitude to the kindness intended me by Mr Nash;

" who

" who took me one day afide, and gave me advice, which " if I had followed, I had been a happy woman, " Child," fays he, " I am forry to fee, the familiarity " which subsists between you and a fellow who is alto. " gether unworthy of you, and I am afraid will prove your ruin. As for your old stinking auat, if it was to " be no injury to you, and my pretty Sophia Western, " (I affure you I repeat his words,) I should be hear-" tily glad that the fellow was in possession of all that " belongs to her. I never advise old women: for, if " they take it in their heads to go to the devil, it is no " more possible, than worth while, to keep them from " him. Innocence, and youth, and beauty, are worthy " a better fate, and I would fave them from his clutch-" es. Let me advise you therefore, dear child, never suf-" fer this fellow to be particular with you again." - " Ma-" ny more things he faid to me, which I have now for-" gotten, and indeed I attended very little to them at that " time: for inclination contradicted all he faid; and be-" fides, I could not be perfuaded, that women of quality " would condefcend to familiarity with fuch a perion as " he described.

"But I am afraid, my dear, I shall tire you with a detail of so many minute circumstances. To be concise therefore, imagine me married; imagine me with my husband, at the seet of my aunt; and then imagine the maddest woman in Bedlam in a raving sit, and your imagination will suggest to you no more than

"The very next day my aunt left the place, partly to avoid feeing Mr Fitzpatrick or myfelf, and as much

" what really happened.

" perhaps to avoid feeing any one else; for, though I am told she hath since denied every thing stoutly, I besilieve the was then a little confounded at her disappointment. Since that time I have written to her many letters; but never could obtain an answer, which I must own sits somewhat the heavier, as she herself was,

"though undefignedly, the occasion of all my sufferings:

for had it not been under the colour of paying his ad
dresses to her, Mr Fitzpatrick would never have found

fufficient opportunities to have engaged my heart,

"which, in other circumstances, I still flatter myself

ch

an.

ity

10-

gyc

to

ril,

ar-

hat

, if

no

om

hy

ch-

uf. Taor-

hat

belity

as

1 3

on-

ith

ine

ind

nan

to

ich

h I

be-

nt-

any

hI

ras,

gs:

ad-

and

art,

felt

ruid

" would not have been an eafy conquest to such a person" " Indeed, I believe I should not have erred so grossly in " my choice, if I had relied on my own judgment; but "I trusted totally to the opinion of others, and very " foolithly took the merit of a man for granted, whom "I faw fo univerfally well received by the women. "What is the reason, my dear, that we, who have un-" derstandings equal to the wifest and greatest of the " other fex, fo often make choice of the filliest fel-" lows for companions and favourites? It railes my in-" dignation to the highest pitch, to reflect on the num-" bers of women of fense who have been undone by " fools." Here she paused a moment, but Sophia making no answer, the proceeded as in the next chapter.

CHAP. V.

In which the History of Mrs Fitzpatrick is continued.

E rémained at Bath no longer than a fortnight after our wedding : for, as to any reconcilia-"tion with my aunt, there were no hopes; and of my " fortune, not one farthing could be touched till I was " of age, of which I now wanted more than two years. " My husband, therefore, was resolved to set out for " Ireland; against which I remonstrated very earnestly, " and infifted on a promife which he had made me be-" fore our marriage, that I should never take this jour-" ney against my consent; and indeed I never intended " to confent to it: nor will any body, I believe, blame " me for that resolution; but this, however, I never " mentioned to my husband, and petitioned only for the " reprieve of a month; but he had fixed the day, and " to that day he obstinately adhered.

"The evening before our departure, as we were dif-" puting this point with great eagerness on both sides, " he flarted fuddenly from his chair, and left me abrupt-" ly faying, he was going to the rooms. He was hardly " out of the house, when I saw a paper lying on the "floor, which, I suppose, he had carelessly pulled from " his pocket, together with his handkerchief. This pa-

" per I took immediately up, and, finding it to be a letter. I

" made

Book XI.

" made no fcruple to open and read it; and indeed I read
" it so often, that I can repeat it to you almost word for
" word. This then was the letter:

" To Mr BRIAN FITZPATRICK.

"SIR, "TTOURS received, and am furprised you should use me in this manner, as have never seen any " of your cash, unless for one linsey woolsey coat, and so your bill now is upwards of 150 l. Consider, Sir, how often you have fobbed me off with your being 46. shortly to be married to this lady, and t'other lady: 46 but I can neither live on hopes or promifes, nor will " my woolen-draper take any fuch in payment. You " tell me you are secure of having either the aunt or the " niece, and that you might have married the aunt before " this, whose jointure you say is immense, but that you " prefer the niece on account of her ready money. Pray, 46 Sir, take a fool's advice for once, and marry the first " you can get. You will pardon my offering my advice, " as you know I fincerely wish you well. Shall draw on you per next post, in favour of Messieurs John Drug-44 get and Company, at fourteen days, which doubt not wour honouring, and am,

" SIR,

" Your humble fervant,

" SAM. GOSGRIEVE."

"This was the letter word for word. Guess, my dear girl, guess how this letter affected me. You prefer the niece on account of her ready money! If every one of these words had been a dagger, I could with pleasure have stabbed them into his heart; but I will not recount my frantic behaviour on the occasion. I had pretty well spent my tears before his return home; but sufficient remains of them appeared in my would find the words were both silent. At length in

" a haughty tone he faid, 'I hope, Madam, your ferwants have packed up all your things; for the coach

ad for

ald

ny

nd

ir,

ng

y:

vill

ou

the

ore

ou

ay,

irst

ice,

on

ug-

not

E."

ear

efer

erv

rith

will

on.

urn

my

air,

n in

fer-

ach

Will

"will be ready by fix in the morning.' My patience was totally subdued by this provocation, and I answer-ed, 'No, Sir, there is a letter still remains unpacked;' and then throwing it on the table, I fell to upbraiding him with the most bitter language I could invent.

"Whether guilt, or shame, or prudence, restrained " him, I cannot fay; but though he is the most passion-" ate of men, he exerted no rage on this occasion. He " endeavoured, on the contrary, to pacify me by the most " gentle means. He fwore the phrase in the letter, to " which I principally objected, was not his, nor had he " ever written any fuch. He owned indeed the having " mentioned his marriage, and that preference which " he had given to myfelf, but denied with many oaths " the having affigned any fuch reason: and he excused " the having mentioned any fuch matter at all, on ac-" count of the straits he was in for money, arising, he " faid, from his having too long neglected his estate in " Ireland; and this, he faid, which he could not bear " to discover to me, was the only reason of his having " fo strenuously insisted on our journey. He then used " feveral very endearing expressions, and concluded by

" a very fond carefs, and many violent protestations of love.

" There was one circumstance, which, though he did not appeal to it, had much weight with me in his fa" vour, and that was the word jointure in the tailor's

"this Mr Fitzpatrick well knew.—As I imagined, therefore, that the fellow must have inserted this of

" his own head, or from hearfay, I perfuaded myfelf he might have ventured likewife on that odious line on no

" better authority. What reasoning was this, my dear?
" was I not an advocate rather than a judge?—but why
" do I mention such a circumstance as this, or appeal to

"it for the justification of my forgiveness?——In short,

" had he been guilty of twenty times as much, half the tenderness and fondness, which he used, would have

" prevailed on me to have forgiven him. I now made no

" farther objections to our fetting out, which we did the next morning, and in a little more than a week arrived

" at the feat of Mr Fitzpatrick

Vol. II. Kk # "Your

"Your curiofity will excuse me from relating any " occurrences which past during our journey: for it " would indeed be highly difagreeable to travel it over " again, and no less so to you to travel it over with " me.

"This feat then is an ancient mansion-house: if I was " in one of those merry humours, in which you have so often feen me, I could describe it to you ridiculously " enough. It looked as if it had been formerly inhabi-"ted by a gentleman. Here was room enough, and not " less room on account of the furniture, for indeed there was very little in it. An old woman, who feemed co-" eval with the building, and greatly refembled her whom "Chamont mentions in the Orphan, received us at the gate, and in a howl fcarce human, and to me unintelli-" gible, welcomed her mafter home. In fhort, the whole " fcene was fo gloomy and melancholy, that it threw my " fpirits into the lowest dejection; which my husband discerning, instead of relieving, increased by two or "three malicious observations. 'There are good houses, "Madam,' fays he, 'as you find, in other placesbe fides " ings at Bath."

" England; but perhaps you had rather be in dirty lodg-" Happy, my dear, is the woman who in any state of

" life hath a cheerful good-natured companion to fup-" port and comfort her: but why do I reflect on happy " fituations only to aggravate my own mifery! My com-" panion, far from clearing up the gloom of folitude, foon " convinced me, that I must have been wretched with him in any place, and in any condition. In a word, " he was a furly fellow, a character perhaps you have ne-" ver feen; for indeed no woman ever fees it, exempli-" fied, but in a father, a brother or a husband; and,

" though you have a father, he is not of that character. "This furly fellow had formerly appeared to me the very reverse, and so he did still to every other person. "Good Heaven! how is it possible for a man to main-

" tain a confrant lie in his appearance abroad and in " company, and to content himself with shewing disa-" greeable truth only at home? Here, my dear, they

" make themselves amends for the uneasy restraint which " they put on their tempers in the world; for I have ob-

" ferved

1

0

e

-

n

e

-

e

V

r

-

f

).

y

-

n

h

l,

i-

r.

1.

1-

n

1-

h

"ferved, the more merry, and gay, and good-humoured my husband hath at any time been in company, the more fullen and morose he was sure to become at our next private meeting. How shall I describe his barbarity? To my fondness he was cold and insensible. My little comical ways, which you, my Sophy, and which others have called so agreeable, he treated with contempt. In my most serious moments he sung and whistled; and, whenever I was thoroughly dejected and miserable, he was angry and abused me: for though he was never pleased with my good humour, nor ascribed it to my satisfaction in him; yet my low spirits always offended him, and those he imputed to my repentance of having (as he said,) married an Irishman.

"You will eafily conceive, my dear Graveairs, (I all: " your pardon, I really forgot myself,) that when a woman " makes an imprudent match in the fense of the world; " that is, when she is not an arrant prostitute to pecuni-" ary interest, she must necessarily have some inclination " and affection for her man. You will as eafily believe " that this affection may possibly be lessened; nay, I do " affure you, contempt will wholly eradicate it. This con-" tempt I now began to entertain for my husband, whom "I now discovered to be-I must use the expression-" an arrant blockhead. Perhaps you will wonder I did " not make this discovery long before; but women will " fuggest a thousand excuses to themselves for the folly " of those they like: besides, give me leave to tell you, it " requires a most penetrating eye to discern a fool thro " the difguifes of gaiety and good-breeding.

"It will be eafily imagined, that when I once despised my husband, as I confess to you I soon did, I must confequently dislike his company, and indeed I had the happiness of being very little troubled with it; for our house was now most elegantly furnished, our cellars well stocked, and dogs and horses provided in great abundance. As my gentleman therefore entertained his neighbours with great hospitality, so his neighbours resorted to him with great alacrity; and sports and drinking consumed so much of his time, that a small part K k 2

" of his conversation, that is to say, of his ill-humours, fell

" to my share.

" Happy would it have been for me, if I could as eafi-" ly have avoided all other difagreeable company; but " alas! I was confined to fome which constantly tor-" mented me, and the more, as I faw no prospect of being " relieved from them. These companions were my " own racking thoughts, which plagued, and in a " manner haunted me night and day. In this fituation " I passed through a scene, the horrors of which can " neither be painted nor imagined. Think, my dear; fi-" gure, if you can, to yourfelf, what I must have under-" gone. I became a mother by the man I fcorned, ha-" ted, and detefted. I went through all the agonies and " miferies of a lying-in, (ten times more painful in fuch " a circumstance, than the worst labour can be, when one " endures it for a man one loves,) in a defert, or rather " indeed a scene of riot and revel, without a friend, with-" out a companion, or without any of those agreeable cir-" cumftances, which often alleviate, and perhaps fome-"times more than compensate the sufferings of our fex " at that feafon."

CHAP. VI.

In which the Mistake of the Landlord throws Sophia into a dreadful consternation.

RS Fitzpatrick was proceeding in her narrative, when she was interrupted by the entrance of dinner, greatly to the concern of Sophia; for the misfortunes of her friend had raised her anxiety, and left her no appetite but what Mrs Fitzpatrick was to satisfy by her relation.

The landlord now attended with a plate under his arm, and with the fame respect in his countenance and address, which he would have put on had the ladies arrived in a

coach and fix.

The married lady feemed lefs affected with her own misfortunes than was her coufin: for the former eat very heartily, whereas the latter could hardly fwallow a morfel. Sophia likewise shewed more concern and forrow in her

11:

ut

r-

ly

a

n

r-

1-

d

h

le

e-

X

a

" ward:

her countenance than appeared in the other lady, who, having observed these symptoms in her friend, begged her to be comforted, saying, "Perhaps all may yet end bet"ter than either you or I expect."

Our landlord thought he had now an opportunity to open his mouth, and was refolved not to omit it. "I am forry, Madam," cries he, "that your ladyship can't eat; for to be sure you must be hungry after so long fasting. I hope your ladyship is not uneasy at any thing; for, as madam there says, all may end better than any body expects. A gentleman who was here just now brought excellent news; and perhaps some folks, who have given other solks the slip, may get to London before they are overtaken; and, if they do, I make no doubt but they will find people who will be very ready to receive them."

All persons, under the apprehension of danger, convert whatever they see or hear into the objects of that apprehension. Sophia therefore immediately concluded from the foregoing speech, that she was known and pursued by her father. She was now struck with the utmost construction, and for a few minutes deprived of the power of speech; which she no sooner recovered, than the desired the landlord to send his servants out of the room, and then addressing herself to him, said, "I persue ceive, Sir, you know who we are; but I beseech you; —nay, I am convinced, if you have any compassion or goodness, you will not betray us."

"I betray your ladyship!" quoth the landlord; "no" (and then he swore several very hearty oaths;) "I would "fooner be cut into ten thousand pieces. I hate all treach"ery. I! I never betrayed any one in my life yet, and
"I am sure I will not begin with so sweet a lady as your
ladyship. All the world would very much blame me
if I should, since it will be in your ladyship's power
fo shortly to reward me. My wife can witness for me,
I knew your ladyship the moment you came into the
house: I said it was your honour, before I listed you
from your horse, and I shall carry the bruises I got in
your ladyship's service to the grave; but what signifies
that, as long as I saved your ladyship. To be sure some
people this morning would have thought of getting a re-

" ward: but no fuch thought ever entered into my head,
" I would fooner starve than take any reward for betray-

ing your ladyship."

"I promise you, Sir," says Sophia, " if it be ever in my power to reward you, you shall not lose by your ge"nerosity."

"Alack-a-day, Madam!" answered the landlord, "in your ladyship's power! Heaven put it as much into your will. I am only asraid your honour will forget fuch a poor man as an innkeeper; but, if your ladyship should not, I hope you will remember what reward I refused—refused! that is, I would have refused, and to be fure it may be called refusing; for I might have had it certainly; and to be fure you might have been in some houses;—but for my part, I would not methinks for the world have your ladyship wrong me so

" much, as to imagine I ever thought of betraying you, even before I heard the good news."

"What news, pray?" fays Sophia fomething eager-

ly.

" Hath not your ladyship heard it then?" cries the landlord; " nay, like enough; for I heard it only a few " minutes ago; and if I had never heard it, may the "Devil fly away with me this instant, if I would have be-" trayed your honour; no, if I would, may l"——Here he fubjoined feveral dreadful imprecations, which Sophia at last interrupted, and begged to know what he meant by the news.-He was going to answer, when Mrs Honour came running into the room, all pale, and breathlefs, and cried, out " Madam, we are all undone, all ruin-" ed; they are come, they are come!" These words almost froze up the blood of Sophia; but Mrs Fitzpatrick asked Honour, " who were come?"-" Who?" anfwered she; "why the French; several hundred thou-" fands of them are landed, and we shall be all murder-" ed and ravished."

As a miser, who hath in some well-built city a cottage value twenty shillings, when at a distance he is alarmed with the news of a fire, turns pale and trembles at his loss; but when he finds the beautiful palaces only are burnt, and his own cottage remains safe, he comes instantly to himself, and smiles at his good fortune: or as (for

đ,

in

e-

in

to

et

ip

I

bi

ve

en

e-

(o

u,

r-

ie

W

e

2-

e

ia

nt

-

1

1-

k

1-

1-

r-

e

d

IS

e

t-

r

we dislike something in the former simile) the tender mother, when terrified with the apprehension that her darling boy is drowned, is struck senseless and almost dead with consternation: but when she is told that little master is safe, and the Victory only with twelve hundred brave men gone to the bottom, life and sense again return, maternal fondness enjoys the sudden relief from all its fears, and the general benevolence, which at another time would have deeply felt the dreadful catastrophe, lies fast asseptin her mind:

So Sophia, than whom none was more capable of tenderly feeling the general calamity of her country, found fuch immediate fatisfaction from the relief of those terrors she had of being overtaken by her father, that the arrival of the French scarce made any impression on her. She gently chid her maid for the fright into which she had thrown her, and faid, "she was glad it was no worse, for that she had feared somebody else was "come."

" Ay, ay," quoth the landlord, fmiling, " her lady" fhip knows better things; she knows the French are

" our very best friends, and come over hither only for our good. They are the people who are to make Old "England flourish again. I warrant her honour thought

"the duke was coming: and that was enough to put
"her into a fright. I was going to tell your ladyship

"the news,—His honour's Majesty, Heaven bless him,

"hath given the duke the flip, and is marching as fast as he can to London, and ten thousand French are

" landed to join him on the road."

Sophia was not greatly pleased with this news, nor with the gentleman who related it; but as she still imagined he knew her (for she could not possibly have any suspicion of the real truth) she durst not shew any dislike. And now the landlord, having removed the cloth from the table, withdrew; but at his departure frequently repeated his hopes of being remembered hereafter.

The mind of Sophia was not at all eafy under the supposition of being known at this house; for she still applied to herself many things which the landlord had addressed to Jenny Cameron; she therefore ordered her maid to pump out of him by what means he had become acquainted with her person, and who had offered him the reward for betraying her; she likewise ordered the horses to be in readiness by four in the morning; at which hour Mrs Fitzpatrick promised to bear her company, and then, composing herself as well as she could, she desired that lady to continue her story.

CHAP. VII.

In which Mrs Fitzpatrick concludes her History.

WHILE Mrs Honour, in pursuance of the commands of her mistress, ordered a bowl of punch, and invited my landlord and landlady to partake of it, Mrs Fitzpatrick thus went on with her relation:

"Most of the officers who were quartered at a town in our neighbourhood, were of my husband's acquain-

" tance. Among these was a lieutenant, a very pretty

"fort of a man, and who was married to a woman fo agreeable both in her temper and conversation, that

from our first knowing each other, which was soon after my lying-in, we were almost inseparable companions;

" for I had the good fortune to make myself equally a-

" greeable to her.

"The lieutenant, who was neither a fot nor a sports"
man, was frequently of our parties; indeed he was
very little with my husband, and no more than goodhreeding constrained him to be as he lived almost con-

" breeding conftrained him to be, as he lived almost confrantly at our house. My husband often expressed

" much diffatisfaction at the lieutenant's preferring my company to his; he was very angry with me on that

" account, and gave me many a hearty curse for drawing away his companions saving Lought to be d-p'd

" ing away his companions, faying, I ought to be d—n'd for having spoiled one of the prettiest fellows in the

" world, by making a milk-fop of him."

"You will be mistaken, my dear Sophia, if you imaigine that the anger of my husband arose from my deignormal priving him of a companion; for the lieutenant was not a person with whose society a fool could be pleasignormal ed; and, if I should admit the possibility of this, so

" little right had my husband to place the loss of his

" companion to me, that I am convinced it was my con-

y

)

t

ľ

1

VOL. 11.

" excuse

versation alone which induced him ever to come to "the house. No, child, it was envy, the worst and " most rancorous kind of envy, the envy of superiority " of understanding. The wretch could not bear to fee " my conversation preferred to his, by a man of whom " he could not entertain the least jealousy. O my dear "Sophy, you are a woman of sense; if you marry a man, " as it is most probable you will, of less capacity than your-" felf, make frequent trials of his temper before mar-" riage, and fee whether he can bear to fubmit to fuch a " fuperiority.—Promife me, Sophy, you will take this " advice, for you will hereafter find its importance." " It is very likely I shall never marry at all," answered Sophia; "I think at least, I shall never marry a man in " whose understanding I see any defects before marriage; " and I promise you I would rather give up my own, " than fee any fuch afterwards."-" Give up your un-"derstanding!" replied Mrs Fitzpatrick; "O fie, child! " I will not believe fo meanly of you. Every thing else " I might myfelf be brought to give up; but never this. " Nature would not have allotted this superiority to the " wife in fo many instances, if she had intended we should " all of us have furrendered it to the husband. This indeed " men of fenfe never expect of us, of which the lieuten-" ant I have just mentioned was one notable example: " for, though he had a very good understanding, he al-" ways acknowledged (as was really true) that his wife " had a better; and this perhaps was one reason of the " hatred my tyrant bore her.

"Before he would be fo governed by a wife, he faid, "especially such an ugly b—, (for indeed she was not a regular beauty, but very agreeable, and extremely genteel,) he would see all the women upon earth at the Devil, which was a very usual phrase with him. He said, he wondered what I could see in her to be so charmed with her company: 'Since this woman,' says he, 'hath come among us, there is an end of your bestowed reading, which you pretended to like so much, "that you could not afford time to return the visits of the ladies in this country: and I must consess I had been guilty of a little rudeness this way; for the ladies there are at least no better than the mere country ladies here; and I think I need make no other

" excuse to you for declining any intimacy with them. "This correspondence, however, continued a whole " year, even all the while the lieutenant was quartered in " that town; for which I was contented to pay the " tax of being constantly abused in the manner above-" mentioned by my husband; I mean when he was at " home; for he was frequently absent a month at a time " at Dublin, and once made a journey of two months to " London; in all which journies I thought it a very ' fingular happiness that he never once defired my comof pany; nay, by his frequent censures on men who " could not travel, as he phrased it, without a wife tied " up to their tail, he fufficiently intimated that, had I been " never fo defirous of accompanying him, my wishes

" would have been in vain; but Heaven knows, fuch " wishes were very far from my thoughts."

"At length my friend was removed from me, and I " was again left to my folitude, to the tormenting con-" versation with my own reflections, and to apply to " books for my only comfort. I now read almost all " day long.—How many books do you think I read in "three months?" " I can't guess, indeed, cousin," answered Sophia.—" Perhaps half a score?" "Half a " fcore! half a thousand, child," answered the other. " I read a good deal in Daniel's English History of "France, a great deal in Plutarch's Lives, the Atalantas, " Pope's Homer, Dryden's Plays, Chillingworth, the " Countefs d'Anois, and Locke's Human Understand-" ing.

"During this interval I wrote three very fupplicating, and, I thought, moving letters to my aunt; but, as I " received no answer to any of them, my disdain would " not fuffer me to continue my application."—Here the flopt, and looking earnestly at Sophia, faid, "Methinks, " my dear, I read fomething in your eyes which reproa-" ches me of neglect in another place, where I should " have met with a kinder return." " Indeed, dear " Harriet," answered Sophia, " your story is an apolo-" gy tor any neglect; but indeed I feel that I have been " guilty of a remiffness, without so good an excuse.— "Yet, pray proceed; for I long, though I tremble, to

" hear the end."

e

e

0

V

0

d

n

ì

-

Ó

1

n

a

r.

s,

e

d

e

5,

4-

d

r

)=

n

0

13

Thus then Mrs Fitzpatrick refumed her narrative: " My husband now took a second journey to England, " where he continued upwards of three months. Du-" ring the greater part of this time I led a life, which " nothing but having led a worfe could make me think " tolerable; for perfect folitude can never be reconciled " to a focial mind, like mine, but when it relieves you " from the company of those you hate. What added to " my wretchedness was the loss of my little infant; not " that I pretend to have had for it that extravagant ten-" dernefs, of which I believe I might have been capable " under other circumstances; but I resolved in every " instance to discharge the duty of the tenderest mother, " and this care prevented me from feeling the weight of " that heaviest of all things, when it can be at all said to " lie heavy on our hands.

"I had spent full ten weeks almost entirely by myself, having seen nobody all that time, except my serwants and a very sew visitors, when a young lady, a
relation to my husband, came from a distant part of
Ireland to visit me. She had staid once before a week
at my house, and then I gave her a pressing invitation to return; for she was a very agreeable woman, and had improved good natural parts by a proper education. Indeed she was to me a most welcome

meft

"A few days after her arrival, perceiving me in very low spirits, without inquiring the cause, which indeed fhe very well knew, the young lady fell to compassionating my case. She said, "Though politeness had prevented me from complaining to my husband's relations of his behaviour, yet they were all sensible of it, and felt great concern upon that account, but none more than herself:" and after some more general discourse on this head, which I own I could not forbear countenancing, at last, after much previous precaution, and enjoined concealment, she communicated to me, as a prosound secret—that my husband kept a mistress.

"You will certainly imagine, I heard this news with the utmost insensibility.——Upon my word, if you do, your imagination will mislead you. Contempt had L 1 2 "not

" not so kept down my anger to my husband, but that hatred rose again on this occasion. What can be the reason of this? Are we so abominably selfish, that we

" can be concerned at others having possession even of what

"we despise? or are we not rather abominably vain, and is not this the greatest injury done to our vanity? What

" think you, Sophia?"

"I don't know, indeed," answered Sophia, "I have "never troubled myself with any of these deep contemplations; but I think the lady did very ill in communi-

" cating to you fuch a fecret."

"And yet, my dear, this conduct is natural," replied Mrs Fitzpatrick: "and when you have feen and "read as much as myfelf, you will acknowledge it to be "fo."

"I am forry to hear it is natural," returned Sophia, for I want neither reading nor experience to convince me, that it is very dishonourable and very ill-natured;

" nay, it is furely as ill-bred to tell a husband or wife of the faults of each other, as to tell them of their

" own."

"Well," continued Mrs Fitzpatrick, "my husband at last returned; and, if I am thoroughly acquainted with

" my own thoughts, I hated him now more than ever; but I despised him rather less; for certainly nothing so

" much weakens our contempt, as an injury done to our

" pride or our vanity.

"He now assumed a carriage to me, so very different from what he had lately worn, and so nearly resembling his behaviour the first week of our marriage,

"that, had I now had any fpark of love remaining, he might possibly have rekindled my fondness for him.

"But, though hatred may succeed to contempt, and may perhaps get the better of it, love, I believe, cannot.

"The truth is, the possession of love is too resties to re-

" main contented, without the gratification which it re-

" ceives from its object; and one can no more be inclined to love without loving, than we can have eyes with-

" out feeing. When a husband, therefore, ceases to be the

" object of this passion, it is most probable some other man—I say, my dear, if your husband grows indiffer-

et ent to you—if you once come to despise him-—I fay,

66 that

e

,

e

e

r

it

h

0

r

ıt

1-

e,

ne

IV

it.

e-

e-1-

h-

ne

er r-

y,

"that is—if you have the passion of love in you—Lud!
"I have bewildered myself so;—but one is apt, in these abstracted considerations, to lose the concatenation of ideas, as Mr Locke says.—In short, the truth is—in short, I scarce know what it is; but, as I was saying, my husband returned, and his behaviour at first greatly surprised me; but he soon acquainted me with the motive, and taught me to account for it. In a word, then, he had spent and lost all the ready money of my fortune; and, as he could mortgage his own estate no deeper, he was now desirous to supply himself with cash for his extravagance, by selling a little estate of mine, which he could not do without my assistance; and to obtain this savour was the sole motive of all the fondness which he now put on.

"With this I peremptorily refused to comply. I told him, and I told him truly, that, had I been possessed of the Indies at our first marriage, he might have commanded it all; for it had been a constant maxim with me, that where a woman disposes of her heart she should always deposit her fortune; but as he had been so kind, long ago, to restore the former into my possessed since, I was resolved likewise to retain what little re-

" mained of the latter.

"I will not describe to you the passion into which these words, and the resolute air in which they were fpoken, threw him; nor will I trouble you with the whole scene which succeeded between us. Out came, you may be well assured, the story of the mistress: and out it did come with all the embellishments which anger and disdain could bestow upon it.

"Mr Fitzpatrick feemed a little thunderstruck with this, and more confused than I had seen him, though

"his ideas were always confused enough, Heaven knows.
"He did not however, endeavour to exculpate himself.

" He did not however endeavour to exculpate himself, but took a method which almost equally confounded

"me. What was this but recrimination! He affected to

" be jealous:—He may, for ought I know, be inclined "enough to jealoufy in his natural temper: nay, he

" must have had it from nature, or the Devil must

" have put it into his head; for I defy all the world to cast a just aspersion on my character: nay, the

" most

most scandalous tongues have never dared to censure my " reputation. My fame, I thank Heaven, hath been al " ways as spotless as my life; and let falsehood itself ac" 44 cufe that, if it dare. No, my dear Graveairs, how-" ever provoked, however ill-treated, however injured in " my love, I have firmly resolved never to give the least " room for censure on this account. - And yet, my dear, " there are some people so malicious, some tongues so venomous, that no innocence can escape them. " most undesigned word, the most accidental look, the " least familiarity, the most innocent freedom, will be mif-" confirmed, and magnified into I know not what, by fome " people. But I despise, my dear Graveairs, I despise all " fuch flander. No fuch malice, I affure you, ever gave " me an uneafy moment. No, no, I promife you I am a-" bove all that But where was 1? O let me fee; I told " you my husband was jealous-And of whom pray?-" Why, of whom but the Lieutenant I mentioned to you " before? He was obliged to refort above a year and " more back, to find any object for this unaccountable " passion, if indeed he really felt any such, and was not " an arrant counterfeit, in order to abuse me.

an arrant counterfeit, in order to abuse me.

But I have tired you already with too many particusiars; I will now bring my story to a speedy conclusion.

In short, then, after many scenes unworthy to be repeated, in which my cousin engaged so heartily on my side, that Mr Fitzpatrick at last turned her out of doors, when he found I was neither to be soothed nor bullied into compliance, he took a very violent method indeed. Perhaps you will conclude he beat me; but this, though he hath approached very near to it, he never actually did. He confined me to my room, without fusiering me to have either pen, ink, paper, or a book; and a servant every day made my bed, and brought me my food.

"When I had remained a week under this imprison"ment, he made me a visit, and with the voice of a

stream, the made me a visit, and with the voice of a

stream, asked me, "if I would yet comply?" I answered

very stoutly, "That I would die first." "Then so

you shall, and be d—ned," cried he; "for you shall

never go alive out of this room."

"Here

C

٧.

in

ft

r,

ne

ne

if-

ne

all

ve

a-

old

ou

nd

ole

ot

u-

n.

re-

ny

of

or

od

out

he

th-

Or

ind

on-

ty-

red

lo all

ere

"I now made haste to Dublin, where I immediately procured a passage to England; and was proceeding to Bath, in order to throw myself under the protection of my aunt, or of your father, or of any other relation who would afford it me. My husband overtook me last night at the inn where I lay, and which you left a few minutes before me: but I had the good luck to escape

" him and follow you.

"And thus, my dear, ends my history: a tragical one "I am fure, it is to myfelf; but, perhaps, I ought to apo"logize to you for its dulnefs." Sophia heaved a deep figh, and answered, "Indeed, Harriet, I pity you from my foul!—But what could you expect? Why, why

" would you marry an Irithman?"
"Upon my word," replied her confin. "

"Upon my word," replied her cousin, "your censure is unjust. There are among the Irish, men of as much worth and honour, as any among the English: nay, to speak the truth, generosity of spirit is rather more common among them. I have known some examples there too of good husbands; and, I believe these are not very plenty in England. Ask me, rather, what I could expect when I married a sool, and I will tell you a solemn truth: I did not know him to be so."—
"Can no man," said Sophia in a very low and altered voice, "do you think, make a bad husband, who is not a fool?" "That," answered the other, "is too general a negative; but none, I believe, so likely as a fool to prove so. Among my acquaintance, the silliest fellows are the worst husbands; and I will venture to

affert as a fact, that a man of fense rarely behaves very ill to a wife, who deserves very well."

CHAP. VIII.

A dreadful alarm in the inn, with the arrival of an unexpected friend of Mrs Fitzpatrick.

SOPHIA now, at the defire of her cousin, related not what follows, but what had gone before in this history: for which reason the reader will, I suppose, ex-

cufe me, for not repeating it over again.

One remark, however, I cannot forbear making on her narrative, namely, that she made no more mention of Jones, from the beginning to the end, than if there had been no such person alive. This I will neither endeavour to account for, nor to excuse. Indeed, if this may be called a kind of dishonesty, it seems the more inexcusable, from the apparent openness and explicit sin-

cerity of the other lady. - But fo it was.

Just as Sophia arrived at the conclusion of her story, there arrived in the room where the two ladies were fitting a noise, not unlike, in loudness, to that of a pack of hounds just let out from their kennel; nor, in shrillness, to cats, when caterwauling; or, to screech owls; or, indeed, more like (for what animal can refemble a human voice?) to those founds, which, in the pleasant mansions of that gate, which seems to derive its name from a duplicity of tongues, iffue from the mouths, and fometimes from the nostrils of those fair river nymphs, ycleped of old the Naiades; in the vulgar tongue tranflated oyster-wenches; for when, instead of the ancient libations of milk, and honey, and oil, the rich diffillation from the juniper-berry, or perhaps from malt, hath, by the early devotion of their votaries, been poured forth in great abundance, should any daring tongue with unhallowed license profane, i. e. depreciate the delicate fat Milton oyster, the plaice found and firm, the flounder as much alive as in the water, the shrimp as big as a prawn, the fine cod alive but a few hours ago, or any other of the various treasures which those water-deities, who fish the fea and rivers, had committed to the care of the nymphs, is

.

n

n

re

1-

is

n-

y,

t-

11-

S;

a

nt

ne

nd

15.

if-

nt

on

by

in

al-

fat

as

m,

of

ifh

he hs, nymphs, the angry Naiades lift up their immortal voices, and the profane wretch is struck deaf for his impiety.

Such was the noise which now burst from one of the rooms below; and foon the thunder, which long had rattled at a distance, began to approach nearer and nearer, till, having ascended by degrees up stairs, it at last entered the apartment where the ladies were. In short, to drop all metaphor and figure, Mrs Honour, having fcolded violently below stairs, and continued the same all the way up, came in to her mistress in a most outrageous passion, crying out, "What doth your ladyship think? Would you imagine, " that this impudent villain, the master of this house, " hath had the impudence to tell me, nay, to frand it " out to my face, that your ladyship is that nasty, stink-" ing wh-re, (Jenny Cameron they call her,) that runs " about the country with the Pretender? Nay, the ly-" ing, faucy villain, had the affurance to tell me, that " your ladyship had owned yourself to be so: but I " have clawed the rafcal: I have left the marks of my " nails in his impudent face. My lady! fays I, you fau-" cy scoundrel: my lady is meat for no Pretenders. She " is a young lady of as good fashion, and family, and " fortune, as any in Somerietshire. Did you never hear " of the great 'Squire Western, sirrah? she is his only " daughter; she is, ---- and heiress to all his great ef-" tate. My lady to be called a nasty Scotch wh—re by " fuch a varlet-To be fure, I wish I had knocked his " brains out with the punch bowl."

The principal uneafiness with which Sophia was affected on this occasion, Honour had herself caused, by having in her passion discovered who she was. However, as this mastake of the landlord sufficiently accounted for those passages which Sophia had before mistaken, she acquired some ease on that account; nor could she, upon the whole, forbear smiling. This enraged Honour, and she cried, "Indeed, Madam, I did not think your ladyship would have made a laughing matter of it. To

" be called whore by such an impudent low rascal. "Your ladyship may be angry with me, for ought I

"know, for taking your part, fince proffered fervice, they fay, stinks; but to be fure I could never bear to

Vol. II. M m ‡ "hear

" hear a lady of mine called whore.—Nor will I bear it.

"I am fure your ladyship is as virtuous a lady as ever fat foot on English ground, and I will claw any vil-

" lain's eyes out who dares for to offer to prefume for to fay the least word to the contrary. Nobody ever could say the least ill of the character of any lady that

" ever I waited upon."

Hinc illa lachryma; in plain truth, Honour had as much love for her mistress as most servants have, that is to say—But, besides this, her pride obliged her to support the character of the lady she waited on; for she thought her own was in a very close manner connected with it. In proportion as the character of her mistress was raised, hers likewise, as she conceived, was raised with it; and, on the contrary, she thought the one could not be lowered without the other.

On this subject, reader, I must stop a moment to tell thee a story. "The famous Nell Gwynn, stepping one day from a house, where she had made a short visit, in her coach, saw a great mob assembled, and her footman all bloody and dirty; the fellow being asked by his mistress the reason of his being in this condition, answered, "I have been fighting, Madam, with an impudent rascal who called your ladyship a wh—re." You blockhead," replied Mrs Gwynn, "at this rate you must fight every day of your life; why, you fool, all the world knows it." "Do they?" cries the fellow in a muttering voice, after he had shut the coach-door, they shan't call me a whore's footman for all that."

Thus the paffion of Mrs Honour appears natural enough, even if it were to be no otherwise accounted for; but, in reality, there was another cause of her anger; for which we must beg leave to remind our reader of a circumstance mentioned in the above simile. There are indeed certain liquors, which, being applied to our passions, or to fire, produce effects the very reverse of those produced by water, as they serve to kindle and inslame, rather than to extinguish. Among these, the generous liquor called punch is one. It was not therefore without reason, that the learned Dr Cheney used to call drinking punch, pouring liquid fire drown your throats.

Now

t

t

1

t,

r

d

i-

h

11

11

W

r,

d

;

re

ſ-

ſe

e,

us

ut

g

W

tice

Now Mrs Honour had unluckily poured so much of this liquid fire down her throat, that the smoke of it began to ascend into her pericranium, and blinded the eyes of reason, which is there supposed to keep her residence, where the fire itself from the stomach easily reached the heart, and there inslamed the noble passion of pride: So that, upon the whole, we shall cease to wonder at the violent rage of the waiting woman; though at first sight we must confess the cause seems inadequate to the effect.

Sophia, and her cousin both, did all in their power to extinguish these slames, which had roared so loudly all over the house. They at length prevailed: or, to carry the metaphor one step farther, the fire, having consumed all the suel which the language affords, to wit, every reproachful term in it, at last went out of its own accord.

But, though tranquillity was restored above stairs, it was not fo below; where my landlady highly refenting the injury done the beauty of her husband, by the flesh spades of Mrs Honour, called aloud for revenge and justice. As to the poor man, who had principally fuffered in the engagement, he was perfectly quiet. Perhaps the blood which he lost might have cooled his anger: for the enemy had not only applied her nails to his cheeks, but likewise her fift to his nostrils, which lamented the blow with tears of blood in great abundance. To this we may add reflections on his miftake; but indeed nothing to effectually filenced his refentment, as the manner in which he now discovered his error; for as to the behaviour of Mrs Honour, it had the more confirmed him in his opinion: but he was now affured by a person of great figure, and who was attended with great equipage, that one of the ladies was a woman of fathion, and his intimate acquaintance.

By the orders of this person, the landlord now ascended, and acquainted our fair travellers, that a great gentleman below defired to do them the honour of waiting on them. Sophia turned pale, and trembled at this message, though the reader will conclude it was too civil, notwithstanding the landlord's blunder, to have come from her father; but fear hath the common fault of a justice.

Mm 2

flight circumstance, without examining the evidences on

both fides

To ease the reader's curiosity, therefore, rather than his apprehensions, we proceed to inform him, that an Irish peer had arrived very late that evening at the inn in his way to London. This nobleman, having sallied from his supper at the hurricane before commemorated, had seen the attendant of Mrs Fitzpatrick, and upon a short inquiry was informed, that her lady, with whom he was particularly acquainted, was above. This information he had no sooner received, than he addressed himself to the landlord, pacified him, and sent him up stairs with compliments rather more civil than those which were delivered.

It may be perhaps wondered at, that the waiting-woman herfelf was not the messenger employed on this occasion: but we are forry to say, she was not at present qualified for that, or indeed for any other office. The rum (for so the landlord chose to call the distillation from malt), had basely taken the advantage of the fatigue which the poor woman had undergone, and had made terrible depredations on her noble faculties at a time when they were very unable to resist the attack.

We shall not describe this tragical scene too fully; but we thought ourself obliged, by that historic integrity which we profess, shortly to hint a matter, which we would otherwise have been glad to have spared. Many historians indeed, for want of this integrity, or of diligence, to say no worse, often leave the reader to find out these little circumstances in the dark, and sometimes to

his great confusion and perplexity.

Sophia was very foon eased of her causeless fright by the entry of the noble peer, who was not only an intimate acquaintance of Mrs Fitzpatrick, but in reality a very particular friend of that lady. To say truth, it was by his assistance that she had been enabled to escape from her husband; for this nobleman had the same gallant disposition with those renowned knights, of whom we read in heroic story, and had delivered many an imprisoned nymph from durance. He was indeed as bitter an enemy to the savage authority too often exercised by husbands

S

1

S

S

1

9

e

e

1-

.

)-

c-

16

m

le

le

ut

ty

ve

ny li-

ut

to

by

ti-

a

as

m

nt

we

ifan

ıf-

ds

bands and fathers, over the young and lovely of the other fex, as ever knight-errant was to the barbarous power of enchanters; nay, to fay truth, I have often suspected, that those very enchanters, with which romance every where abounds, were in reality no other than the husbands of those days; and matrimony itself was perhaps the enchanted castle in which the nymphs were said to be confined.

This nobleman had an estate in the neighbourhood of Fitzpatrick, and had been for some time acquainted with the lady. No sooner therefore did he hear of her confinement, than he earnestly applied himself to procure her liberty; which he presently affected, not by storming the castle, according to the example of ancient heroes; but by corrupting the governor, in conformity to the modern art of war; in which crast is held to be presentle to valour, and gold is sound to be more irresistible than either lead or steel.

This circumstance, however, as the lady did not think it material enough to relate to her friend, we would not impart it to the reader. We rather chose to leave him a while under a supposition, that she had found, or coined, or by some very extraordinary, perhaps supernatural means, had possessed herfelf of the money with which she had bribed her keeper, than to interrupt her narrative by giving a hint of what seemed to her of too little im-

The peer, after a short conversation, could not forbear expressing some surprize at meeting the lady in that place; not could he refrain from telling her, he imagined she had been gone to Bath. Mrs Fitzpatrick very freely answered, "That she had been prevented in her purpose by the arrival of a person she need not mention. In

"I need not effect to conceal what the world knows too well already.) I had the good fortune to escape in

" a most furprising manner, and am now going to Lon-

"don with this young lady, who is a near relation of mine, and who hath escaped from as great a tyrant as my own."

His lordship concluding that this tyrant was likewise a husband, made a speech full of compliments to both the

h

f

the ladies, and as full of invectives against his own sex; nor indeed did he avoid some oblique glances at the matrimonial institution itself, and at the unjust powers given by it to man over the more sensible, and more meritorious part of the species. He ended his oration with an offer of his protection, and of his coach and six, which was instantly accepted by Mrs Fitzpatrick, and at last,

upon her perfuafions, by Sophia.

Matters being this adjusted, his lordship took his leave, and the ladies retired to rest, where Mrs Fitzpatrick entertained her cousin with many high encomiums on the character of the noble peer, and enlarged very particularly on his great fondness for his wise; saying, she believed he was almost the only person of high rank, who was entirely constant to the marriage-bed. "In-" deed," added she, "my dear Sophy, that is a very rare virtue amongst men of condition. Never expect it when you marry; for, believe me, if you do, you will certainly be deceived."

A gentle figh stole from Sophia at these words, which perhaps contributed to form a dream of no very pleafant kind; but as she never revealed this dream to any one, so the reader cannot expect to see it related

here.

CHAP. IX.

The morning introduced in some pretty writing. A stagecoach. The civility of chamber-maids. The heroic temper of Sophia. Her generosity. The return to it. The departure of the company, and their arrival at London; with some remarks for the use of travellers.

furnish the bleffings of life, now began to light their candles, in order to pursue their daily labours for the use of those who are born to enjoy these blefsings. The sturdy hind now attends the levee of his fellow-labourer the ox; the cunning artisticer, the diligent mechanic, spring from their hard mattress; and now the bonny housemaid begins to repair the disordered drumpoom, while the riotous authors of that disorder, in broken

broken interrupted flumbers, tumble and tofs as if the hardness of down disquieted their repose.

In simple phrase, the clock had no sooner struck seven, than the ladies were ready for their journey; and at their desire, his lordship and his equipage were prepared to attend them.

And now a matter of some difficulty arose; and this was, how his lordship himself should be conveyed: for though in stage-coaches, where passengers are properly considered as so much luggage, the ingenious coachman stows half a dozen with perfect ease into the place of sour: for well he contrives that the fat hostess, or well-fed alderman, may take up no more room than the slim miss, or taper master; it being the nature of guts, when well squeezed, to give way, and to lie in a narrow compass; yet in these vehicles, which are called, for distinction's sake, gentlemens coaches, though they are often larger than the others, this method of packing is never attempted.

His lordship would have put a short end to the difficulty, by very gallantly desiring to mount his horse; but Mrs Fitzpatrick would by no means consent to it. It was therefore concluded, that the Abigails should by turns relieve each other on one of his lordship's horses, which was presently equipped with a side-saddle for that pur-

pose.

1

1

;

0

nt

r

S.

a-

e-

91

n-

in

en

Every thing being fettled at the inn, the ladies discharged their former guides, and Sophia made a present to the landlord, partly to repair the bruife which he had received under herself, and partly on account of what he had fuffered under the hands of her enraged waiting-wo-And now Sophia first discovered a loss which gave her some uneasiness; and this was of the hundred pound bank-bill which her father had given her at their last meeting; and which, within a very inconfiderable trifle, was all the treasure she was at present worth. She searched every where, shook and tumbled all her things to no purpose; the bill was not to be found: and she was at last fully perfuaded, that she had lost it from her pocket, when she had the misfortune of tumbling from her horse in the dark lane as before recorded: A fact that seemed the more probable, as she now recollected some discomdiscomposure in her pockets which had happened at that time, and the great difficulty with which she had drawn forth her handkerchief, the very instant before her fall, in order to relieve the distress of Mrs Fitzpatrick.

Misfortunes of this kind, whatever inconveniencies they may be attended with, are incapable of fubduing a mind in which there is any strength, without the affistance of avarice. Sophia, therefore, though nothing could be worse timed than this accident at such a season, immediately got the better of her concern, and, with her wonted ferenity and cheerfulness of countenance, returned to her company. His lordship conducted the ladies into the vehicle, as he did likewise Mrs Honour, who, after many civilities, and more dear Madams, at last yielded to the well-bred importunities of her fifter Abigail, and fubmitted to be complimented with the first ride in the coach; in which indeed the would afterwards have been contented to have purfued her whole journey, had not her mistress, after several fruitless intimations, at length forced her to take her turn on horseback.

The coach now, having received its company, began to move forward, attended by many fervants, and by two led captains, who had before rode with his lordship, and who would have been dismissed from the vehicle upon a much less worthy occasion, than was this of accommodating two ladies. In this they acted only as gentlemen; but they were ready at any time to have performed the office of a footman, or indeed would have condescended lower, for the honour of his lordship's company, and for

the convenience of his table.

My landlord was fo pleafed with the present he had received from Sophia, that he rather rejoiced in than regretted his bruise, or his scratches. The reader will perhaps be curious to know the quantum of this present; but we cannot satisfy his curiosity. Whatever it was, it satisfied the landlord for his bodily hurt; but he lamented he had not known before how little the lady valued her money; 'For to be sure," says he, "one might have "charged every article double, and she would have made "no cavil at the reckoning."

His wife however was far from drawing this conclusion; whether she really felt any injury done to her husband

more

a

n

n

P

P

ei

P

at

01

Ø

0

d

2

;

e

d

r

d

94

r-

ut

S-

d

er

ve

de

n;

nd

re

VOL. II.

our

more than he did himself, I will not say: certain it is, she was much less satisfied with the generosity of Sophia. "Indeed," cries she, "my dear, the lady knows better how " to dispose of her money than you imagine. She might " very well think we should not put up such a business " without some satisfaction, and the law would have cost " her an infinite deal more than this poor little matter, " which I wonder you would take." "You are always fo " bloodily wife," quoth the husband: " It would have cost " her more, would it? dost fancy I don't know that as well " as thee? but would any of that more, or fo much, " have come into our pockets? Indeed, if fon Tom the " lawyer had been alive, I could have been glad to have " put fuch a pretty bufiness into his hands. He would " have got a good picking out of it; but I have no rela-" tion now who is a lawyer, and why should I go to law " for the benefit of strangers?" " Nay, to be fure," answered she, "you must know best." " I believe I "do," replied he. "I fancy when money is to be got, "I can fmell it out as well as another. Every body, let " me tell you, would not have talked people out of this. " Mind that, I fay; every body would not have cajoled " this out of her, mind that." The wife then joined in the applause of her husband's sagacity; and thus ended the fhort dialogue between them on this occasion.

We will therefore take our leave of these good people, and attend his lordship and his fair companions, who made fuch good expedition, that they performed a journey of ninety miles in two days, and on the second evening arrived in London, without having encountered any one adventure on the road worthy the dignity of this hiftory to relate. Our pen, therefore, shall imitate the expedition which it describes, and our history shall keep pace with the travellers who are its subject. Good writers will indeed do well to imitate the ingenious traveller in this instance, who always proportions his stay at any place to the beauties, elegancies, and curiofities, which it At Eshur, at Stowe, at Wilton, at Estbury, and at Prior's Park, days are too short for the ravished imagination, while we admire the wondrous power of art in improving nature. In some of these, art chiefly engages our admiration; in others, nature and art contend for

Nn

our applause; but in the last, the former seems to triumph. Here nature appears in her richest attire, and art, dressed with the modestest simplicity, attends her benignant mistress. Here nature indeed pours forth the choicest treasures, which she had lavished on this world; and here human nature presents you with an object, which

can be exceeded only in the other.

The same taste, the same imagination, which luxuriously riots in these elegant scenes, can be amused with objects of far inferior note. The woods, the rivers, the lawns of Devon and of Dorset, attract the eye of the ingenious traveller, and retard his pace; which delay he afterwards compensates, by swiftly scouring over the gloomy heath of Bagshot, or that pleasant plain, which extends itself westward from Stockbridge, where no other object than one single tree only in fixteen miles presents itself to the view, unless the clouds, in compassion to our tired spirits, kindly open their variegated mansions to our

prospect.

Not so travels the money-meditating tradesman, the sagacious justice, the dignisted doctor, the warm-clad grazier, with all the numerous offspring of wealth and dulness. On they jog, with equal pace, through the verdant meadows, or over the barren heath, their horses measuring sour miles and a half per hour with the utmost exactness, the eyes of the beast and of his master being alike directed forwards, and employed in contemplating the same objects in the same manner. With equal rapture the good rider surveys the proudest boasts of the architect, and those fair buildings with which some unknown hand bath adorned the rich clothing town, where heaps of bricks are piled up, as a kind of monument, to shew that heaps of money have been piled there before.

And now, reader, as we are in hafte to attend our hereine, we will leave to thy fagacity to apply all this to the Bœotian writers, and to those authors who are their opposites. This thou wilt be abundantly able to perform without our aid. Bestir thyself therefore on this occasion; for though we will always lend thee proper assistance in difficult places, as we do not, like some others, expect thee to use the arts of divination to discover our meaning.

f

1

.

-

e

h

r

S

r

r

e

d

d

r-

25

g

1-

e

e-

0

ir

r-

15

Sy

10

meaning, yet we shall not indulge thy laziness where nothing but thy own attention is required; for thou art highly mistaken, if thou dost imagine that we intended, when we began this great work, to leave thy fagacity nothing to do, or that, without sometimes exercising this talent, thou wilt be able to travel through our pages with any pleasure or profit to thyself.

CHAP. X.

Containing a hint or two concerning Virtue, and a few more concerning Sufpicion.

UR company, being arrived at London, were fet down at his lordship's house, where, while they refreshed themselves after the satigue of their journey, servants were dispatched to provide a lodging for the two ladies; for, as her ladyship was not then in town, Mrs Fitzpatrick would by no means consent to accept a

bed in the mansion of the peer.

Some readers will perhaps condemn this extraordinary delicacy, as I may call it, of virtue, as too nice and fcrupulous; but we must make allowances for her situation, which must be owned to have been very ticklish; and, when we consider the malice of censorious tongues, we must allow, if it was a fault, the fault was an excess on the right side, and which every woman, who is in the felf-same situation, will do well to imitate. The most formal appearance of virtue, when it is only an appearance, may perhaps, in very abstracted considerations, seem to be rather less commendable than virtue itself without this formality; but it will however be always more commended; and this, I believe, will be granted by all, that it is necessary, unless in some very particular cases, for every woman to support either the one or the other.

A lodging being prepared, Sophia accompanied her cousin for that evening, but resolved early in the morning to inquire after the lady into whose protection, as we have formerly mentioned, she had determined to throw herself, when she quitted her father's house: and this she was the more eager in doing, from some observations

she had made during her journey in the coach.

Nn 2

Now,

amiable

Now, as we would by no means fix the odious character of our fuspicion on Sophia, we are almost afraid to open to our reader the conceits which filled her mind concerning Mrs Fitzpatrick, of whom she certainly entertained at present some doubts, which, as they are very apt to enter into the bosoms of the worst of people, we think proper not to mention more plainly, till we have first suggested a word or two to our reader touching suspicion

in general.

Of this there have always appeared to me to be two degrees. The first of these I chuse to derive from the heart, as the extreme velocity of its difcernment feems to denote fome previous inward impulse, and the rather, as this superlative degree often forms its own objects; sees what is not, and always more than really exists. is that quick-fighted penetration, whose hawke's eyes no fymptom of evil can escape; which observes not only upon the actions, but upon the words and looks of men; and as it proceeds from the heart of the observer, so it dives into the heart of the observed, and there espies evil, as it were in the first embryo; nay sometimes before it can be faid to be conceived. An admirable faculty, if it were infallible; but as this degree of perfection is not even claimed by more than one mortal being; fo from the fallibility of fuch acute difcernment have arisen many fad mischiefs and most grievous heart-aches to innocence and virtue. I cannot help therefore regarding this vast quickfightedness into evil, as a vicious excess, and as a very pernicious evil in itself. And I am the more inclined to this opinion, as I am afraid it always proceeds from a bad heart, for the reasons I have above-mentioned, and for one more, namely, because I never knew it the property of a good one. Now from this degree of suspicion I entirely and absolutely acquit Sophia.

A fecond degree of this quality feems to arise from the head. This is indeed no other than the faculty of feeing what is before your eyes, and of drawing conclusions from what you fee. The former of these is unavoidable by those who have any eyes, and the latter is perhaps no less certain and necessary a consequence of our having any brains. This is altogether as bitter an enemy to guilt, as the former is to innocence; nor can I see it in an un-

1

d

S

t

e

n

d

d

-

r-

is

d

or

r-

I

10

ng ns

le

10

ny

lt,

nle amiable light, even though, through human fallibility it should be sometimes mistaken. For instance, if a hufband should accidentally surprize his wife in the lap or in the embraces of fome of those young gentlemen who profess the art of cuckold-making. I should not highly, I think, blame him for concluding fomething more than what he faw, from the familiarities which he really had feen, and which we are at least favourable enough to, when we call them innocent freedoms. The reader will eafily fuggest great plenty of instances to himself; I shall add but one more, which, however unchriftian it may be thought by fome, I cannot help esteeming to be strictly justifiable; and this is a suspicion that a man is capable of doing what he hath done already; and that it is possible for one who hath been a villian once, to act the fame part again. And to confess the truth, of this degree of fuspicion I believe Sophia was guilty. From this degree of suspicion she had, in fact, conceived an opinion, that her cousin was really not better than she should be.

The case it seems, was this: Mrs Fitzpatrick wisely considered, that the virtue of a young lady is, in the world, in the same situation with a poor hare, which is certain, whenever it ventures abroad, to meet its enemies, for it can hardly meet any other. No sooner therefore was she determined to take the first opportunity of quitting the protection of her husband, than she resolved to cast herself under the protection of some other man; and whom could she so properly chuse to be her guardian as a person of quality, of fortune, of honour; and who, besides a gallant disposition, which inclines men to knighterrantry, that is, to be the champions of ladies in distress, had often declared a violent attachment to herself, and had already given her all the instances of it in his power?

But as the law hath foolifhly omitted this office of vice-husband, or guardian to an eloped lady; and if malice is apt to denominate him by a more disagreeable appellation; it was concluded that his lordship should perform all such kind offices to the lady in secret, and without publicly assuming the character of a protector. Nay, to prevent any other person from seeing him in this light, it was agreed that the lady should proceed directly to Bath, and that his lordship should sirst go to London,

and

great

and thence should go down to that place, by the advice

of his phyficians.

Now all this Sophia very plainly understood, not from the lips or behaviour of Mrs Fitzpatrick, but from the peer, who was infinitely less expert at retaining a secret, than was the good lady; and perhaps the exact fecrecy which Mrs Fitzpatrick had observed on this head in her narrative, ferved not a little to heighten those suspicions which were now rifen in the mind of her coufin.

Sophia very eafily found out the lady she fought; for indeed there was not a chairman in town to whom her house was not perfectly well known; and as she received, in return of her first message, a most pressing invitation, the immediately accepted of it. Mrs Fitzpatrick indeed did not defire her cousin to stay with her with more earnestness than civility required. Whether she had difcerned and refented the fuspicion above-mentioned, or from what other motive it arose, I cannot say, but certain it is, she was full as desirous of parting with Sophia

as Sophia herself could be of going. The young lady, when she came to take leave of her cousin, could not avoid giving her a short hint of advice. She begged her for heaven's fake, to take care of herfelf, and to confider in what dangerous a fituation she stood: adding, the hoped fome method would be found of reconciling her to her hufband. "You must remember, my " dear," fays she, " the maxim which my aunt Western " has fo often repeated to us both; That whenever "the matrimonial ailiance is broke, and war declared " between husband and wife, she can hardly make a dif-" advantageous peace for herfelf on any conditions. These " are my aunt's very words, and she had a great deal of experience in the world." Mrs Fitzpatrick answered in a contemptuous fmile, "Never fear me, child, take " care of yourfelf, for you are younger than I. " come and visit you in a few days; but, dear Sophy, let " me give you one piece of advice: leave the character " of Graveairs in the country; for, believe me, it will fit very aukwardly upon you in this town."

Thus the two cousins parted, and Sophia repaired directly to lady Bellaston, where she found a most hearty as well as a most polite welcome. The lady had taken a r

r

d

e

d

ria

er e. lf, l: nny rn

ed ifefe of ed ke vill let ter great fancy to her when she had seen her formerly with her aunt Western. She was indeed extremely glad to see her, and was no sooner acquainted with the reasons which induced her to leave the 'squire and fly to London, than she highly applauded her sense and resolution; and after expressing the highest satisfaction in the opinion which Sophia declared she entertained of her ladyship, by chusing her house for an asylum, she promised her all the protection which it was in her power to give.

As we have now brought Sophia into fafe hands, the reader will, I apprehend, be contented to deposit her there a while, and to look a little after other personages, and particularly poor Jones, whom we have left long enough to do penance for his past offences, which, as is the nature of vice, brought sufficient punishment upon

him themselves.

THE

diirty

n a reat

THE

HISTORY

OF A

FOUNDLING.

BOOK XII.

CONTAINING THE SAME INDIVIDUAL TIME WITH THE FORMER.

CHAP. I.

Sheaving what is to be deemed Plagiarifin in a modern Author, and what is to be considered as a lawful Prize.

HE learned reader must have observed, that in the course of this mighty work, I have often translated passages out of the best ancient Authors, without quoting the original, or without taking the least notice of the book from whence they were borrowed.

This conduct in writing is placed in a very proper light by the ingenious Abbé Bannier, in his preface to his Mythology, a work of great erudition, and of equal judgment. " It will be eafy," fays he, " for the reader to observe, that I have frequently had greater regard to him than to my own reputation: for an Author

- " certainly pays him a confiderable compliment, when
- " for his take he suppresses learned quotations that
- come in his way, and which would have cost him but

" the bare trouble of transcribing.

To

C

C

tin

ar

m

an co to

ed

ed

re ch th

m

re

ha

to

me

ric

bo

ev

of

of

ric

he

fta

ry

1

t

t

Q

To fill up a work with these scraps may indeed be considered as a downright cheat on the learned world, who are by such means imposed upon to buy a second time in fragments and by retail, what they have already in gross, if not in their memories, upon their shelves; and it is still more cruel upon the illiterate, who are drawn in to pay for what is of no manner of use to them. A writer who intermixes great quantity of Greek and Latin with his works, deals by the ladies and fine gentlemen in the same paltry manner with which they are treated by the auctioneers, who often endeavour to confound and mix up their lots, that, in order to purchase the commodity you want, you are obliged, at the same time, to purchase that which will do you no service.

And yet as there is no conduct fo fair and difinterested, but that it may be misunderstood by ignorance, and misrepresented by malice, I have been sometimes tempted to preserve my own reputation, at the expence of my reader, and to transcribe the original, or at least to quote chapter and verse, whenever I have made use either of the thought or expression of another. I am indeed in some doubt that I have often suffered by the contrary method; and that by suppressing the original Author's name, I have been rather suspected of plagiarism, than reputed to act from the amiable motive above assigned

by that justly celebrated Frenchman.

Now to obviate all fuch imputations for the future, I do here confess and justify the fact. The ancients may be confidered as a rich common, where every person who hath the smallest tenement in Parnassus, hath a free right to fatten his muse. Or, to place it in a clearer light, we moderns are to the ancients what the poor are to the rich. By the poor here I mean, that large and venerable body, which in English we call the Mob. Now, whoever hath had the honour to be admitted to any degree of intimacy with this mob, must well know that it is one of their established maxims to plunder and pillage their rich neighbours without any reluctance; and that this is held tobe neither fin nor shame among them. And so constantly do they abide and act by this maxim, that in every parish almost in this kingdom, there is a kind of confederacy ever carrying on against a certain person of opu-Vol. II.

re

m

In

jo

fo

fu

fo

pa

VC

th

H

he

CE

be

ar

01

46

33

66

25

46

66

lence called the 'fquire, whose property is considered as free booty by all his poor neighbours; who, as they conclude that there is no manner of guilt in such depredations, look upon it as a point of honour and moral obligation to conceal and preserve each other from punishment on all such occasions.

In like manner are the ancients, such as Homer, Virgil, Horace, Cicero, and the rest, to be esteemed among us writers, as so many wealthy 'squires, from whom we, the poor of Parnassus, claim an immemorial custom of taking whatever we can come at. This liberty I demand, and this I am as ready to allow again to my poor neighbours in their turn. All I profess, and all I require of my brethren is, to maintain the same strict honesty among ourselves, which the mob shew to one another. To steal from one another, is indeed highly criminal and indecent; for this may be strictly stiled defrauding the poor (sometimes perhaps those who are poorer than ourselves) or, to see it under the most opprobrious colours, robbing the spittal.

Since, therefore, upon the strictest examination, my own conscience cannot lay any such pitiful theft to my charge, I am contented to plead guilty to the former accufation; nor shall I ever scruple to take to myself any paffage which I shall find in an ancient author to my purpose, without setting down the name of the author from whence it was taken. Nay, I absolutely claim a property in all fuch fentiments the moment they are transcribed into my writings, and I expect all readers henceforwards to regard them as purely and entirely my own. This claim however I defire to be allowed me only on condition that I preserve strict honesty towards my poor brethren, from whom, if ever I borrow any of that little of which they are possessed, I shall never fail to put their mark upon it, that it may be at all times ready to be restored to the right owner.

The omiffion of this was highly blameable in one Mr Moore, who having formerly borrowed fome lines of Pope and company, took the liberty to transcribe fix of them into his play of the Rival Modes. Mr Pope however very luckily found them in the faid play, and laying violent hands on his own property, transferred it back

again

again into his own works; and for a further punishment, imprisoned the said Moore in the loathsome dungeon of the Dunciad, where his unhappy memory now remains, and eternally will remain, as a proper punishment for such his unjust dealings in the poetical trade.

CHAP. II.

In which, though the 'Squire doth not find his Daughter, fomething is found, which puts an end to his pursuit.

THE history now returns to the inn at Upton, whence we shall first trace the footsteps of 'squire Western; for as he will soon arrive at an end of his journey, we shall have then full leisure to attend our hero.

The reader may be pleased to remember, that the said 'squire departed from the inn in great sury, and in that sury he pursued his daughter. The hostler having informed him that she had crossed the Severn, he likewise past that river with his equipage, and rode sull speed, vowing the utmost vengeance against poor Sophia, if he should but overtake her.

He had not gone far, before he arrived at a cross way. Here he called a short council of war, in which, after hearing different opinions, he at last gave the direction of his pursuit to fortune, and struck directly into the Worcester road.

In this road he proceeded about two miles, when he began to bemoan himself most bitterly, frequently crying out, "What pity is it! Sure never was so unlucky a "dog as myself?" and then burst forth a volley of oaths and execrations.

The parson attempted to administer comfort to him on this occasion. "Sorrow not, Sir," says he, "like "those without hope. Howbeit we have not yet been able to overtake young madam, we may account it fome good fortune, that we have hitherto traced her course aright. Peradventure she will soon be fatigued with her journey, and will tarry in some inn, in order to renovate her corporeal functions; and in that case, in all moral certainty, you will very briefly be compose voti."

Char

T

'fqui

vocif

nor

felve

which

whic

As 1

eafil

havi

at l

you

med

day

with

for

was

any

his

to

wit

the

his

tho

fin

fav

dra

COI

the

to

by

the

€ac

W

OC

no

ch

di

"Pogh! d—n the flut," answered the 'fquire, "I

"am lamenting the loss of fo fine a morning for hunt-

" ing. It is confounded hard to lofe one of the best feeting days, in all appearance, which hath been this

" feafon, and especially after so long a frost."

Whether fortune, who now and then shews some compassion in her wantonest tricks, might not take pity of the 'Iquire, and, as she had determined not to let him overtake his daughter, might not refolve to make him amends fome other way, I will not affert; but he had hardly uttered the words just before commemorated, and two or three oaths at their heels, when a pack of hounds began to open their melodious throats at a small distance from them, which the 'fquire's horse and his rider both perceiving, both immediately pricked up their ears, and the 'fquire crying, "She's gone, fhe's gone! Damn me if fhe is not " gone!" instantly clapped spurs to the beast, who little needed it, having indeed the fame inclination with his mafter; and now the whole company croffing into a corn field, rode directly towards the hounds with much hallooing and hooping, while the poor parson, bleffing himfelf, brought up the rear.

Thus fable reports, that the fair Grimalkin, whom Venus, at the defire of a paffionate lover, converted from a cat into a fine woman, no fooner perceived a mouse, than mindful of her former sport, and still retaining her priftine nature, she leapt from the bed of her husband to

purfue the little animal.

What are we to understand by this? Not that the bride was displeased with the embraces of her amorous bridegroom; for though some have remarked that cats are subject to ingratitude, yet women and cats too will be pleased and purr on certain occasions. The truth is, as the sagacious Sir Roger L'Estrange observes, in his deep restections, that, "if we shut nature out at the door, she "will come in at the window, and that puss, though a madam, will be a monser still." In the same manner we are not to arraign the 'squire of any want of love to his daughter; for in reality he had a great deal: we are only to consider, that he was a 'squire and a sportsman, and then we may apply the sable to him, and the judicious restections likewise.

The

bout

The hounds ran very hard, as it is called, and the 'squire pursued over hedge and ditch with all his usual vociferation and alacrity, and with all his usual pleasure; nor did the thoughts of Sophia ever once intrude themselves to allay the satisfaction he enjoyed in the chace, which he said was one of the finest he ever saw, and which he swore was very well worth going sifty miles for. As the 'squire forgot his daughter, the servants, we may easily believe, forgot their mistress; and the parson, after having expressed much astonishment in Latin to himself, at length likewise abandoned all farther thoughts of the young lady, and, jogging at a distance behind, began to meditate a 'portion of doctrine for the ensuing Sunday.

The 'fquire who owned the hounds was highly pleafed with the arrival of his brother 'fquire and fportsman; for all men approve merit in their own way, and no man was more expert in the field than Mr Western, nor did any other better know how to encourage the dogs with his voice, and to animate the hunt with his holla.

Sportsmen, in the warmth of a chace, are too much engaged to attend to any manner of ceremony, nay, eyen to the offices of humanity; for, if any of them meet with an accident by tumbling into a ditch, or into a river, the rest pass on regardless, and generally leave him to his fate: during this time, therefore, the two 'fquires, though often close to each other, interchanged not a fingle word. The master of the hunt, however, often faw and approved the great judgment of the stranger in drawing the dogs when they were at a fault, and hence conceived a very high opinion of his understanding, as the number of his attendants inspired no small reverence to his quality. As foon therefore as the foort was ended by the death of the little animal which had occasioned it, the 'fquires met, and in all 'fquire-like greeting faluted each other.

The conversation was entertaining enough, and what we may perhaps relate in an appendix, or on some other occasion; but, as it noways concerns this history, we cannot prevail on ourselves to give it a place here. It concluded with a second chace, and that with an invitation to dinner. This being accepted, was followed by a hearty

bout of drinking, which ended in as hearty a nap on the

part of 'fquire Western.

Our 'fquire was by no means a match, either for his hoft or for parfon Supple, at his cups that evening; for which the violent fatigue of mind as well as body, that he had undergone, may very well account, without the least derogation from his honour. He was indeed, according to the vulgar phrase, whistled-drunk; for, before he had swallowed the third bottle, he became so entirely overpowered, that, though he was not carried off to bed till long after, the parson considered him as absent, and, having acquainted the other 'squire with all relating to Sophia, he obtained his promise of seconding those arguments, which he intended to urge the next morning for Mr Western's return.

No fooner therefore had the good 'fquire shaken off his evening, and began to call for his morning draught, and to fummon his horses in order to renew his pursuit, than Mr Supple began his diffuafives, which the hoft fo strongly seconded, that they at length prevailed, and Mr Western agreed to return home, being principally moved by one argument, viz. that he knew not which way to go, and might probably be riding farther from his daughter, instead of towards her. He then took leave of his brother-sportsman, and expressing great joy that the frost was broken, (which might perhaps be no fmall motive to his hastening home,) set forwards, or rather backwards, for Somersetshire, but not before he had first dispatched part of his retinue in quest of his daughter, after whom he likewise sent a volley of the most bitter execrations which he could invent.

CHAP. III.

The departure of Jones from Upton, with what past between him and Partridge on the road.

A T length we are once more come to our hero; and, to fay truth, we have been obliged to part with him fo long, that, confidering the condition in which we left him, I apprehend many of our readers have concluded we intended to abandon him for ever,

peop frien frien B

Chap

he b

france france prefer the

N

inn and then time hear diffe Jone ly, a

had

ing

fhou

" w " fl " en " h " th " th

" - " 0

44 P

" for lent

don

ha

he being at prefent in that fituation, in which prudent people usually desist from inquiring any farther after their friends, left they should be shocked by hearing such

friends had hanged themselves.

But, in reality, if we have not all the virtues, I will boldly fay, neither have we all the vices of a prudent character; and, though it is not easy to conceive circumfrances much more miferable than those of poor Jones at present, we shall return to him, and attend upon him with the fame diligence, as if he was wantoning in the brightest beams of fortune.

Mr Jones then, and his companion Partridge, left the inn a few minutes after the departure of 'Squire Western, and purfued the same road on foot; for the hostler told them, that no horses were by any means to be at that time procured at Upton. On they marched with heavy hearts; for though their disquiet proceeded from very different reasons, yet displeased they were both; and, if Jones fighed bitterly, Partridge grunted altogether as fad-

ly, at every step.

When they came to the cross roads where the 'fquire had ftopt to take counsel, Jones stopt likewise, and turning to Partridge, asked his opinion which track they should pursue. "Ah, Sir," answered Partridge, "I " wish your honour would follow my advice." " Why " should I not," replied Jones; " for it is now indiffer-" ent to me whither I go, or what becomes of me?" " My advice then," faid Partridge, " is, that you imme-" diately face about and return home: for who, that " hath fuch a home to return to as your honour, would " travel thus about the country like a vagabond? I ask

" pardon, sed vox ea sola reperta est."

" Alas!" cries Jones, "I have no home to return to; "-but, if my friend, my father, would receive me, " could I bear the country from which Sophia is flown-" Cruel Sophia! Cruel! No. Let me blame myself-" No, let me blame thee. D-nation feize thee, fool, " blockhead! thou haft undone me, and I will tear thy " foul from thy body." ---- At which words he laid violent hands on the collar of poor Partridge, and shook him more heartily than an ague-fit, or his own fears had ever done before.

Partridge

in

te

pi

CC

h

re

to

W

Partridge fell trembling on his knees, and begged for mercy, vowing he had meant no harm-when Jones, after staring wildly on him for a moment, quitted his hold, and discharged a rage upon himself, that, had it fallen on the other, would certainly have put an end to his being, which indeed the very apprehension of it had almost effected.

We would bestow some pains here in minutely describ. ing all the mad pranks which Jones played on this occafion, could we be well affured that the reader would take the fame pains in perufing them; but as we are apprehensive that, after all the labour which we should employ in painting this scene, the faid reader would be very apt to skip it entirely over, we have faved ourselves that To fay the truth, we have, from this reason a. trouble. lone, often done great violence to the luxuriance of our genius, and have left many excellent descriptions out of our work, which would otherwise have been in it. And this fuspicion, to be honest, arises, as is generally the case, from our own wicked heart; for we have, ourselves, been very often most horridly given to jumping, as we have run thro' the pages of voluminous historians.

Suffice it then fimply to fay, that Jones, after having played the part of a madman for many minutes, came by degrees to himself; which no sooner happened, than, turning to Partridge, he very earnestly begged his pardon for the attack he had made upon him in the violence of his passion; but concluded, by desiring him never to mention his return again; for he was refolved ne-

ver to fee that country any more.

Partridge easily forgave, and faithfully promised to obey the injunction now laid upon him. And then Jones very briskly cried out: "Since it is absolutely impossi-" ble for me to purfue any farther the steps of my an-" gel-I will pursue those of glory. Come on, my brave " lad, now for the army :- It is a glorious cause, and I " would willingly facrifice my life in it, even though it " was worth my preferving." And, fo faying, he immediately struck into the different road from that which the 'squire had taken, and, by mere chance, pursued the very same through which Sophia had before passed.

Our

Our travellers now marched a full mile, without speaking a syllable to each other, though Jones indeed muttered many things to himself. As to Partridge, he was profoundly silent: for he was not perhaps perfectly recovered from his former fright; besides he had apprehensions of provoking his friend to a second sit of wrath; especially as he now began to entertain a conceit, which may not perhaps create any great wonder in the reader. In short, he began now to suspect, that Jones was absolutely out of his senses.

At length Jones, being weary of foliloquy, addreffed himself to his companion, and blamed him for his taciturnity; for which the poor man very honestly accounted, from his fear of giving offence. And now, this fear being pretty well removed by the most absolute promises of indemnity, Partridge again took the bridle from his tongue; which perhaps rejoiced no less at regaining its liberty, than a young colt, when the bridle is slipt from his

neck, and he is turned loofe into the pastures.

As Partridge was inhibited from that topic which would at first have suggested itself, he fell upon that which was next uppermost in his mind, namely, the Man of the Hill. " Certainly, Sir," fays he, "that could " never be a man, who dreffes himself, and lives after " fuch a strange manner, and so unlike other folks. " Besides, his diet, as the old woman told me, is chiefly " upon herbs, which is fitter food for a horse than a " Christian: nay, landlord at Upton says, that the neigh-" bours thereabouts have very fearful notions about him. " It runs strangely in my head, that it must have been " fome spirit, who perhaps might be fent to forewarn " us; and who knows, but all that matter which he told " us, of his going to fight, of his being taken prisoner, " and of the great danger he was in of being hanged, " might be intended as a warning to us, confidering what " we are going about: besides, I dreamt of nothing all " last night, but of fighting: and methought the blood " han out of my nose as liquor out of a tap. " Sir, infandum, regina, jubes renovare dolorem." "Thy ftory Partridge," answered Jones, "is almost " as ill applied as thy Latin. Nothing can be more like-" ly to happen than death to men who go into battle. " Perhaps Vol. II. Pp

C

64

64

66

46

66

"

61

"Perhaps we shall both fall in it,—and what then?"
"What then!" replied Partridge: "Why then there
is an end of us, is there not? when I am gone, all is
over with me. What matters the cause to me, or who
gets the victory, if I am killed? I shall never enjoy
any advantage from it. What are all the ringing of bells,
and bonesires, to one that is six foot under ground?
there will be an end of poor Partridge." "And an
end of poor Partridge," cric. Jones, "there must be
one time or other. If you love Latin, I will repeat
you some sine lines out of Horace, which would infpire courage into a coward.

Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori. Mors et sugacem persequitur virum Nec parcit imbellis juventæ Poplitibus, timidoque tergo.

" I wish you would construe them," cries Partridge; for Horace is a hard author, and I cannot understand

" as you repeat them."

"I will repeat you a bad imitation or rather paraphrase of my own," said Jones: "for I am but an indifferent poet.

"Who would not die in his dear country's cause!
"Since, if base fear his dastard step withdraws,
"From death he cannot sty.—One common grave
"Receives, at last, the coward and the brave."

"That's very certain," cries Partridge. "Ay, sure, "Mors omnibus communis: but there is a great difference between dying in one's bed a great many years hence, like a good Christian, with all our friends crying about us, and being shot to-day or to-morrow, like a mad dog; or perhaps hacked in twenty pieces with a fword, and that too before we have repented of all our fins. O Lord, have mercy upon us! to be sure the soldiers are a wicked kind of people. I never loved to have any thing to do with them. I could hardly bring myself ever to look upon them as Christians. There is nothing but cursing and swearing "among

among them. I wish your honour would repent: I "heartily wish you would repent, before it is too late, " and not think of going among them.-Evil communi-" cation corrupts good manners. That is my principal " reason. For, as for that matter, I am no more afraid "than another man, not I; as to matter of that, I know " all human flesh must die, but yet a man may live " many years for all that. Why, I am a middle aged " man now, and yet I may live a great number of years. " I have read of several who have lived to be above a " hundred, and fome a great deal above a hundred. Not "that I hope, I mean that I promife myfelf, to live to " any fuch age as that neither.—But, if it be only to " eighty or ninety, Heaven be praifed, that is a great " way off yet; and I am not afraid of dying then, no " more than another man: but furely to attempt death " before a man's time is come, feems to be downright " wickedness and presumption. Besides, if it was to do " any good indeed; but let the cause be what it will, " what mighty matter of good can two people do? and for my part, I understand nothing of it. I never " fired off a gun above ten times in my life; and then it " was not charged with bullets. And for the fword, I " never learned to fence, and know nothing of the mat-" ter. And then there are those cannons, which cer-" tainly it must be thought the highest presumption to " go in the way of, and nobody but a madman-I ask " pardon; upon my foul I meant no harm; I beg I may " not throw your honour into another paffion." " Be under no apprehension, Partridge," cries Jones;

"Be under no apprehension, Partridge," cries Jones;
"I am now so well convinced of thy cowardice, that
"thou couldst not provoke me on any account." "Your
"honour," answered he, "may call me a coward, or
"any thing else you please. If loving to sleep in a whole
"skin makes a man a coward, non immunes ab illis malis
"fumus. I never read in my grammar, that a man can't
be a good man without fighting. Vir bonus eft quis?
"Qui consulta patrum, qui leges jura que servat. Not a
"word of fighting; and I am sure the scripture is so
much against it, that a man shall never persuade me
he is a good Christian, while he sheds Christian blood."

Pp2 CHAP

Chap West

partu five

Tone

fome

had

of h

hone

circu

that

fron

con

stan

pof

her

lady

her

ter

hav

rea

wa

alte

wo

ho

of

fh

W

tic

w]

m

OL

tie

m

0

2

CHAP. IV.

The adventure of a Beggar-man.

JUST as Partridge had uttered that good and pious doctrine, with which the last chapter concluded, they arrived at another cross-way, when a lame fellow in rags asked them for alms; upon which Partridge gave him a severe rebuke, saying, "Every parish ought to "keep their own poor." Jones then fell a-laughing, and asked Partridge, "if he was not ashamed, with so "much charity in his mouth, to have no charity in his heart. Your religion," says he, "serves you only for an excuse for your faults, but is no incentive to your virtue. Can any man, who is really a Christian, ab fain from relieving one of his brethren in such a mi"ferable condition?" And at the same time, putting his hand in his pocket, he gave the poor object a shilling.

"Master," cries the fellow, after thanking him, "I have a curious thing here in my pocket, which I found about two miles off, if your worship will please to buy it. I should not venture to pull it out to every one; but as you are so good a gentleman, and so kind to the poor, you won't suspect a man of being a thief only because he is poor." He then pulled out a little gilt pocket-book, and delivered it into the hand of Jones.

- Jones presently opened it, and (guess reader what he felt,) saw in the first page the words Sophia Western, written by her own fair hand. He no sooner read the name, than he prest it close to his lips: nor could he avoid falling into some very frantic raptures, notwithstanding his company; but perhaps these very raptures made him forget he was not alone.

While Jones was kiffing and mumbling the book, as if he had an excellent brown buttered crust in his mouth, or as if he had really been a bookworm, or an author, who had nothing to eat but his own works, a piece of paper fell from its leaves to the ground, which Partridge took up and delivered to Jones, who presently perceived it to be a bank-bill. It was indeed the very bill which

Western

Western had given his daughter the night before her departure; and a Jew would have jumped to purchase it at

five shillings less than 100l.

The eyes of Partridge sparkled at this news, which Jones now proclaimed aloud; and so did (though with somewhat a different aspect,) those of the poor fellow who had found the book; and who (I hope from a principle of honesty,) had never opened it: but we should not deal honestly by the reader, if we omitted to inform him of a circumstance, which may be here a little material, viz. that the fellow could not read.

Jones, who had felt nothing but pure joy and transport from the finding the book, was affected with a mixture of concern at this new discovery; for his imagination infantly suggested to him, that the owner of the bill might possibly want it, before he should be able to convey it to her. He then acquainted the finder, that he knew the lady to whom the book belonged, and would endeavour to find her out as soon as possible, and return it to

her.

The pocket-book was a late present from Mrs Western to her niece: it had cost five and twenty shillings, having been bought of a celebrated toyman; but the real value of the silver, which it contained in its class, was about 18d. and that price the said toyman, as it was altogether as good as when it first issued from his shop, would now have given for it. A prudent person would, however, have taken proper advantage of the ignorance of this fellow, and would not have offered more than a shilling, or perhaps sixpence for it; nay, some perhaps would have given nothing, and left the fellow to the action of trover, which some learned serjeants may doubt whether he could, under these circumstances, have maintained.

Jones, on the contrary, whose character was on the outside of generosity, and may perhaps not very unjustly have been suspected of extravagance, without any hesitation, gave a guinea in exchange for the book. The poor man, who had not for a long time before been possessed of so much treasure, gave Mr Jones a thousand thanks, and discovered little less of transport in his muscles, than

Tones

Book XII

Cha

66 t

ss v

" I

" 5

" !

45 T

ing

-

66

46 a

"

46]

15]

t

se t

66 I

46 Y

.pc t

66 T

"]

no

boo

of

the

in

crie

"]

66]

"

46 1

tric

fev

pro

any

tair

par

inte

nev

Was

name of Sophia Western.

The fellow very readily agreed to attend our travellers to the place where he had found the pocket-book. To gether, therefore, they proceeded directly thither, but not fo fast as Mr Jones desired; for his guide unfortunately happened to be lame, and could not possibly travel faster than a mile an hour. As this place, therefore, was at about three miles distance, though the fellow had said otherwise, the reader need not be acquainted how long they were in walking it.

Jones opened the book a hundred times during their walk, kissed it as often, talked much to himself, and very little to his companions. At all which the guide express some signs of astonishment to Partridge, who more than once shook his head, and cryed, "Poor gentleman!

orandum est ut fit mens fana in corpore fano."

At length they arrived at the very spot where Sophia unhappily dropt the pocket-book, and where the fellow had as happily found it. Here Jones offered to take leave of his guide, and to improve his pace; but the fellow, in whom that violent surprize and joy, which the first receipt of the guinea had occasioned, was now considerably abated, and who had now had fufficient time to recolled himself, put on a discontented look, and, scratching his " head, faid, "He hoped his worship would give him " fomething more. Your worship," faid he, " will, I " hope, take it into your confideration, that if I had not " been honest I might have kept the whole." indeed this the reader must confess to have been true. " If the paper there," faid he, " be worth 1001. I am " fure the finding it deferves more than a guinea. "Besides, suppose your worship should never see the " lady, nor give it her - and though your worship looks " and talks like a gentleman, yet I have only your wor-" ship's bare word: and certainly if the right owner " ben't to be found, it all belongs to the first finder. I " hope your worship will consider all these matters. I am but a poor man, and therefore don't defire to have " all? but it is but reasonable I should have my share. "Your worthip looks like a good man, and, I hope, will " confider my honefly; for I might have kept every far-" thing, "thing, and nobody ever the wifer." "I promife thee, upon my honour," cries Jones, "that I know the right owner, and will reftore it to her." "Nay, your worship," answered the fellow, "may do as you please as to that: if you will give me my share, that is, one half of the money, your honour may keep the rest yourself if you please;" and concluded with swearing a very vehement oath, "that he would never mention a syllable of it to any man living."

"Lookee, friend," cries Jones, "the right owner fhall certainly have again all that she lost; and as for any further gratuity, I really cannot give it you at pre- fent; but let me know your name, and where you live, and it is more than possible you may hereafter have further reason to rejoice at this morning's adven-

" ture."

"I don't know what you mean by venture," cries " the fellow; "it feems I must venture whether you will " return the lady her money or no; but I hope your " worship will consider."—" Come, come," faid Parof tridge, " tell his honour your name, and where you " may be found; I warrant you will never repent having " put the money into his hands." The fellow feeing no hopes of recovering the possession of the pocketbook, at last complied in giving in his name and place of abode, which Jones wrote upon a piece of paper with the pencil of Sophia; and then placing the paper in the same page where she had writ her name, he cried out " There, friend, you are the happiest man a-" live; I have joined your name to that of an angel." " I don't know any thing about angels," answered the " fellow; " but I wish you would give me a little more " money, or else return me the pocket-book." Partridge now waxed worth: he called the poor cripple by feveral vile and opprobrious names, and was absolutely proceeding to beat him, but Jones would not fuffer any fuch thing; and now, telling the fellow he would certainly find some opportunity of serving him, Mr Jones departed as fast as his heels would carry him; and Partridge, into whom the thoughts of the hundred pound had infused new spirits, followed his leader; while the man, who was obliged to fray behind, fell to curfing them both,

W tr

..

21

tr

bi

di

m

di

ya

th

86

W

66

66

ge

66

66

wl

ha

fire

Jo

as well as his parents; "for had they," faid he, "fent er me to a charity school to learn to write, and read, and cast account, I should have known the value of " these matters as well as other people."

CHAP. V.

Containing more adventures which Mr Jones and his com. panion met on the road.

UR travellers now walked so fast, that they had very little time or breath for conversation, Jones meditating all the way on Sophia, and Partridge on the bank bill, which though it gave him fome pleafure, caufed him at the same time to repine at fortune, which in all his walks had never given him fuch an opportunity of shewing his honesty. They had proceeded above three miles, when Partridge being unable any longer to keep up with Jones, called to him, and begged him a little to flaken his pace: with this he was the more ready to comply, as he had for some time lost the footsteps of the horses, which the thaw had enabled him to trace for feveral miles, and he was now upon a wide common where were feveral roads.

He here therefore stopt to consider which of these roads he should pursue, when on a sudden they heard the noise of a drum that seemed at no great distance. This found presently alarmed the fears of Partridge, and he cried out, " Lord have mercy upon us all; they are " certainly a-coming!" " Who is coming?" cries Jones; for fear had long fince given place to fofter ideas in his mind; and, fince his adventure with the lame man, he had been totally intent upon pursuing Sophia, without entertaining one thought of an enemy. Who!" cries Partridge; "why, the rebels; but why should I call them " rebels? they may be very honest gentlemen for any " thing I know to the contrary. The Devil take him " that affronts them, I fay. I am fure, if they have no-

" thing to fay to me, I will have nothing to fay to them but in a civil way. For Heaven's fake, Sir, don't affront

" them if they should come, and perhaps they may do us no harm; but would it not be the wifer way to

" creep into some of yonder bushes till they are gone by!

"What can two unarmed men do perhaps against fifty thousand? Certainly nobody but a madman; I hope your honour is not offended; but certainly no man who hath mens sana in corpore sano"—Here Jones interrupted this corrent of eloquence, which fear had inspired, saying, "That by the drum he perceived they were near some town." He then made directly towards the place whence the noise proceeded, bidding Partridge "take courage, for that he would lead him into "no danger," and adding, "it was impossible the rebels "should be so near."

Partridge was a little comforted with this last assurance; and, though he would more gladly have gone the contrary way, he followed his leader, his heart beating time, but not after the manner of heroes, to the music of the drum, which ceased not till they had traversed the com-

mon, and were come into a narrow lane.

And now Partridge, who kept even pace with Jones, discovered something painted flying in the air a very sew yards before him; which fancying to be the colours of the enemy, he fell a-bellowing, "O Lord, Sir, here they are; there is the crown and cossin. Oh Lord! I newer saw any thing so terrible! and we are within gunflot of them already."

Jones no fooner looked up than he plainly perceived what it was which Partridge had thus miftaken. "Par-"tridge," fays he, "I faucy you will be able to engage this whole army yourfelf; for by the colours I guess what the drum was which we heard before, and which

" beats up for recruits to a puppet-show."

"A puppet-show," answered Partridge with most eager transport: "And is it really no more than that? I "love a puppet-show of all the pastimes upon earth. "Do, good Sir, let us tarry and see it. Besides, I am quite famished to death; for it is now almost dark, and I have not eat a morfel since three o'clock in the morning.

They now arrived at an inn, or indeed an alchouse, where Jones was prevailed upon to stop, the rather as he had no longer any affurance of being in the road he defired. They walked both directly into the kitchen, where Jones began to inquire if no ladies had passed that way Vol. II.

Q q ‡ in

The

in the morning, and Partridge as eagerly examined into the state of their provisions; and indeed his inquiry met with the better success; for Jones could not hear news of Sophia; but Partridge, to his great satisfaction, found good reason to expect very shortly the agreeable fight of

an excellent fmoking dith of eggs and bacon.

In strong and healthy constitutions, love hath a very different effect from what it causes in the puny part of the species. In the latter, it generally destroys all that appetite which tends towards the conversation of the individual; but in the former, though it often induces forgetfulness, and a neglect of food, as well as of every thing else, yet place a good piece of well-powdered buttock before a hungry lover, and he seldom fails very handsomely to play his part. Thus it happened in the present case; for though Jones perhaps wanted a prompter, and might have travelled much farther, had he been alone, with an empty stomach, yet no sooner did he sit down to the bacon and eggs, than he sell to as heartily and voraciously as Partridge himself.

Before our travellers had finished their dinner, night came on, and, as the moon was now past the full, it was extremely dark: Partridge therefore prevailed on Jones to stay and see the puppet-show, which was just going to begin, and to which they were very eagerly invited by the master of the said show, who declared that his sigures were the finest which the world had ever produced, and that they had given great satisfaction to all the

quality in every town in England.

The puppet-show was performed with great regularity and decency. It was called the fine and serious part of the Provoked Husband; and it was indeed a very grave and solemn entertainment, without any low wit or humour, or jests, or, to do it no more than justice, without any thing which could provoke a laugh. The audience were all highly pleased. A grave matron told the master she would bring her two daughters the next night, as he did not shew any stuff; and an attorney's clerk and an exciseman both declared, that the characters of Lord and Lady Townly were well preserved, and highly in nature. Partridge likewise concurred with this opinion.

The mafter was fo highly elated with these encomiums, that he could not refrain from adding some more of his own. He faid, " The present age was not im-" proved in any thing fo much as in their puppet shows; " which, by throwing out Punch and his wife Joan, and " fuch idle trumpery, were at last brought to be a ration-" al entertainment. I remember," faid he, " when I " first took to the business, there was a great deal of " low stuff that did very well to make folks laugh, " but was never calculated to improve the morals of " young people, which certainly ought to be principally " aimed at in every puppet-show; for why may not good " and instructive lessons be conveyed this way, as well " as any other? My figures are as big as the life, and " they represent the life in every particular: and I ques-"tion not but people rife from my little drama as much " improved as they do from the great." " I would by no " means degrade the ingenuity of your profession," anfwered Jones, "but I should have been glad to have feen " my old acquaintance mafter Punch for all that; and fo " far from improving, I think, by leaving out him and his " merry wife Joan, you have spoiled your puppet-show." The dancer of wires conceived an immediate and high

contempt for Jones, from these words; and, with much distain in his countenance, he replied, "Very proba"bly, Sir, that may be your opinion; but I have the
statisfaction to know the best judges dister from you,
and it is impossible to please every taste. I confess,
indeed, some of the quality at Bath, two or three
years ago, wanted mightily to bring Punch again upon
the stage. I believe I lost some money for not agreeing to it; but, let others do as they will, a little matter shall never bribe me to degrade my own profession,

" nor will I ever willingly confent to the spoiling the decency and regularity of my stage, by introducing any
fuch low stuff upon it."

"Right, friend," cries the clerk, "you are very right.
"Always avoid what is low. There are feveral of my
acquaintance in London, who are refolved to drive
every thing which is low from the stage," "Nothing
can be more proper," cries the exciseman, pulling his
pipe from his mouth. "I remember," added he, (for

Qq2

then I lived with my lord,) "I was in the footman's "gallery, the night when this play of the Provoked "Husband was acted first. There was a great deal of

" low stuff in it about a country gentleman come up to to town to stand for parliament-man; and there they

"brought a parcel of his fervants upon the stage, his coachman I remember particularly; but the gentlemen

"in our gallery could not bear any thing so low, and

"they damned it. I observe, friend, you have left all that matter out, and you are to be commended for it,

"Nay, gentlemen," cries Jones, "I can never maintain an opinion against so many; indeed, if the generality of this audience dislike him, the learned gentle-

" man, who conducts the show, may have done very

" right in difmiffing Punch from his fervice."

The master of the show than began a second harangue, and said much of the great force of example, and how much the inferior part of mankind would be deterred from vice, by observing how odious it was in their superiors; when he was unluckily interrupted by an incident, which, though perhaps we might have omitted it at another time, we cannot help relating at present, but not in this chapter.

CHAP. VI.

From which it may be inferred, that the best things are liable to be misunderstood and misinterpreted.

VIOLENT uproar now arose in the entry, where my landlady was well cuffing her maid both with her fist and tongue. She had indeed missed the wench from her employment, and, after a little search, had found her on the puppet-show stage in company with the Merry Andrew, and in a situation not very proper to be described.

Though Grace (for that was her name,) had forfeited all title to modesty, yet had she not impudence enough to deny a fact in which she was actually surprised: she therefore took another turn, and attempted to mitigate the offence. "Why do you beat me in this manner, "mistress?" cries the wench. "If you don't like my do-

ings

Cha

66 i

the

" I

66 i

66 2

on "]

66]

.. (

46

66

66

66

66

" ings, you may turn me away. If I am a w-e," (for the other had liberally bestowed that appellation on her,) " my betters are fo as well as I! What was the fine lady " in the puppet-show just now! I suppose she did not lie

" all night out from her hufband for nothing."

The landlady now burit into the kitchen, and fell foul on both her husband and the poor puppet-mover. "Here, "husband," fays she, "you see the consequence of har-"bouring these people in your house. If one doth " draw a little drink the more for them, one is hardly " made amends for the litter they make; and then to " have one's house made a bawdy-house of by such " loufy vermin. In fhort, I defire you would be gone " to morrow-morning; for I will tolerate no more fuch "doings. It is only the way to teach our fervants idle-" ness and nonesense; for to be sure nothing better can " be learned by fuch idle shows as these. I remember "when puppet-shows were made of good scripture sto-" ries, as Jephtha's rash vow, and such good things, and " when wicked people were carried away by the devil. "There was some sense in those matters; but, as the " parson told us last Sunday, nobody believes in the de-" vil now a-days; and here you bring about a parcel of " puppets dreft up like lords and ladies, only to turn " the heads of poor country-wenches; and when their " heads are once turned topfy turvy, no wonder every " thing elfe is fo."

Virgil, I think, tells us, that when the mob are affembled in a riotous and tumultuous manner, and all forts of miffile weapons fly about, if a man of gravity and authority appears amongst them, the tumult is presently appealed, and the mob, which, when collected into one body, may be well compared to an afs, erect their long

ears at the grave man's discourse.

On the contrary, when a fet of grave men and philosophers are disputing; when wisdom herself may be confidered as prefent, and administring arguments to the disputants; should a tumult arise among the mob, or should one scold, who is herself equal in noise to a mighty mob, appear among the faid philosophers; their disputes cease in a moment, wisdom no longer performs

Cha

66 €

46 t

to 1

hou

occ

mo

hin

hin

wal

left

ha

far

tw

Pa

fer

m

en

w]

pe

re

fir

of

ar

th

ch

her ministerial office, and the attention of every one is

immediately attracted by the fcold alone.

Thus the uproar aforefaid, and the arrival of the landlady, filenced the master of the puppet-show, and put a speedy and final end to that grave and solemn harangue, of which we have given the reader a sufficient taste already. Nothing indeed could have happened so very inopportune as this accident; the most wanton malice of fortune could not have contrived such another stratagem to confound the poor fellow, while he was so triumphantly descanting on the good morals inculcated by his exhibitions. His mouth was now as effectually stopt, as that of a quack must be, if, in the midst of a declamation on the great virtues of his pills and powders, the corpse of one of his martyrs should be brought forth, and deposited

before the stage as a testimony of his skill. Instead, therefore, of answering my landlady, the puppet-show-man ran out to punish his merry Andrew; and now the moon beginning to put forth her filver light, as the poets call it, (though she looked at that time more like a piece of copper,) Jones called for his reckoning, and ordered Partridge, whom my landlady had just awaked from a profound nap, to prepare for his journey; but Partridge, having lately carried two points, as my reader hath feen before, was emboldened to attempt a third, which was to prevail with Jones to take up a lodging that evening in the house where he then was. He introduced this with an affected surprize at the intention which Mr Jones declared of removing; and, after urging many excellent arguments against it, he at last insisted ftrongly, that it could be to no manner of purpose whatever; for that, unless Jones knew which way the lady was gone, every flep he took might very possibly lead him the farther from her; "for you find, Sir," faid he, by all the people in the house, that she is not gone this way. How much better, therefore, would it be to " ftay till the morning, when we may expect to meet with fomebody to inquire of?"

This last argument had indeed some effect on Jones; and while he was weighing it, the landlord threw all the rhetoric of which he was master into the same scale. Sure, Sir," said he, "your servant gives you a most

" excellent

"excellent advice, for who would travel by night at this time of the year?" He then began in the usual stile to trumpet forth the excellent accommodation which his house afforded; and my landlady likewise opened on the occasion—But not to detain the reader with what is common to every host and hostess, it is sufficient to tell him, Jones was at last prevailed on to stay and refresh himself with a few hours rest, which indeed he very much wanted; for he had hardly thut his eyes since he had left the inn where the accident of the broken head had happened.

As foon as Jones had taken a refolution to proceed no farther that night, he prefently retired to rest with his two bed-fellows, the pocket-book and the muss; but Partridge, who at several times had refreshed himself with several naps, was more inclined to eating than to sleep-

ing, and more to drinking than to either.

And now the storm which Grace had raised being at an end, and my landlady being again reconciled to the puppet-man, who on his side forgave the indecent reslections which the good woman in her passion had cast on his performances, a face of perfect peace and tranquillity reigned in the kitchen; where sat assembled round the fire, the landlord and landlady of the house, the master of the puppet show, the attorney's clerk, the exciseman, and the ingenious Mr Partridge: in which company past the agreeable conversation which will be found in the next chapter.

CHAP. VII.

Containing a Remark or two of our own, and many more of the good Company assembled in the Kitchen.

HOUGH the pride of Partridge did not submit to acknowledge himself a servant, yet he condescended in most particulars to imitate the manners of that rank. One instance of this was, his greatly magnifying the fortune of his companion, as he called Jones: such is a general custom with all servants among strangers, as none of them would willingly be thought the attendant

ate

11

t

f

ŀ

on a beggar; for the higher the fituation of the mafter is, the higher confequently is that of the man in his own opinion; the truth of which observation appears from the

behaviour of all the footmen of the nobility.

But though title and fortune communicate a splendor all around them, and the footmen of men of quality and of estate think themselves entitled to a part of that respect which is paid to the quality and estate of their masters, it is clearly otherwise with regard to virtue and understanding. These advantages are strictly personal, and fwallow themselves all the respect which is paid to them. To fay the truth, this is fo very little, that they cannot well afford to let any others partake with them. As these therefore reflect no honour on the domestic, so neither is he at all dishonoured by the most deplorable want of both in his master. Indeed it is otherwise in the want of what is called virtue in a miltress, the consequence of which we have before feen; for in this dishonour there is a kind of contagion, which, like that of poverty, communicates itself to all who approach it.

Now for these reasons we are not to wonder, that servants (I mean among the men only,) should have so great regard for the reputation of the wealth of their masters, and little or none at all for their character in other points; and that, though they would be ashamed to be the footman of a beggar, they are not so to attend upon a rogue or a blockhead, and do consequently make no scruple to spread the same of the iniquities and sollies of their said masters as far as possible, and this often with great humour and merriment. In reality, a sootman is often a wit, as well as a beau, at the expence of the gentleman

whose livery he wears.

After Partridge, therefore, had enlarged greatly on the vast fortune to which Mr Jones was heir, he very freely communicated an apprehension which he had begun to conceive the day before, and for which, as we hinted, at that very time, the behaviour of Jones seemed to have furnished a sufficient soundation. In short, he was now pretty well consirmed in an opinion, that his master was out of his wits, with which opinion he very bluntly acquainted the good company round the fire.

With

With this fentiment the puppet-show man immediately coincided. "I own," faid he, "the gentleman furprised me very much, when he talked so absurdly about puppet-shows. It is indeed hardly to be concived that any man in his senses should be so much mistaken; what you say now accounts very well for all his monstrous notions. Poor gentleman! I am heartily concerned for him; indeed he has a strange wildness about his eyes, which I took notice of before, though I did not mention it."

The landlord agreed with this last affertion, and likewise claimed the fagacity of having observed it. "And certainly," added he, "it must be so; for no one but a madman would have thought of leaving so good a house, to ramble about the country at that time of

" night."

The exciseman pulling his pipe from his mouth, said, "He thought the gentleman looked and talked a little wildly;" and then turning to Partridge, "If he be a madman," said he, "he should not be suffered to tra"vel thus about the country; for possibly he may do fome mischief. It is pity he was not secured and

" fent home to his relations.

Now some conceits of this kind were likewise lurking in the mind of Partridge; for, as he was now persuaded that Jones had run away from Mr Allworthy, he promised himself the highest rewards, if he could by any means convey him back. But fear of Jones, of whose sierceness and strength he had seen, and indeed felt some instances, had however represented any such scheme as impossible to be executed, and had discouraged him from applying himself to form any regular plan for the purpose But no sooner did he hear the sentiments of the exciseman, than he embraced that opportunity of declaring his own, and expressed a hearty wish that such a matter could be brought about.

"Could be brought about!" fays the excifeman;

" why there is nothing eafier."

"Ah! Sir," answered Partridge, "you don't know what a devil of a fellow he is. He can take me up with one hand, and throw me out at a window; and

" he would too, if he did but imagine-

Vol. II, Rr ‡ "Pogh!

of

ch

cle

" Pogh!" fays the exciseman, "I believe I am as good a man as he. Befides, here are five of us." "I don't know what five," cries the landlady; " my " husband shall have nothing to do in it. Nor shall " any violent hands be laid upon any body in my house. "The young gentleman is as pretty a young gentleman " as ever I taw in my life, and I believe he is no more " mad than any of us. What do you tell of his having " a wild look with his eyes? they are the prettieft eyes I " ever faw, and he has the prettiest look with them; and " a very modest civil young man he is. I am fure I have " bepitied him heartily ever fince the gentleman there in the corner told us he was croft in love. Certainly " that is enough to make any man, especially such a " fweet young gentleman as he is, to look a little other-" wife than he did before. Lady, indeed! what the devil " would the lady have better than fuch a handfome man " with a great estate? I suppose she is one of your quality " folks, one of your townly ladies that we faw last night " in the puppet-show, who don't know what they would " be at."

The attorney's clerk likewise declared he would have no concern in the business, without the advice of counsel. "Suppose," says he, "an action of false imprisonment should be brought against us, what defence could we make? Who knows what may be sufficient evidence of madness to a jury? But I only speak upon my own account; for it don't look well for a lawyer to be concerned in these matters, unless it be as a lawyer. Juries are always less favourable to us than to other people. I don't therefore dissuade you, Mr
Thomson, (to the exciseman,) nor the gentleman, nor any body else."

The exciseman shook his head at this speech, and the puppet-show-man said, "madness was sometimes a difficult matter for a jury to decide: For I remember," says he, "I was once present at a trial of madness, where twenty witnesses swore that the person was as mad as a March hare; and twenty others, that he was as much in his senses as any man in England—And indeed it was the opinion of most people, that it was "only

" only a trick of his relations to rob the poor man of

" his right."

"Very likely!" cries the landlady, "I myfelf knew a poor gentleman who was kept in a mad-house all his life by his family, and they enjoyed his estate, but it did them no good; for though the law gave it them,

" it was the right of another."

"Pogh!" cries the clerk with great contempt, "who hath any right but what the law gives them? If the law gave me the best estate in the country, I should never trouble myself much who had the right."

"If it be so?" fave Partridge "Felix quem facinat

"If it be fo," fays Partridge, "Felix quem faciunt

" aliena pericula cautum."

My landlord, who had been called out by the arrival of a horseman at the gate, now returned into the kitchen, and with an affrighted countenance cried out," "What do you think, gentlemen? The rebels have given the duke the slip, and are got almost to London.—"It is certainly true, for a man on horseback just now told me so."

"I am glad of it with all my heart," cries Partridge;

"then there will be no fighting in these parts."

"I am glad," cries the clerk, "for a better reason; for I would always, have the right take place."

" Ay but," answered the landlord, " I have heard

" fome people fay that this man hath no right."

"I will prove the contrary in a moment," cries the clerk; "if my father dies feized of a right; do you mind "me, feized of a right, I fay; doth not that right defcend to his fon? and doth not one right defcend as "well as another?"

" But how can he have any right to make us papifh-

" es?" fays the landlord.

"Never fear that," cries Partridge. "As to the matter of right, the gentleman there hath proved it as clear as the fun; and as to the matter of religion, it is quite out of the case. The papists themselves don't expect any such thing. A popish priest, whom I knew very well, and who is a very honest man, told me upon his word and honour they had no such design."

Rra

10

f

b

P

te

"And another priest of my acquaintance," faid the landlady, " hath told me the fame thing. - But my hus. " band is always fo afraid of papishes. I know a great

" many papishes, that are very honest fort of people, " and spend their money very freely: and it is always a

" maxim with me, that one man's money is as good as " another's.

" Very true, mistress," faid the puppet-show-man, "I " don't care what religion comes, provided the presby. " terians are not uppermost, for they are enemies to

" puppet-shows."

" And so you would facrifice your religion to your in-" terest," cries the exciseman, " and are desirous to see

" popery brought in, are you?"

" Not I truly," answered the other; "I hate poper " as much as any man; but yet it is a comfort to one, " that one should be able to live under it, which I could " not do among presbyterians. To be fure every man " values his livelihood first; that must be granted; and "I warrant, if you would confess the truth, you are more afraid of losing your place than any thing else; " but never fear, friend, there will be an excise under

" another government as well as under this." "Why certainly," replied the exciseman, "I should " be a very ill man, if I did not honour the king whose of bread I eat. That is no more than natural, as a man " may fay; for what fignifies it to me that there would " be an excise-office under another government, since " my friends would be out, and I could expect no better "than to follow them? No, no, friend, I shall never be " bubbled out of my religion, in hopes only of keeping " my place under another government; for I should " certainly be no better, and very probably might be

" worfe."

"Why, that is what I fay," cries the landlord, "when-" ever folks fay, who knows what may happen? Odzooks. " should not I be a blockhead to lend my money to I "know not who, because mayhap he may return it a-" gain? I am fure it is fafe in my own bureau, and there " I will keep it."

The attorney's clerk had taken a great fancy to the fagacity of Partridge. Whether this proceeded from the great

great discernment which the former had into men as well as things, or whether it arose from the sympathy between their minds, (for they were both truly Jacobites in principle,) they now shook hands heartily, and drank bumpers of strong beer to healths which we think

proper to bury in oblivion.

These healths were afterwards pledged by all present, and even by my landlord himself, though reluctantly; but he could not withstand the menaces of the clerk, who swore he would never set his foot within his house again, if he resused. The bumpers which were swallowed on this occasion soon put an end to the conversation. Here, therefore we will put an end to the chaper.

CHAP. VIII.

In which Fortune feems to have been in a better humour with Jones than we have bitherto feen her.

As there is no wholesomer, so perhaps there are few stronger sleeping potions than satigue. Of this Jones might be said to have taken a very large dose, and it operated very forcibly upon him. He had already slept nine hours, and might perhaps have slept longer, had he not been awakened by a most violent noise at his chamber door, where the sound of many heavy blows was accompanied with many exclamations of murder. Jones presently leapt from his bed, where he sound the master of the puppet-show belabouring the back and ribs of his poor merry-Andrew, without either mercy or moderation.

Jones instantly interposed in behalf of the suffering party, and pinned the insulting conqueror up to the wall; for the puppet-show-man was no more able to contend with Jones, than the poor party-coloured jester had

been to contend with this puppet-man.

But, though the merry-Andrew was a little fellow, and not very strong, he had nevertheless some choler about him. He therefore no sooner found himself delivered from the enemy, than he began to attack him with the only weapon at which he was his equal. From this

ti

e

21

66

ki

W

ed

he

gi

th

he first discharged a volley of general abusive words, and thence proceeded to some particular accusations.—"D—n "your bl—d, you rascal," says he, "I have not only supported you, (for to me you owe all the money you get,) but I have saved you from the gallows. Did you not want to rob the lady of her fine riding habit, no longer ago than yesterday, in the back-lane here? Can you deny that you wished to have her alone in a wood to strip her, to strip one of the prettiest ladies that ever was seen in the world? and here you have fallen upon me, and have almost murdered me for doing no harm to a girl as willing as myself, only be-

" cause she likes me better than you."

Jones no fooner heard this, than he quitted the mafler, laying on him at the fame time the most violent injunctions of forbearance from any further insult upon the merry-Andrew; and then taking the poor wretch with him into his own apartment, he soon learnt tidings of his Sophia, whom the fellow, as he was attending his master with his drum the day before, had seen pass by. He easily prevailed with the lad to shew him the exact place, and then, having summoned Partridge, he departed with the utmost expedition.

It was almost eight of the clock before all matters could be got ready for his departure; for Partridge was not in any haste, nor could the reckoning be presently adjusted; and, when both these were settled and over, Jones would not quit the place before he had perfectly reconciled all differences between the master and the

man.

When this was happily accomplished, he set forwards, and was by the trusty merry-Andrew conducted to the spot by which Sophia had past; and then, having hand-somely rewarded his conductor, he again pushed on with the utmost eagerness, being highly delighted with the extraordinary manner in which he received this intelligence. Of this Partridge was no sooner acquainted, than he with great earnestness began to prophesy, and affured Jones, that he would certainly have good success in the end; for he said, "two such accidents could never have happened to direct him after his mistress, if Providence had not designed to bring them together at last." And

S

t.

e

S,

th

ne

li-

an

ed

he

SV

nce

nd his this was the first time that Jones lent any attention to the

fuperstitious doctrine of his companion.

They had not gone above two miles, when a violent form of rain overtook them; and, as they happened to be at the fame time in fight of an alehouse, Partridge with much earnest entreaty prevailed with Jones to enter and weather the storm. Hunger is an enemy, (if indeed it may be called one,) which partakes more of the English than of the French disposition; for, though you subdue this never fo often, it will always rally again in time; and fo it did with Partridge, who was no fooner arrived within the kitchen, than he began to ask the same queftions which he had asked the night before. The confequence of this was an excellent cold chine being produced upon the table, upon which not only Partridge, but Jones himfelf, made a very hearty breakfast, though the latter began to grow again uneasy, as the people of the house could give him no fresh information concerning Sophia.

Their meal being over, Jones was again preparing to fally, notwithstanding the violence of the storm still continued; but Partridge begged heartily for another mug; and, at last casting his eyes on a lad at the fire, who had entered into the kitchen, and who at that instant was looking as earnestly at him, he turned suddenly to Jones, and cried, "Master, give me your hand; a single mug shan't serve the turn this bout. Why here's more news of Madam Sophia come to town. The boy there standing by the fire is the very lad that rode before her. "I can swear to my own plaister on his face." "Heavens bless you, Sir," cries the boy; "it is your own plaister sure enough; I shall have always reason to remember your goodness; for it hath almost cured me."

At these words Jones started from his chair, and biding the boy follow him, immediately departed from the kitchen into a private apartment; for so delicate was he with regard to Sophia, that he never willingly mentioned her name in the presence of many people, and though he had, as it were, from the overflowings of his heart, given Sophia as a toast among the officers, where he thought it was impossible she should be known;

yet even there the reader may remember how difficultly

he was prevailed upon to mention her firname.

Hard therefore was it, and perhaps, in the opinion of many fagacious readers, very abfurd, and monttrous, that he should principally owe his present misfortune to the supposed want of that delicacy with which he so abounded; for, in reality, Sophia was much more offended at the freedoms which she thought (and not without good reason) he had taken with her name and character. than at any freedoms, in which, under his prefent circumftances, he had indulged himself with the person of another woman; and, to fay the truth, I believe Honour could never have prevailed on her to leave Upton without her feeing Jones, had it not been for those two strong instances of a levity in his behaviour, fo void of respect, and indeed so highly inconsistent with any degree of love and tenderness in great and delicate

minds.

But so matters fell out, and so I must relate them; and, if any reader is shocked at their appearing unnatural, I cannot help it. I must remind such persons, that I am not writing a fystem but a history, and I am not obliged to reconcile every matter to the received notions concerning truth and nature. But if this was ever fo easy to do, perhaps it might be more prudent in me to avoid it. For instance, as the fact at present before us now stands, without any comment of mine upon it, tho' it may at first fight offend some readers, yet, upon more mature confideration, it must please all; for wife and good men may confider what happened to Jones at Upton, as a just punishment for his wickedness with regard to women, of which it was indeed the immediate confequence; and filly and bad perfons may comfort themfelves in their vices, by flattering their own hearts, that the characters of men are rather owing to accident than to virtue. Now perhaps the reflections, which we should be here inclined to draw, would alike contradict both these conclusions, and would shew, that these incidents contribute only to confirm the great, useful, and uncommon doctrine which it is the purpose of this whole work to inculcate, and which we must not fill up our pages by frequently repeating, as an ordinary parson fills his fermon fermon by repeating his text at the end of every para-

oranh.

We are contented that it must appear, however unhappily Sophia had erred in her opinion of Jones, flie had fufficient reason for her opinion; since, I believe, every other young lady would, in her fituation, have erred in the fame manner. Nay, had she followed her lover at this very time, and had entered this very alehouse, the moment he was departed from it, she would have found the landlord as well acquainted with her name and perfon as the wench at Upton had appeared to be: for while Jones was examining his boy in whifpers in an inner room, Partridge, who had no fuch delicacy in his disposition, was in the kitchen very openly catechising the other guide who had attended Mrs Fitzpatrick; by which means the landlord, whose ears were open on all fuch occasions, became perfectly well acquainted with the tumble of Sophia from her horse, &c. with the mistake concerning Jenny Cameron, with the many confequences of the punch, and, in short, with almost every thing which had happened at the inn, whence we dispatched our ladies in a coach and fix when we last took our leave of them.

CHAP. IX.

Containing little more than a few odd Observations.

ONES had been absent a full half hour, when he returned into the kitchen in a hurry, defiring the landlord to let him know that instant what was to pay. And now the concern which Partridge felt at being obliged to quit the warm chimney-corner and a cup of excellent liquor, was fomewhat compenfated by hearing that he was to proceed no farther on foot; for Jones, by golden arguments, had prevailed with the boy to attend him back to the inn whither he had before conducted Sophia; but to this however the lad confented, upon condition that the other guide would wait for him at the alehouse; because, as the landlord at Upton was an intimate acquaintance of the landlord at Gloucester, it might some time or other come to the ears of the latter, and his VOL. II. horses horses had been let to no more than one person; and so the boy might be brought to account for money which

he wifely intended to put into his own pocket.

We were obliged to mention this circumstance, trifling as it may feem, fince it retarded Mr Jones a confiderable time in his fetting out; for the honesty of this latter boy was fomewhat high-that is, fomewhat highpriced, and would indeed have cost Jones very dear, had not Partridge, who, as we have faid, was a very cunning fellow, artfully thrown in half a crown to be ipent at that very alchouse, while the boy was waiting for his companion. This half crown the landlord no fooner got fcent of, than he opened after it with fuch vehement and persuasive outcry, that the boy was soon overcome, and confented to take half a crown more for Here we cannot help observing, that, as there is so much of policy in the lowest life, great men often over-value themselves on those refinements in imposture, in which they are frequently excelled by some of the

lowest of the human species.

The horses being now produced, Jones directly leapt into the fide faddle on which his dear Sophia had rid. The lad indeed very civilly offered him the use of his; but he chose the fide-faddle, probably because it was Partridge, however, though full as effeminate as Jones, could not bear the thought of degrading his manhood; he therefore accepted the boy's offer: and now Jones, being mounted on the fide-faddle of his Sophia, the boy on that of Mrs Honour, and Partridge bestriding the third horse, they set forwards on their journey, and within four hours arrived at the inn where the reader hath already fpent fo much time. Partridge was in very high spirits during the whole way, and often mentioned to Jones the many good omens of his future fuccess, which had lately befriended him; and which the reader, without being the least superstitious, must allow to have been peculiarly fortunate. Partridge was moreover better pleased with the present pursuit of his companion, than he had been with his purfuit of glory; and from these very omens, which affured the pedagogue of fuccefs, he likewife first acquired a clear idea of the amour between Jones and Sophia; to which he had before given very little little attention, as he had originally taken a wrong fcent concerning the reasons of Jones's departure; and as to what happened at Upton, he was too much frightened, just before and after his leaving that place, to draw any other conclusions from thence, than that poor Jones was a downright madman: a conceit which was not at all disagreeable to the opinion he before had of his extraordinary wildness, of which he thought his behaviour on their quitting Gloucester so well justified all the accounts he had formerly received. He was now however pretty well satisfied with his present expedition, and henceforth began to conceive much worthier sentiments of his friend's understanding.

The clock had just struck three when they arrived, and Jones immediately befpoke post-horses: but unluckily there was not a horse to be procured in the whole place; which the reader will not wonder at, when he considers the hurry in which the whole nation, and especially this part of it, was at that time engaged, when expresses were passing and repassing every hour of the day

and night.

Jones endeavoured all he could to prevail with his former guide to efcort him to Coventry; but he was inexorable. While he was arguing with the boy in the inn-yard, a person came up to him, and saluting him by his name, inquired how all the good family did in Somersetshire; and now Jones, casting his eyes upon this person, presently discovered him to be Mr Dowling the lawyer, with whom he had dined at Gloucester, and

with much courtefy returned his falutation.

Dowling very earneftly pressed Mr Jones to go no farther that night: and backed his solicitations with many unanswerable arguments, such as, that it was almost dark, that the roads were very dirty, and that he would be able to travel much better by day-light; with many others equally good, some of which Jones had probably suggested to himself before; but as they were then inestectual, so they were still; and he continued resolute in his design, even though he should be obliged to set out on foot.

When the good attorney found he could not prevail on Jones to stay, he as strenuously applied himself to S f 2 persuade

Cl

In

66

"

46

66

"

44

..

44

66

persuade the guide to accompany him. He urged many motives to induce him to undertake this short journey, and at last concluded with saying, "Do you think the gentleman won't very well reward you for your trouse ble?

Two to one are odds at every other thing as well as at foot-ball. But the advantage which this united force hath in perfuafion or entreaty, must have been visible to a curious observer; for he must have often seen, that when a father, a master, a wife, or any other person in authority, have floutly adhered to a denial against all the reafons which a fingle man could produce, they have afterwards yielded to the repetition of the fame fentiments by a fecond or third person, who hath undertaken the cause, without attempting to advance any thing new in And hence perhaps proceeds the phrase of feconding an argument or a motion, and the great confequence this is of in all affemblies of public debate. Hence likewise probably it is, that in our courts of law we often hear a learned gentleman (generally a ferjeant) repeating for an hour together what another learned gentleman who spoke just before him had been faying.

Instead of accounting for this, we shall proceed in our usual manner to exemplify it in the conduct of the lad above-mentioned, who submitted to the persuasions of Mr Dowling, and promised once more to admit Jones into his side-saddle; but insisted on first giving the poor creatures a good bait, saying they had travelled a great way, and had been rid very hard. Indeed this caution of the boy was needless; for Jones, notwithstanding his hurry and impatience, would have ordered this of himself; for he by no means agreed with the opinion of those who consider animals as mere machines, and when they bury their spurs in the belly of their horse, imagine the spur and the horse to have an equal capacity of

feeling pain.

While the beafts were eating their corn, or rather were supposed to eat it, (for, as the boy was taking care of himself in the kitchen, the hostler took great care that his corn should not be consumed in the stable), Mr Jones, at the earnest desire of Mr Dowling, accompanied

that gentleman into his room, where they fat down together over a bottle of wine.

CHAP. X.

In which Mr Jones and Mr Dowling drink a bottle together.

TR Dowling, pouring out a glass of wine, named the health of the good 'Squire Allworthy, adding, " If you please, Sir, we will likewise remember his nephew " and heir, the young 'squire; come, Sir, here's Mr "Blifil to you, a very pretty young gentleman; and " who, I dare fwear, will hereafter make a very confi-" derable figure in his country. I have a borough for

" him myfelf in my eye."

"Sir," answered Jones, "I am convinced you don't " intend to affront me, fo I shall not refent it; but I " promife you, you have joined two persons very impro-

" perly together; for one is the glory of the human spe-"cies, and the other is a rafcal, who dishonours the

" name of man." Dowling stared at this. He faid, "He thought both " the gentlemen had a very unexceptionable character. " As for 'fquire Allworthy himself," fays he, " I never " had the happiness to see him; but all the world talks " of his goodness. And, indeed, as to the young gentle-" man, I never faw him but once, when I carried him " the news of the loss of his mother; and then I was so " hurried, and drove and tore with the multiplicity of " business, that I had hardly time to converse with him; " but he looked fo like a very honest gentleman, and " behaved himself so prettily, that I protest I never was

" more delighted with any gentleman fince I was " born."

"I don't wonder," answered Jones, "that he should " impose upon you in so short an acquaintance; for he " hath the cunning of the devil himself, and you may " live with him many years, without discovering him. " was bred up with him from my infancy, and we were " hardly ever afunder; but it is very lately only, that I

" have discovered half the villany which is in him.

" own I never greatly liked him. I thought he wanted that generofity of spirit, which is the sure foundation

" of all that is great and noble in human nature. I faw a felfishness in him long ago, which I despited;

" but it is lately, very lately, that I have found him ca-" pable of the basest and blackest designs; for, indeed,

"I have at last found out, that he hath taken an advantage of the openness of my own temper, and hath

" concerted the deepest project, by a long train of wicked rtisice, to work my guin, which at last he beth af-

" fected."

"Ay! Ay!" cries Dowling, "I protest then, it is a perfon should inherit the great estate of

" your uncle Allworthy."

"Alas, Sir," cries Jones, "you do me an honour to which I have no title. It is true, indeed, his good-

" nefs once allowed me the liberty of calling him by a much nearer name; but, as this was only a voluntary

" act of goodness, I can complain of no injustice, when he thinks proper to deprive me of this honour, since

"the loss cannot be more unmerited than the gift originally was. I affure you, Sir, I am no relation of Mr

46 Allworthy; and if the world, who are incapable of

" fetting a true value on his virtue, should think in his behaviour by me, he hath dealt hardly by a relation,

"they do an injustice to the best of men: for I—but I

" ask your pardon; I shall trouble you with no particu" lars relating to myself; only, as you seemed to think

" me a relation of Mr Allworthy, I thought proper to

" fet you right in a matter that might draw fome cen-

" fures upon him, which I promife you I would rather

" lofe my life, than give occasion to."

"I protest, Sir," cried Dowling, " you talk very much like a man of honour; but, instead of giving

" me any trouble, I protest it would give me great plea" fure to know how you came to be thought a relation

" of Mr Allworthy, if you are not. Your horses won't

" be ready this half-hour; and, as you have fufficient

" opportunity, I with you would tell me how all that happened; for I protest, it seems very surprising that

" you should pass for a relation of a gentleman, without

" being fo."

Jones, who in the compliance of his disposition (tho' not in his prudence) a little resembled his lovely Sophia, was easily prevailed on to satisfy Mr Dowling's curiosity, by relating the history of his birth and education, which he did, like Othello,

—Even from his boyish years, To th' very moment he was bad to tell it;

the which to hear, Dowling, like Desdemona, did serious-ly incline;

He fwore 'twas ftrange, 'twas paffing ftrange; 'Twas pitiful, 'twas wond'rous pitiful.

Mr Dowling was indeed very greatly affected with this relation; for he had not divested himself of humanity by being an attorney. Indeed nothing is more unjust than to carry our prejudices against a profession into private life, and to borrow our idea of a man from our opinion of his calling. Habit, it is true, leffens the horror of those actions which the profession makes necessary, and confequently habitual; but in all other instances, nature works in men of all professions alike, nay perhaps even more strongly with those who give her, as it were, a holiday, when they are following their ordinary bufinefs. A butcher, I make no doubt, would feel compunction at the flaughter of a fine horse; and, though a surgeon can conceive no pain in cutting off a limb, I have known him compassionate a man in a fit of the gout. The common hangman, who hath ftretched the necks of hundreds, is known to have trembled at his first operation on a head; and the very professors of human blood-shedding, who in their trade of war butcher thousands, not only of their fellow-professors, but often of women and children, without remorfe; even these, I say, in times of peace, when drums and trumpets are laid afide, often lay afide all their ferocity, and become very gentle members of civil fociety. In the fame manner an attorney may feel all the miseries and distresses of his fellow-creatures, provided he happens not to be concerned against them. Jones,

Jones, as the reader knows, was yet unacquainted with the very black colours in which he had been reprefented to Mr Allworthy; and, as to other matters, he did not thew them in the most disadvantageous light; for the he was unwilling to cast any blame on his former friend and patron, yet he was not very defirous of heaping too much upon himfelf. Dowling therefore observed, and not without reason, that very ill offices must have been done him by fomebody: "For certainly," cries he, "the "' 'fquire would never have difinherited you only for a " few faults, which any young gentleman might have " committed. Indeed, I cannot fay properly difinhe-" rited; for to be fure, by law you cannot claim as heir: " that's certain; that nobody need go to counsel for. "Yet, when a gentleman had in a manner adopted you " thus as his own fon, you might reasonably have expect-" ed fome very confiderable part, if not the whole: nay, " if you had expected the whole, I should not have " blamed you; for certainly all men are for getting as " much as they can, and they are not to be blamed on " that account."

" Indeed you wrong me," faid Jones, " I should have " been contented with very little: I never had any view " upon Mr Allworthy's fortune: nay, I believe I may " truly fay, I never once confidered what he could or " might give me. This I folemnly declare, if he had " done a prejudice to his nephew in my favour, I would " have undone it again. I had rather enjoy my own mind than the fortune of another man. What is the " poor pride arising from a magnificent house, a numer-" ous equipage, a splendid table, and from all the other " advantages or appearances of fortune, compared to the " warm, folid content, the fwelling fatisfaction, the thril-" ling transports, and the exulting triumphs, which a "good mind enjoys in the contemplation of a generous, " virtuous, noble, benevolent action! I envy not Blifil in "the prospect of his wealth, nor shall I envy him in the " possession of it. I would not think myself a rascal half " an hour, to exchange fituations. I believe, indeed, Mr Blifil fuspected me of the views you mention; and I " fuppose these suspicions, as they arose from the base-" nels of his own heart, so they occasioned his baseness 66 to "to me. But I thank Heaven, I know, I feel——I feel
"my innocence, my friend; and I would not part with
"that feeling for the world:——For as long as I know I
"have never done, nor even defigned an injury to any
being whatever,

Pone me pigris ubi nulla campis
Arbor æstiva recreatur aura,
Quod latus mundi nebule, malusque
Jupiter urget:

Pone, sub curru nimium propinqui Solis, in terra domibus negata; Dulce ridentem Lalagen amabo, Dulce loquentem*."

He then filled a bumper of wine, and drank it off to the health of his dear Lalage, and, filling Dowling's glass likewise up to the brim, insisted on his pledging him. "Why then here's Miss Lalage's health with all "my heart," cries Dowling. "I have heard her toast-"ed often, I protest, though I never saw her; but they

" fay she's extremely handsome."

Though the Latin was not the only part of this speech which Dowling did not perfectly understand, yet there was somewhat in it that made a very strong impression upon him; and though he endeavoured by winking, nodding, sneering, and grinning, to hide the impression from Jones, (for we are as often ashamed of thinking right as of thinking wrong,) it is certain he secretly approved as much of his sentiments as he understood, and really selt a very strong impulse of compassion for him. But

* Place me where never summer breeze
Unbinds the glebe, or warms the trees;
Where ever-lowering clouds appear,
And angry Jove deforms th' inclement year:

Place me beneath the burning ray,
Where rolls the rapid car of day;
Love and the nymph shall charm my toils,
The nymph who sweetly speaks, and sweetly smiles.

Mr Francis.

we may possibly take some other opportunity of commenting upon this, especially if we should happen to meet Mr Dowling any more in the course of our history. At present, we are obliged to take our leave of that gentleman a little abruptly, in imitation of Mr Jones, who was no sooner informed by Partridge that his horses were ready, than he deposited his reckoning, wished his companion a good night, mounted, and set forward towards Coventry, though the night was dark, and it just then began to rain very hard.

CHAP. XI.

The Difasters which befel Jones on his departure for Coventry; with the fage Remarks of Partridge.

where they now were to Coventry; and though neither Jones, nor Partridge, nor the guide, had ever travelled it before, it would have been almost impossible to have missed their way, had it not been for the two reasons mentioned in the conclusion of the last chapter.

These two circumstances, however, happening both unfortunately to intervene, our travellers deviated into a much less-frequented track; and after riding full six miles, instead of arriving at the stately spires of Coventry, they found themselves still in a very dirty lane, where they saw no symptoms of approaching the suburbs of a

large city.

Jones now declared that they must certainly have lost their way; but this the guide insisted upon was impossible; a word, which in common conversation is often used to signify not only improbable, but often what is really very likely, and sometimes what hath certainly happened; an hyperbolical violence, like that which is so frequently offered to the words infinite and eternal; by the screen of which it is usual to express a distance of half a yard, and by the latter a duration of five minutes. And thus it is as usual to affert the impossibility of losing what is already actually lost. This was, in fact, the case at present; for, notwithstanding all the consident affertions

of the lad to the contrary, it is certain, they were no more in the high road to Coventry, than the fraudulent, griping, cruel, canting miser, is in the right road to heaven.

It is not perhaps easy for a reader, who hath never been in those circumstances, to imagine the horror with which darkness, rain, and wind, fill persons who have lost their way in the night; and who, consequently, have not the pleasant prospect of warm fires, dry clothes, and other refreshments, to support their minds in struggling with the inclemencies of the weather. A very imperfect idea of this horror will however serve sufficiently to account for the conceits which now filled the head of Partridge, and which we shall presently be obliged to

open.

Jones grew more and more positive that they were out of their road; and the boy himself at last acknowledged, he believed they were not in the right road to Coventry; though he affirmed, at the same time, it was impossible they should have miss'd the way. But Partridge was of a different opinion. He faid, "When they first " fet out he imagined some mischief or other would hap-" pen. Did you not observe, Sir," said he to Jones, "that " old woman who stood at the door just as you was taking " horse? I wish you had given her a small matter with " all my heart; for she said then you might repent it; " and at that very instant it began to rain, and the wind hath continued rising ever since. Whatever some peo-" ple may think, I am very certain it is in the power of " witches to raise the wind whenever they please. I " have seen it happen very often in my time; and, if " ever I faw a witch in all my life, that old woman was " certainly one. I thought fo to myself at that very time; " and if I had had any halfpence in my pocket, I would " have given her some; for to be sure it is always good " to be charitable to those fort of people, for fear what " may happen, and many a person has lost his cattle by " faving a halfpenny."

Jones, though he was horridly vexed at the delay which this mistake was likely to occasion in his journey, could not help smiling at the superstition of his friend, whom an accident now greatly confirmed in his opinion. This was a tumble from his horse; by which, however,

he received no other injury than what the dirt conferred

on his clothes.

Partridge had no fooner recovered his legs, than he appealed to his fall, as conclusive evidence of all he had afferted; but Jones finding he was unhurt, answered, with a fanile, "This witch of yours, Partridge, is a most "ungrateful jade, and doth not, I find, distinguish her friends from others in her refentment. If the old lady had been angry with me for neglecting her, "I don't see why she should tumble you from your horse, after all the respect you have expressed for her."

"It is ill jeffing," cries Partridge, "with people who have power to do these things; for they are often very malicious. I remember a farrier, who provoked one of them, by asking her when the time she had bargained with the devil for would be out; and with-

"in three months from that very day, one of his best cows was drowned. Nor was she satisfied with that;

"for a little time afterwards he lost a barrel of his best that; for the old witch pulled out the spigot, and let it run all over the cellar, the very first evening he

" had tapped it, to make merry with some of his neighbours. In short, nothing ever thrived with him af-

"terwards; for she worried the poor man so, that he took to drinking; and in a year or two his stock was seized, and he and his family are now come to

" the parish."

The guide, and perhaps his horse too, were both so attentive to this discourse, that, either through want of care, or by the malice of the witch, they were now

iprawling in the dirt.

Partridge entirely imputed this fall, as he had done his own, to the same cause. He told Mr Jones "it "would certainly be his turn next; and earnestly entreated him, to return back and find out the old "woman, and pacify her. We shall very soon," added he, "reach the inn; for though we have seemed to go "forward, I am very certain we are in the identical place in which we were an hour ago; and I dare swear if "it was day-light, we might now see the inn we set out from."

Instead

Instead of returning any answer to this sage advice, Jones was entirely attentive to what had happened to the boy, who received no other hurt than what had before befallen Partridge, and which his clothes very easily bore, as they had been for many years inured to the like. He soon regained his side-saddle, and by the hearty curses and blows which he bestowed on his horse, quickly satisfied Mr Jones that no harm was done.

CHAP. XII.

Relates that Mr Jones continued his Journey contrary to the Advice of Partridge, with what happened on that occafron.

HEY now discovered a light at some distance, to the great pleasure of Jones, and to the no small terror of Partridge, who sirmly believed himself to be bewitched, and that this light was a Jack with a Lantern, or somewhat more mischievous,

But how were these fears increased, when, as they approached nearer to this light, (or lights as they now appeared) they heard a confused sound of human voices; of singing, laughing, and hallowing, together with a strange noise that seemed to proceed from some instruments, but could hardly be allowed the name of music! Indeed, to savour a little the opinion of Partridge, it might very well be called music bewitched.

It is impossible to conceive a much greater degree of horror than what now seized on Partridge; the contagion of which had reached the post-boy, who had been very attentive to many things that the other, had uttered. He now therefore joined in petitioning Jones to return; saying, he firmly believed what Partridge had just before said, that though the horses seemed to go on, they had not moved a step forwards during at least the last half hour.

Jones could not help finiling in the midst of his vexation, at the fears of these poor fellows. "Either we "advance" says he, "towards the lights, or the lights have "advanced " advanced towards us; for we are now at a very little distance from them; but how can either of you be

" afraid of a fet of people who appear only to be merry-making."

"Merry-making, Sir!" cries Partridge; "who could be merry-making at this time of night, and in fuch a place, and fuch weather? They can be nothing but ghosts or witches, or some evil spirits or other, that's

" certain."

- "Let them be what they will," cries Jones, "I am refolved to go up to them, and inquire the way to Coventry. All witches, Partridge, are not fuch ill-
- natured hags as that we had the misfortune to meet

" with last."

- "O Lord, Sir!" cries Partridge, "there is no knowing what humour they will be in; to be fure it is always
- " best to be civil to them; but what if we should meet with something worse than witches, with evil spirits
- themselves?—Pray, Sir, be advised; pray Sir, do.
- " If you had read so many terrible accounts as I have of these matters, you would not be so fool-hardy.—
- "The Lord knows whither we have got already, or
- " whither we are going; for fure fuch darkness was ne-
- " ver feen upon earth, and I question whether it can be

" darker in the other world."

Jones put forwards as fast as he could, notwithstanding all these hints and cautions, and poor Partridge was obliged to follow; for though he hardly dared to advance, he dared still less to stay behind by himself.

At length they arrived at the place whence the lights and different noises had iffued. This Jones perceived to be no other than a barn, where a great number of men and women were affembled, and diverting themselves

with much apparent jollity.

Jones no fooner appeared before the great doors of the barn, which were open, than a masculine and very rough voice from within, demanded who was there—— To which Jones gently answered, a friend; and immediately asked the road to Coventry.

"If you are a friend," cries another of the men in the barn, "you had better alight till the ftorm is over;" (for indeed it was now more violent than ever) "you "are

" are very welcome to put up your horse; for there is "fufficient room for him at one end of the barn."

"You are very obliging," returned Jones; "and I "will accept your offer for a few minutes, whilit the "rain continues; and here are two more who will be glad of the fame favour." This was accorded with more good-will than it was accepted; for Partridge would rather have submitted to the utmost inclemency of the weather, than have trusted to the clemency of those whom he took for hobgoblins; and the poor post boy was now infected with the same apprehensions; but they were both obliged to follow the example of Jones; the one, because he durst not leave his horse, and the other, because he feared nothing so much as being left by himself.

Had this history been writ in the days of superstition, I should have had too much compassion for the reader to have left him so long in suspence, whether Beeizebub or Satan was about actually to appear in person with all his hellish retinue: but as these doctrines are at present very unfortunate, and have but few, if any believers, I have not been much aware of conveying any such terrors. To say truth, the whole surniture of the infernal regions hath long been appropriated by the managers of playhouses, who seem lately to have laid them by as rubbith, capable only of affecting the upper gallery; a place in which sew of our readers ever sit.

However, though we do not suspect raising any great terror on this occasion, we have reason to fear some other apprehensions may here arise in our reader, into which we would not willingly betray him; I mean, that we are going to take a voyage into fairy-land, and to introduce a set of beings into our history, which scarce any one was ever childs enough to believe, though many have been soolish enough to spend their time in writing and reading their adventures.

To prevent therefore any fuch furpicions, so prejudicial to the credit of an historian, who professes to draw his materials from nature only, we shall now proceed to acquaint the reader who these people were, whose sudden appearance had struck such terrors into Partridge,

had

had more than half frightened the post-boy, and had a

little furprifed even Mr Jones himfelf.

The people then affembled in this barn were no other than a company of Egyptians, or as they are vulgarly called, Gypfies, and they were now celebrating the wedding-

day of one of their fociety.

It is impossible to conceive a happier fet of people than appeared here to be met together. The utmost mirth indeed shewed itself in every countenance; nor was their ball totally void of all order and decorum. Perhaps it had more than a country assembly is sometimes conducted with: for these people are subject to a formal government and laws of their own, and all pay obedience to one great magistrate, whom they call their king.

Greater plenty likewise was no where to be seen than what flourished in this barn. Here was indeed no nicety nor elegance, nor did the keen appetites of the guests require any. Here was good store of bacon, sowls, and mutton, to which every one present provided better sauce himself, than the best and dearest French cook can pre-

pare.

Eneas is not described under more consternation in the temple of Juno,

Dum stupet obtutuque hæret defixus in uno,

than was our hero at what he faw in this barn. While he was looking every where round him with aftonishment, a venerable person approached him with many friendly salutations, rather of too hearty a kind to be called courtly. This was no other than the king of the Gypsies himself. He was very little distinguished in drefs from his subjects, nor had he any regalia of majesty to support his dignity; and yet there seemed (as Mr Jones said) to be somewhat in his air which denoted authority, and inspired the beholders with an idea of awe and respect; though all this was perhaps imaginary in Jones; and the truth may be, that such ideas are incident to power, and almost inseparable from it.

There was somewhat in the open countenance and courteous behaviour of Jones, which being accompanied

with much comeliness of person, greatly recommended him at first fight to every beholder. These were perhaps a little heightened in the present instance, by that profound respect which he paid to the king of the Gypsies, the moment he was acquainted with his dignity, and which was the sweeter to his Gypsieian majesty, as he was not used to receive such homage from any but his own subjects.

The king ordered a table to be foread with the choicest of their provisions for his accommodation, and having placed himself at his right hand, his majesty began to discourse our hero in the following manner:

"Me doubt not, Sir, but you have often feen fome of my people, who are what you call de parties detache: for dey go about every where; but me fancy you imagine not we be fo confiderable body as we be; and may be you will be furprise more, when you hear de Gypsey be as orderly and well govern people as any

" upon face of de earth.

"Me have honour, as me fay, to be deir king, and no monarch can do boast of more dutiful subject, ne no more affectionate. How far me deserve deir good will, me no fay; but dis me can fay, dat me never design any ting but to do dem good. Me sall no do boast of dat neider; for what can me do oderwise dan consider of de good of dose poor people who go about all day to give me always de best of what dey get. Dey love and honour me darefore, because me do love and take care of dem; dat is all, me know no oder reason.

"About a tousand or two tousand years ago, me cannot tell to a year or two, as can neider write nor read,
dere was a great what you call—a volution among de
Gypsey; for dere was de lord Gypsy in dose days;
and dese lord did quarrel vid one anoder about de
place; but de king of de Gypsy did demolith dem
all, and made all his subjects equal vid each oder; and
since dat time dey have agree very well: for dey no
tink of being king, and may be it be better for dem as
dey be; for me assure you it be ver troublesome ting
to be king, and always to do justice; me have often
wish to be de private Gypsy, when me have been
Vol. II.

"forced

" forced to punish my dear friend and relation; for dough we never put to deat, our punishments be " ver severe. Dey make de Gypsey ashamed of dem-" felves, and dat be ver terrible punishment; me ave

" fcarce ever known de Gypfy fo punish do harm any

" more."

The king then proceeded to express fome wonder that there was no fuch punishment as shame in other governments. Upon which Mr Jones affured him to the contrary: for that there were many crimes for which shame was inflicted by the English laws, and that it was indeed one consequence of all punishment. " Dat be ver " ftrange," faid the king: " for me know and hears " good deal of your people, dough me no live among " dem; and me ave often hear dat sham is de conseof quence and de cause too of many of your rewards. Are " your rewards and punishments den de same ting?"

While his majefty was thus discoursing with Jones, a fudden uproar arose in the barn, and as it seems upon this occasion: the courtefy of these people had by degrees removed all the apprehensions of Partridge, and he was prevailed upon not only to stuff himself with their food, but to taste some of their liquors, which by degrees entirely expelled all fear from his composition, and in its flead introduced much more agreeable fensations.

A young female gypfy, more remarkable for her wit than her beauty, had decoyed the honest fellow aside, pretending to tell his fortune. Now when they were alone together in a remote part of the barn, whether it proceeded from the firong liquor, which is never fo apt to inflame inordinate defire as after moderate fatigue, or whether the fair gypfy herfelf threw afide the delicacy and decency of her fex, and tempted the youth, Partridge, with express folicitations; but they were discovered in a very improper manner by the husband of the gypsy, who, from jealoufy it feems, had kept a watchful eye over his wife, and had dogged her to the place, where he found her in the arms of her gallant.

To the great confusion of Jones, Partridge was now hurried before the king, who heard the accufation, and likewise the culprit's defence, which was indeed very trifling; for the poor fellow was confounded by the plain

evidence

evidence which appeared against him, and had very little to fay for himself. His Majesty, then turning towards Jones, faid, "Sir; you have hear what dey fay; what

" punishment do you tink your man deserve?"

Jones answered, "He was forry for what had happened, and that Partridge should make the husband " all the amends in his power:" he faid, " he had very " little money about him at that time;" and putting his hand into his pocket, offered the fellow a guinea. which he immediately answered, "He hoped his ho-" nour would not think of giving him less than five."

This fum, after some altercation, was reduced to two: and Jones, having stipulated for the full forgiveness of both Partridge and the wife, was going to pay the money. when his Majesty, restraining his hand, turned to the witness, and asked him. " At what time he had discover-" ed the criminals?" To which he answered, "That he " had been defired by the hufband to watch the motions " of his wife from her first speaking to the stranger, and " that he had never lost fight of her afterwards till the " crime had been committed." The king then asked, " If the husband was with him all that time in his lurk-"ing-place?" To which he answered in the affirmative. His Egyptian Majesty then addressed himself to the husband as follows, " Me be forry to fee any gypfy dat "have no more honour dan to fell de honour of his " wife for money. If you had de love for your wife, you would have prevented dis matter, and not " endeavour to make her de whore, dat you might dif-" cover her. Me do order dat you have no money " given you; for you deserve punishment, not reward: " Me do order derefore, dat you be de infamous gypfy, " and do wear a pair of horns upon your forehead for " one month, and that your wife be called de whore, and " pointed at all dat time; for you be de infamous " gypfy; but she be no less de infamous whore."

The gypfies immediately proceeded to execute the fentence, and left Jones and Partridge alone with his Ma-

Jones greatly applauded the justice of the sentence; upon which the king, turning to him, faid, " Me believe you be furprize: for me suppose you have ver bad " opinion Uu2

CI

ra

at

al

p

tl

W

ir

to

r

p

n

h

" opinion of my people; me suppose you tink us all de " tieves."

" I must confess, Sir," said Jones, " I have not heard " fo favourable an account of them as they feem to de-

" ferve." " Me vil tell you," faid the king, " how de difference "is between you and us. My people rob your people,

" and your people rob one anoder."

Jones afterwards proceeded very gravely to fing forth the happiness of those subjects who live under such a magistrate.

Indeed their happiness appears to have been so complete, that we are aware left fome advocate for arbitrary power should hereafter quote the case of those people, as an instance of the great advantages which attend that government above all others.

And here we will make a concession, which would not perhaps have been expected from us, that no limited form of government is capable of rifing to the same degree of perfection, or of producing the fame benefits to fociety with this. Mankind have never been fo happy, as when the greatest part of the then known world was under the dominion of a fingle mafter; and this state of their felicity continued during the reigns of five fuccessive princes*. This was the true æra of the golden age, and the only golden age which ever had any existence, unless in the warm imaginations of the poets, from the expulfion from Eden down to this day.

In reality, I know but of one folid objection to absolute monarchy; the only defect in which excellent conftitution, feems to be the difficulty of finding any man adequate to the office of an absolute monarch; for this indispensably requires three qualities, very difficult, as it appears from history, to be found in princely natures: 1st, A fufficient quantity of moderation in the prince, to be contented with all the power which is possible for him to have; 2dly, Enough of wisdom to know his own happiness; and 3dly, Goodness sufficient to support the happiness of others, when not only compatible with, but in-Arumental to his own.

Nerva, Trajan, Adrian, and the two Antonini:

Now, if an absolute monarch, with all these great and rare qualifications, should be allowed capable of conferring the greatest good on society, it must be surely granted on the contrary, that absolute power, vested in the hands of one who is described in them all, is likely to be

attended with no lefs a degree of evil.

In short, our own religion furnishes us with adequate ideas of the bleffing, as well as curfe, which may attend absolute power. The pictures of heaven and of hell will place a very lively image of both before our eyes; for though the prince of the latter can have no power, but what he originally derives from the omnipotent fovereign in the former, yet it plainly appears from fcripture, that absolute power in his infernal dominions is granted; to their diabolical ruler. This is indeed the only absolute power, which can by scripture be derived from heaven. If therefore the feveral tyrannies upon earth can prove any title to a divine authority, it must be derived from this original grant to the Prince of darkness, and these subordinate deputations must consequently come immediately from him whose stamp they so expressly bear.

To conclude; as the examples of all ages shew us, that mankind in general desire power only to do harm, and, when they obtain it, use it for no other purpose, it is not consonant with even the least degree of prudence to hazard an alteration, where our hopes are poorly kept in countenance by only two or three exceptions out of a thousand instances to alarm our fears. In this case, it will be much wifer to submit to a few inconveniences arising from the dispassionate deafness of laws, than to remedy them by applying to the passionate open ears of

a tyrant.

Nor can the example of the gypsies, though possibly they may have long been happy under this form of government, be here urged, since we must remember the very material respect in which they differ from all other people, and to which perhaps this their happiness is entirely owing, namely, that they have no false honours among them, and that they look on shame as the most grievous punishment in the world.

C

il

n

h

f

f

t

F

f

n

F

h

n

CHAP. XIII.

A Dialogue between Jones and Partridge.

THE honest lovers of liberty will, we doubt not, pard don that long digression into which we were led, at the close of the last chapter, to prevent our history from being applied to the use of the most pernicious doctrine, which priestcraft had ever the wickedness or the impudence to preach.

We will now proceed with Mr Jones, who, when the florm was over, took leave of his Egyptian Majesty, after many thanks for his courteous behaviour and kind entertainment, and set out for Coventry; to which place (for it was still dark,) a gypsy was ordered to conduct him.

Jones having, by reason of his deviation, travelled eleven miles instead of fix, and most of those through very execrable roads, where no expedition could have been made in quest of a midwife, did not arrive at Coventry till near twelve. Nor could he possibly get again into the saddle till past two; for post-horses were now not easy to get; nor were the hostler or post-boy in half so great a hurry as himself, but chose rather to imitate the tranquil disposition of Partridge, who, being denied the nourishment of sleep, took all opportunities to supply its place with every other kind of nourishment, and was never better pleased than when he arrived at an inn, nor ever more distatisfied than when he was again forced to leave it

Jones now travelled post; we will follow him therefore, according to our custom, and to the rules of Longinus in the same manner. From Coventry he arrived at Daventry; from Daventry at Stratsford; and from Stratsford at Dunstable, whither he came the next day a little after noon, and within a few hours after Sophia had lest it; and, though he was obliged to stay here longer than he wished, while a smith, with great deliberation, shoed the post-horse he was to ride, he doubted not but to overtake his Sophia, before she should set out from St Alban's; at which place he concluded, and very reasonably, that his lordship would stop and dine.

And, had he been right in his conjecture, he most probably would have overtaken his angel at the aforesaid

place;

place; but unluckily my lord had appointed a dinner to be prepared for him at his own house in London, and, in order to enable him to reach that place in proper time, he had ordered a relay of horses to meet him at St Alban's. When Jones therefore arrived there, he was informed, that the coach and six had set out two hours before.

If fresh post-horses had been now ready, as they were not, it seemed so apparently impossible to overtake the coach before it reached London, that Partridge thought he had now a proper opportunity to remind his friend of a matter which he seemed entirely to have forgotten: what this was the reader will guess, when we inform him, that Jones had eat nothing more than one poached egg since he had left the atchouse where he at first met the guide returning from Sophia; for, with the gypsies, he had feasted only his understanding.

The landlord so entirely agreed with the opinion of Partridge, that he no sooner heard the latter desire his friend to stay and dine, than he very readily put in his word, and retracting his promise before given of surnishing the horses immediately, he affured Mr Jones he would lose no time in bespeaking a dinner, which, he said, could be got ready sooner than it was possible to get the horses up from the grass, and to prepare them

for their journey by a feed of corn.

Jones was at length prevailed on chiefly by the latter argument of the landlord; and now a joint of mutton was put down to the fire. While this was preparing, Partridge, being admitted into the same apartment with his friend or master, began to harangue in the following manner:—

"Certainly, Sir, if ever man deferved a young lady you deferve young Madam Western; for what a vast quantity of love must a man have, to be able to live upon it without any other food, as you do! I am positive I have ate thirty times as much within these last twenty-four hours as your honour, and yet I am almost famished: for nothing makes a man so hungry as travelling, especially in this cold raw weather. And yet I can't tell how it is, but your honour is seeming-

" ly in perfect good health, and you never looked better nor fresher in your life. It must be certainly love that

" you live upon."

"And a very rich diet too, Partridge," answered Jones. "But did not fortune send me an excellent dainty yesterday? Dost thou imagine I cannot live more than twenty four hours on this dear pocket-book."

"Undoubtedly," cries Partridge, "there is enough in that pocket-book to purchase many a good meal. Fortune sent it to your honour very opportunely for present use, as your honour's money must be almost

" out by this time."

"What do you mean?" answered Jones; "I hope you don't imagine that I should be dishonest enough, even if it belonged to any other person, besides Miss "Western."—

" Dishonest!" replied Partridge; "Heaven forbid I " fhould wrong your honour fo much; but where's the " dishonesty in borrowing a little for present spending, " fince you will be fo well able to pay the lady hereafter? " No, indeed, I would have your honour pay it again, as foon as it is convenient, by all means; but where can be the harm in making use of it, now you want " it? Indeed, if it belonged to a poor body, it would be another thing; but fo great a lady to be fure tan " never want it, especially now, as she is along with a lord, who, it can't be doubted, will let her have whatever she hath need of. Besides, if she should want a " little, she cannot want the whole; therefore I would " give her a little, but I would be hanged before I " mentioned the having found it at first, and before I " got fome money of my own; for London, I have heard, " is the very worst of places to be in without money. Indeed if I had not known to whom it belonged, I might have thought it was the Devil's money, and " have been afraid to use it; but, as you know other-" wife, and came honeftly by it, it would be an affront to fortune to part with it all again, at the very time " when you want it most: you can hardly expect she " should ever do you such another good turn; for forse tuna nunquam perpetuo est bona. You will do 25

VQ

d

I

I

1,

7.

I

d

r-

nt

25

Vol. II.

" tridge

"you please, notwithstanding all I say; but, for my part, "I would be hanged before I mentioned a word of the matter."

" By what I can fee, Partridge," cries Jones, " hang-" ing is a matter non longe alienum à Scavola studiis." "You should fay alienus," fays Partridge; "I remem-" ber the passage: it is an example under Communii, " alienus, immunis, variis casibus serviunt." " If you do " remember it," cries Jones, "I find you don't under-" stand it; but I tell thee, friend, in plain English, that " he who finds another's property, and wilfully detains " it from the known owner, deserves, in foro con-" scientia, to be hanged no less than if he had stolen it. " And as for this very identical bill, which is the proper-" ty of my angel, and was once in her dear possession, I " will not deliver it into any hands but her own, upon " any confideration whatever; no, tho' I was as hungry " as thou art, and had no other means to fatisfy my cra-" ving appetite; this I hope to do before I fleep; but, " if it should happen otherwise, I charge thee, if thou " wouldst not incur my displeasure for ever, not to " shock me any more by the bare mention of such de-" testable baseness."

" I should not have mentioned it now," cries Partridge, " if it had appeared fo to me; for I'm fure I " fcorn any wickedness as much as another; but per-" haps you know better; and yet I might have imagined " that I should not have lived so many years, and have " taught school so long, without being able to diftinguish " between fas et nefas; but it seems, we are all to live " and learn. I remember my old schoolmaster, who was " a prodigious great scholar, used often to say, Polly matete " cry town is mydaskalon; the English of which he told " us was, That a child may fometimes teach his grand-" mother to fuck eggs. I have lived to a fine purpose " truly, if I am to be taught my grammar at this time " of day. Perhaps, young gentleman, you may change " your opinion, if you live to my years; for I remember " I thought myself as wise when I was a strippling of " one or two and twenty as I am now. I am fure I " was taught alienus, and my master read it so before me." There were not many inftances in which Partridge could provoke Jones, nor were there many in which Par-

Xx

tridge himself could have been hurried out of his respect; unluckily, however, they had both hit on one of these. We have already seen Partridge could not bear to have his learning attacked, nor could Jones bear some passage or other in the foregoing speech. And now, looking upon his companion with a contemptuous and disdainful air, (a thing not usual with him,) he cried, "Partridge, "I see thou art a conceited old fool, and I wish thou "art not likewise an old rogue. Indeed, if I was as "well convinced of the latter as I am of the former, "thou shouldst travel no farther in my company."

The fage pedagogue was contented with the vent which he had already given to his indignation; and, as the vulgar phrase is, immediately drew in his horns. He said, "He was forry he had uttered any thing which "might give offence, for that he had never intended it;

" but Nemo omnibus horis fapit."

As Jones had the vices of a warm disposition, he was entirely free from those of a cold one; and, if his friends must have confest his temper to have been a little too easily ruffled, his enemies must at the same time have confest, that it as soon subsided; nor did it at all resemble the sea, whose swelling is more violent and dangerous after a storm is over, than while the storm itself subsists. He instantly accepted the submission of Partridge, shook him by the hand, and, with the most benign aspect imaginable, said twenty kind things, and at the same time very severely condemned himself, though not half so severely as he will most probably be condemned by many of our good readers.

Partridge was now highly comforted, as his fears of having offended were at once abolished, and his pride completely satisfied, by Jones having owned himself in the wrong: which submission he instantly applied to what had principally nettled him, and repeated in a muttering voice, "To be sure, Sir, your knowledge may be superior to mine in some things; but as to the grammar, I think I may challenge any man living; I think,

" at least, I have that at my finger's end."

If any thing could add to the fatisfaction which the poor man now enjoyed, he received this addition by the arrival of an excellent shoulder of mutton, that at this

instant came smoaking to the table; on which, having both plentifully feasted, they again mounted their horses, and set forward for London.

CHAP. XIV.

What happened to Mr Jones in his Journey from St Albans.

THEY were got about two miles beyond Barnet, and it was now the dusk of the evening, when a genteel-looking man, but upon a very shabby horse, rode up to Jones, and asked him whether he was going to London? to which Jones answered in the affirmative The gentleman replied, "I should be obliged to you, Sir, " if you will accept of my company; for it is very late, " and I am a stranger to the road." Jones readily complied with the request; and on they travelled together, holding that fort of discourse which is usual upon such occasions.

Of this, indeed, robbery was the principal topic; upon which subject the stranger expressed great apprehensions; but Jones declared he had very little to lose, and consequently as little to fear. Here Partridge could not forbear putting in his word. "Your honour," said he, "may think it a little, but I am sure, if I had a hun dred pound bank-note in my pocket, as you have, I should be very forry to lose it; but, for my part, I mever was less afraid in my life; for we are four of us, and, if we all stand by one another, the best man in England can't rob us. Suppose he should have a pistol, he can't kill but one of us, and a man can die but once."

Besides the reliance on superior numbers, a kind of valour which hath raised a certain nation among the moderns to a high pitch of glory, there was another reason for the extraordinary courage which Partridge now discovered; for he had at present as much of that quality as was in the power of liquor to bestow.

Our company were now arrived within a mile of Highgate, when the stranger turned short upon Jones,

X x 2 and

and, pulling out a pistol, demanded that little bank note

which Partridge had mentioned.

Jones was at first somewhat shocked at this unexpected demand; however, he presently recollected himself, and told the highwayman all the money he had in his pocket was entirely at his service; and so saying, he pulled out upwards of three guineas, and offered to deliver it; but the other answered with an oath, That would not do. Jones answered coolly, he was very forry for it, and re-

turned the money into his pocket.

The highwayman then threatened, if he did not deliver the bank-note that moment, he must shoot him; holding the pistol at the same time very near to his breast. Jones instantly caught hold of the fellow's hand, which trembled so that he could scarce hold the pistol in it, and turned the muzzle from him. A struggle then ensued, in which the former wrested his pistol from the hand of his antagonist, and both came from their horses on the ground together, the highwayman upon his back, and the victorious Jones upon him.

The poor fellow now began to implore mercy of the conqueror; for, to fay the truth, he was in strength by no means a match for Jones. "Indeed, Sir," fays he, I "could have had no intention to shoot you; for you will

"find the pistol was not loaded. This is the first robbery I ever attempted, and I have been driven by dis-

" trefs to this."

At Ithis instant, about an hundred and fifty yards distance, lay another person on the ground, roaring out for mercy in a much louder voice than the highwayman. This was no other than Partridge himself, who, endeavouring to make his escape from the engagement, had been thrown from his horse, and lay slat on his face, not daring to look up, and expecting every minute to be shot.

In this posture he lay till the guide, who was now otherwise concerned than for his horses, having secured the stumbling beast, came up to him, and told him, his master had got the better of the highwayman,

Partridge leapt up at this news, and ran back to the place, where Jones stood with his sword drawn in his hand to guard the poor fellow; which Partridge no

iooner

fooner faw, than he cried out, "Kill the villain, Sir, "run him through the body, kill him this instant."

Luckily however for the poor wretch, he had fallen into more merciful hands; for Jones, having examined the piftol, and found it to be really unloaded, began to believe all the man had told him before Partridge came up, namely, that he was a novice in the trade, and that he had been driven to it by the diftress he mentioned, the greatest indeed imaginable, that of five hungry children, and a wife lying in of a fixth, in the utmost want and misery; the truth of all which the highwayman, most vehemently afferted, and offered to convince Mr Jones of it, if he would take the trouble to go to his house, which was not above two miles off, saying, "That "he desired no favour, but upon condition of proving all he had alledged."

Jones at first pretended he would take the fellow at his word, and go with him, declaring, that his fate should depend entirely on the truth of his story. Upon this the poor fellow expressed so much alacrity, that Jones was perfectly satisfied with his veracity, and began now to entertain sentiments of compassion for him. He returned the fellow his empty pistol, advised him to think of honester means of relieving his distress, and gave him a couple of guineas for the immediate support of his wife and his family, adding, "he wished he had more for his sake, for the hundred pound that had been mentioned

" was not his own."

Our readers will probably be divided in their opinions concerning this action; fome may applaud it perhaps as an act of extraordinary humanity, while those of a more faturnine temper will consider it as a want of regard to that justice which every man owes his country. Partridge certainly saw it in that light; for he testified much distatisfaction on the occasion, quoted an old proverb, and said, "He should not wonder if the rogue attacked them again before they reached London."

The highwayman was full of expressions of thankfulness and gratitude. He actually dropt tears, or pretended so to do. He vowed he would immediately return home, and would never afterwards commit such a trans-

gression:

gression: whether he kept his word or no, perhaps

may appear hereafter.

Our travellers, having remounted their horses, arrived in town, without encountering any new mishap. On the road, much pleasant discourse passed between Jones and Partridge on the subject of their last adventure, in which Jones exprest a great compassion for those highwaymen, who are by unavoidable distress driven as it were to such illegal courses, as generally bring them to a shameful death; "I mean," says he, "those only whose highest guilt extends no farther than to robbery, and who are never guilty of cruelty nor insult to any person, which is a circumstance that, I must say to the honour of our country, distinguishes the robbers of England from those of all other nations; for murder is amongst these almost inseparably incident to robbery."

"No doubt," answered Partridge, "it is better to take away one's money than one's life; and yet it is very hard upon honest men, that they can't travel about their business, without being in danger of these villains: And to be sure it would be better that all

- " rogues were hanged out of the way, than that one ho" neft man should suffer. For my own part indeed, I
- "fhould not care to have the blood of any of them on my hands; but it is very proper for the law to hang
- "them all. What right hath any man to take fixpence from me, unless I give it him? Is there any honesty

" in fuch a man?"

"No, furely," cries Jones, "no more than there is in him who takes the horses out of another man's stable, or who applies to his own use the money which he finds,

" when he knows the right owner."

These hints stopt the mouth of Partridge; nor did he open it again, till Jones, having thrown some farcastical jokes on his cowardice, he offered to excuse himself on the inequality of fire-arms, saying, "A thousand native ked men are nothing to one pistol; for though it is true it will kill but one at a single discharge, yet who can tell but that one may be himself."

